

# TESTAMENT OF SOVEREIGNTY

<http://sovereignfellowship.org>



## DEDICATION

"Freedom, liberty, and sovereignty are NOT spectator sports."  
[SEDM]

"A person dependent on somebody else for everything from potatoes to opinions may declare that he is a free [SOVEREIGN] man, and his government may issue a certificate granting him his freedom, but he will not be free. ... How can he be free if he can do nothing for himself? ... Men are free precisely to the extent that they are equal to their own needs. The most able [and the most contented with the lowest needs per 1 Tim. 6:6] are the most free."

[Wendell Berry, "Discipline and Hope" in A Continuous Harmony (1972), p. 124]

"Some people do not want true liberty. They want kinder masters and a more comfortable cage."  
[SEDM]

"The hand of the diligent will rule [be SOVEREIGN], but the lazy [or irresponsible or GOVERNMENT DEPENDENT] man will be put to forced labor. "  
[[Prov. 12:24](#), Bible, NKJV]

"Liberty means responsibility. That's why most men dread it."  
[George Bernard Shaw]

"The price of freedom is eternal vigilance on EVERYONE'S part, not just OUR part."  
[SEDM]

"You can only DESERVE or have a RIGHT to that which you are willing to GIVE and to EARN. That's a corollary to [The Golden Rule in Matt. 7:12](#): Do unto others as you would have them do unto you. It is also a restatement of the requirement for [equal protection and equal treatment](#) that is the foundation of American jurisprudence."  
[SEDM]

"It is good for a man to bear [experience the consequences of] the yoke [ignorance and inexperience] in his youth. "  
[[Lamentations 3:27](#), Bible, NKJV]

"The heart of the righteous [studies how to answer \[does their OWN homework\]](#), but the mouth of the [lazy and] wicked pours forth evil [[with their injurious presumptions](#)]."  
[[Prov. 15:28](#), Bible, NKJV]

## America, America, God Shed His Grace on Thee

Thomas Jefferson wrote:

*"Our country is too large to have all its affairs directed by a single government. Public servants at such a distance, and from under the eye of their constituents, must, from the circumstance of distance, be unable to administer and overlook all the details necessary for the good government of the citizens; and the same circumstance, by rendering detection impossible to their constituents, will invite public agents to corruption, plunder and waste. And I do truly believe that if the principle were to prevail in the United States in which the general government possesses all the power of the state governments, and reduces us to a single consolidated government, it would become the most corrupt government on the earth."*

*[Thomas Jefferson to Gideon Granger, 1800]*

United States Supreme Court Justice Thomas in a concurring statement wrote:

*"The majority opinion correctly applies our decision in United States v. Lopez, 514 U.S. 549 (1995), and I join it in full. I write separately only to express my view that the very notion of a "substantial effects" test under the Commerce Clause is inconsistent with the original understanding of Congress' powers and with this Court's early Commerce Clause cases. By continuing to apply this rootless and malleable standard, however circumscribed, the Court has encouraged the Federal Government to persist in its view that the Commerce Clause has virtually no limits. Until this Court replaces its existing Commerce Clause jurisprudence with a standard more consistent with the original understanding, we will continue to see Congress appropriating state police powers under the guise of regulating commerce."*

*[U.S. v. Morrison, No. 99-5, decided May 15, 2000]*

Justice Thomas' observations concerning the Supreme Court's "rootless and malleable standard(s)" which have allowed Congress and the Presidents to destroy Sovereign States rights and create, "a single consolidated government" were once again predicted by Thomas Jefferson in a letter to Thomas Ritchie in 1820.

*"The judiciary of the United States is the subtle corps of sappers and miners constantly working under ground to undermine the foundations of our confederated fabric. They are construing our Constitution from a co-ordination of a general and special government to a general and supreme one alone. "*

*[Thomas Jefferson]*

USSC Justice O'Connor and Justice Breyer wrote a dissenting opinion in 1997 that said,

*"To Madison, then, duties to God were superior to duties to civil authorities—the ultimate loyalty was owed to God above all."*

*[Boerne v. Flores, No. 95-2074]*

Within this Testament of Sovereignty is outlined an invidious and covert plan to bypass constitutional restrictions on our governments, enslave all Citizens through oppressive taxation, create a socialist religion of the State where the federal government becomes a god that is above the God of this nation, Jesus Christ, and allows the worship of Christ only when it does not interfere with the interests of the State. Christians are commanded to render unto God the things which are God's. No Christian can do this when federal laws of "general application" upheld by the United States Supreme Court, destroy the Christian's ability to maintain the ultimate loyalty owed to God above all. The federal government has become "the most corrupt government on the earth." We can stop this tyranny and return to a Constitutional Republic under God but "No King but King Jesus," must be our battle cry and our duty to God must be "superior to duties to civil authorities."

This Testament of Sovereignty written under the authority of:

The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

That we may, as children of God, unite in Christian Fellowship as is found in 1<sup>st</sup> John, Chapter 1:

1. That which was from the beginning, which we have heard, which we have seen with our eyes, which we have looked upon, and our hands have handled, of the Word of life;
2. (for the life was manifested, and we have seen it, and bear witness, and shew unto you that eternal life, which was with the Father, and was manifested unto us;)
3. That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ.

And as defined in Webster's Dictionary:

*fellowship 3: a company of equals or friends*

# Testament of Sovereignty

*“Where the spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty.”*  
[2 Cor. 3:17]

All rights reserved. Any part of this book may be reproduced for private or personal non-commercial use if the individual author or authors are credited. No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted for commercial purposes without written permission by the publisher or individual authors. Request for such permissions should be addressed to:

Web site: <http://sovereignfellowship.org>

Copyright is not claimed for any public domain documents, prose, poems, music, and/or quotes by religious, public, newsworthy and/or historical persons.

Many authors contributed to this work. Inclusion within the Testament of Sovereignty does not mean that the authors necessarily agree on every point of doctrine and/or opinions of the Fellowship or its leaders. Not all authors are members of the Christian Fellowship of Sovereignty and inclusion in this Testament does not necessarily mean that all the authors support or agree with all of objectives, teachings or writings of the Fellowship.

All scriptures are from the King James Version of the Holy Bible.

Editors Note: Emphasis throughout the Testament may be added by editor without notation.

Manufactured in The United States of America

Library of Congress Cataloging –in – Publication data

The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

ISBN Paperback 0-615-11610-8  
Hardcover 0-615-11611-6

1. Religious History 2. Religious instruction

Edited by Christopher Holloman Hansen

1	<b><u>TABLE OF CONTENTS</u></b>	
2	<b>DEDICATION .....</b>	<b>2</b>
3	<b>TABLE OF CONTENTS .....</b>	<b>6</b>
4	<b>TABLE OF AUTHORITIES .....</b>	<b>12</b>
5	<b>Acknowledgment.....</b>	<b>25</b>
6	<b>Foreword: Political Religion.....</b>	<b>27</b>
7	<b>NOTICE TO GOVERNMENT READERS AND STATE WORSHIPPERS INTENT ON</b>	
8	<b>SLANDERING US TO AGGRANDIZE THEMSELVES TO A SUPERIOR POSITION.....</b>	<b>28</b>
9	<b>1 Chapter 1: Introduction to Sovereignty .....</b>	<b>31</b>
10	<b>2 Chapter 2: Doctrinal &amp; Organizational Explanations.....</b>	<b>33</b>
11	2.1 Main objective of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty .....	33
12	2.2 Mark of the Beast.....	33
13	2.3 Armor of God .....	34
14	2.4 This is a Christian Nation .....	36
15	2.5 Multiple Church or Fellowship Memberships .....	39
16	2.6 Organization of the Fellowship.....	39
17	2.6.1 PRESIDING MINISTRY .....	39
18	2.6.2 QUORUM OF 13 STRIPES.....	39
19	2.6.3 CONSTELLATION OF STARS.....	39
20	2.6.4 HOUSE OF SOVEREIGN REPRESENTATIVES.....	39
21	2.6.5 SOVEREIGN MINISTERS .....	40
22	2.6.6 SOVEREIGN AMBASSADORS.....	40
23	2.6.7 HYMNAL .....	40
24	2.7 MEETINGS .....	40
25	<b>3 Chapter 3: Testaments Of Truth .....</b>	<b>41</b>
26	3.1 Thirteen testaments in honor of the original thirteen united States.....	41
27	<b>4 Chapter 4: Origins of the Fellowship .....</b>	<b>43</b>
28	4.1 Miraculous Resurrection.....	43
29	4.2 Alexander Hamilton's Christian Constitutional Society .....	43
30	4.3 Witnesses of America's Christian history .....	44
31	<b>5 Chapter 5: Invitation to Sovereignty .....</b>	<b>47</b>
32	5.1 An Invitation to devout Christian patriots.....	47
33	5.2 Know your God and do Exploits .....	48
34	5.3 Scripture references .....	48
35	5.4 Application for membership .....	50
36	<b>6 Chapter 6: Declaration of Sovereignty .....</b>	<b>52</b>

1	6.1	Free yourself from Satanic influence .....	53
2	<b>7</b>	<b>Chapter 7: Divine Intervention in America .....</b>	<b>54</b>
3	7.1	Scriptural attestations and other historical accounts of Divine intervention .....	54
4	7.2	Gideon.....	54
5	7.3	Columbus.....	54
6	7.4	Bullet proof George Washington .....	55
7	7.5	Other Testimonies.....	56
8	<b>8</b>	<b>Chapter 8: Sovereign Hymnal.....</b>	<b>58</b>
9	8.1	Introduction to the Hymnal .....	58
10	8.2	All Creatures of our God and King .....	59
11	8.3	Amazing Grace .....	60
12	8.4	America The Beautiful.....	61
13	8.5	Am I a Solider of the Cross.....	62
14	8.6	A Mighty Fortress is Our God .....	63
15	8.7	Battle Hymn of the Republic .....	64
16	8.8	Before Jehovah's Awesome Throne.....	65
17	8.9	Christ the Lord is Risen Today .....	66
18	8.10	Do What Is Right .....	67
19	8.11	Faith of Our Fathers.....	68
20	8.12	God of Our Father's, Whose All Mighty Hand .....	69
21	8.13	How Firm a Foundation .....	70
22	8.14	Master the Tempest is Raging.....	71
23	8.15	I Know that My Redeems Lives .....	73
24	8.16	My Country 'Tis of Thee.....	74
25	8.17	Onward Christian Soldiers.....	75
26	8.18	Rejoice the Lord is King.....	76
27	8.19	The Star Spangled Banner .....	77
28	8.20	We Are All Enlisted.....	79
29	8.21	Rock of Ages .....	80
30	<b>9</b>	<b>Chapter 9: Declaration of Taking Up Arms, 1775 .....</b>	<b>81</b>
31	9.1	Introduction.....	81
32	9.2	Duty bound to support liberty .....	81
33	9.3	The Declaration.....	82
34	9.4	Divine Author of our existence.....	84
35	9.5	Our attachment to no nation should supplant our attachment to liberty.....	84
36	9.6	infamy and guilt of resigning succeeding generations to hereditary bondage .....	84
37	<b>10</b>	<b>Chapter 10: The Declaration of Independence.....</b>	<b>85</b>
38	10.1	Introduction.....	85
39	10.2	Chipping away at our freedom.....	85
40	10.3	Failure of government education .....	86
41	10.4	The Declaration.....	86
42	10.5	Endowed by their Creator .....	86
43	10.6	Unalienable Rights.....	86
44	10.7	Long train of abuses.....	86
45	10.8	Appeal to the Supreme Judge of the world .....	88
46	10.9	A heavenly banner .....	88
47	<b>11</b>	<b>Chapter 11: The Constitution - A Glorious Standard .....</b>	<b>90</b>

1	11.1	Introduction.....	90
2	11.2	A presidential candidate speaks .....	90
3	11.3	A nation of kings and priests .....	90
4	11.4	The Constitution of the United States of America .....	91
5	11.4.1	Preamble .....	91
6	11.4.2	Article. I.....	92
7	11.4.3	Article. II. ....	95
8	11.4.4	Article. III.....	96
9	11.4.5	Article. IV.....	97
10	11.4.6	Article. V.....	97
11	11.4.7	Article. VI.....	97
12	11.4.8	Article. VII. ....	98
13	<b>12</b>	<b>Chapter 12: The Bill of Rights .....</b>	<b>101</b>
14	12.1	Amendment I .....	101
15	12.2	Amendment II.....	101
16	12.3	Amendment III.....	101
17	12.4	Amendment IV .....	101
18	12.5	Amendment V.....	101
19	12.6	Amendment VI .....	101
20	12.7	Amendment VII.....	102
21	12.8	Amendment VIII.....	102
22	12.9	Amendment IX .....	102
23	12.10	Amendment X.....	102
24	<b>13</b>	<b>Chapter 13: "Welfare" ... Theft of a Nation .....</b>	<b>103</b>
25	13.1	Verbicide.....	103
26	13.2	Definition of "welfare" .....	104
27	13.3	1904 Century Magazine .....	105
28	13.4	Roosevelt's usurpation .....	105
29	13.5	Concept of welfare.....	106
30	13.6	"absurdity" .....	106
31	13.7	Education, a function of Christianity .....	107
32	13.8	Christianity is perfectly republican .....	107
33	<b>14</b>	<b>Chapter 14: Declaration of Religious Duty .....</b>	<b>109</b>
34	14.1	Firstfruits.....	109
35	14.2	Mark of the Beast.....	109
36	14.3	Burden of proof.....	110
37	14.4	Render to Caesar.....	111
38	14.5	<i>A Defence of Liberty Against Tyrants</i> .....	111
39	14.6	The Father of the United States Constitution .....	111
40	14.7	Duties to God .....	112
41	14.8	Abuse of power.....	113
42	14.9	Scripture reference .....	114
43	<b>15</b>	<b>Chapter 15: Conspiracy Against Personal Sovereignty .....</b>	<b>118</b>
44	15.1	Federal Reserve Bank .....	118
45	15.2	I care not who makes the law .....	118
46	15.3	Invisible government .....	119
47	15.4	Colonel House .....	119
48	15.5	Quotes .....	119

1	<b>16 Chapter 16: Blood Money.....</b>	<b>123</b>
2	16.1 A brick of gold or a canteen of water.....	123
3	16.2 What is money? .....	123
4	16.3 Quotes on money .....	124
5	16.4 Assassinations.....	129
6	16.5 Den of thieves .....	130
7	16.6 Resolution .....	131
8	16.7 United States Note .....	132
9	<b>17 Chapter 17: Deception: Religion of the Beast.....</b>	<b>134</b>
10	17.1 This man's religion is vain .....	134
11	17.2 Deceiving and being deceived .....	136
12	17.3 There cannot be a separation of church and state.....	136
13	17.4 Politics of Witchcraft .....	136
14	17.5 Demonic arts controlling the highest seats of government .....	137
15	17.6 The Religion of Socialism .....	137
16	17.7 The two places only where socialism will work .....	138
17	17.8 Heinrich Himmler .....	138
18	17.9 Socialist ideology is loftier than Christianity.....	138
19	17.10 A useless pile of sects .....	139
20	17.11 Ecology: the new secular religion.....	140
21	17.12 Roosevelt's Socialist Religion.....	140
22	17.13 Marked by sexual indiscretion .....	141
23	17.14 Charles Darwin: The False Prophet of Anti-Science .....	143
24	17.15 A minor twentieth century religious sect .....	144
25	17.16 The goal of Darwinism .....	144
26	17.17 Sacred domains called laboratories.....	145
27	<b>18 Chapter 18: A Birthright Sold for Pottage .....</b>	<b>146</b>
28	18.1 Esau and Jacob.....	146
29	18.2 Bowen v. Roy, 476 U.S. 693 (1986).....	147
30	18.3 Spanish American War .....	148
31	18.4 belonging to the United States but not a part of the United States.....	148
32	<b>19 Chapter 19: Historical Quotes.....</b>	<b>151</b>
33	19.1 Sam, John and John Q. Adams .....	151
34	19.2 Benjamin Franklin .....	152
35	19.3 Patrick Henry .....	153
36	19.4 Thomas Jefferson.....	153
37	19.5 James Madison.....	155
38	19.6 George Washington .....	156
39	19.7 Noah Webster .....	157
40	19.8 Daniel Webster .....	158
41	19.9 Virtue and Morality .....	158
42	19.10 The Importance of Knowledge to Liberty.....	161
43	19.11 Keep and Bear Arms.....	162
44	19.12 The Cost of Liberty.....	163
45	19.13 General Interest.....	166
46	19.14 Of Special IRS Interest .....	169
47	19.15 Money .....	174
48	<b>20 Chapter 20: Maxims of Law.....</b>	<b>175</b>

1	20.1	Ignorance of the Law .....	175
2	20.2	Thoughts on law.....	175
3	20.3	Maxims .....	176
4	20.4	Definitions .....	178
5	<b>21</b>	<b>Chapter 21: Sovereign Epistles .....</b>	<b>181</b>
6	21.1	Introduction.....	181
7	21.2	American Aristocracy .....	182
8	21.3	To all freedom loving young people .....	186
9	21.4	Voluntary Slavery .....	187
10	21.5	Uncle Oliver.....	194
11	21.6	Christ is in Christmas.....	194
12	21.7	Let His Kingdom Come .....	195
13	21.8	Woem to Whoredom.....	196
14	21.9	Theory un-American.....	196
15	21.10	Response to Mr. Pickering, an Atheist.....	197
16	21.11	Population Control Nonsense .....	197
17	21.12	The Carrion of Human Flesh Portrayed .....	197
18	21.13	Animal Farm .....	198
19	21.14	Mixing religion with politics .....	199
20	21.15	Horse slaughter decried by fools.....	199
21	21.16	Horse Worship .....	199
22	21.17	Ad Nauseum .....	200
23	21.18	Death Education.....	200
24	21.19	Pledged Allegiance to the Flag .....	201
25	21.20	No Other God Before Me .....	201
26	21.21	My Friend Jefferson.....	202
27	21.22	A New Revolution .....	203
28	21.23	Duty .....	203
29	21.24	To All Those Americans Who Love Freedom .....	204
30	21.25	In the Year of Our Lord? .....	206
31	21.26	To Swear or Not to Swear that is the Question .....	209
32	21.27	Sovereign Marriage.....	212
33	21.28	5 Reasons Why Christians Should Not Obtain a State Marriage License.....	216
34	21.29	Sovereign Brother .....	218
35	21.30	The I.R.S. and The Church .....	222
36	21.31	Congress Must Feel the Heat .....	223
37	21.32	Situational Ethics .....	225
38	21.33	Americans: Tax Slaves to world .....	226
39	21.34	500 Nations.....	227
40	21.35	Senate Prayer .....	227
41	21.36	Love is Our Motivation.....	228
42	<b>22</b>	<b>Chapter 22: Inspirational Writings .....</b>	<b>230</b>
43	22.1	The Price They Paid.....	230
44	22.2	Freedom's Bell .....	231
45	22.3	A Visitor From the Past .....	232
46	22.4	The War Inevitable .....	233
47	22.5	Be Strong .....	234
48	22.6	Proclamation: A National Thanksgiving.....	234
49	22.7	What will you do without freedom? .....	235
50	22.8	The Gettysburg Address .....	235
51	22.9	Saint Crispian Day's Speech .....	235
52	22.10	The Swine Principle.....	236

1 22.11 Eternal Principles to Ponder.....237

2 22.12 Round Prints In The Sand.....238

3 22.13 Shake It Off And Step Up.....238

4 22.14 There Are No Guarantees .....239

5 22.15 Alexander's Quest .....240

6 **23 Chpater 23: The Two United States .....242**

7 23.1 Introduction.....242

8 23.2 Why Federal Law Doesn't Apply to You .....242

9 **24 Chapter 24: Jury Nullification .....251**

10 24.1 The purpose of a jury .....251

11 24.2 Juror's Handbook.....251

12 24.3 The Evolution of Jury Power .....254

13 **25 Chapter 25: Historical Documents .....257**

14 25.1 The Ten Commandments.....257

15 25.2 Magna Carta 1215.....257

16 25.3 The Mayflower Compact.....262

17 25.4 Virginia Declaration of Rights 1776.....263

18 25.5 Articles of Capitulation.....264

19 25.6 King George III's Lament of the Loss of America .....267

20 25.7 A Contract Between the King of France and Thirteen United States of North America .....268

21 25.8 1783 Paris Peace Treaty.....270

22 25.9 Articles of Confederation and perpetual Union .....273

23 25.10 The Northwest Ordinance.....279

24 25.11 Virginia Resolution.....283

25 25.12 Kentucky Resolution of 1799 .....284

26 25.13 Draft Declaration of Protest of the Commonwealth of Virginia .....284

27 25.14 Declaration of Intergovernmental Dependence 1937.....286

28 25.15 State of Nevada State Joint Resolution No. 1 .....288

29 25.16 The Jarbidge Declaration of Sovereignty.....288

30 **26 Chapter 26: Historical Speeches .....292**

31 26.1 George Washington's First Inaugural Address .....292

32 26.2 George Washington's Second Inaugrual Address.....293

33 26.3 George Washington's Farewell Address.....293

34 26.4 John Adams' Inaugural Address.....296

35 26.5 Thomas Jefferson's First Inaugural Address.....298

36 26.6 Thomas Jefferson's Second Inaugural Address .....300

37 26.7 James Madison's First Inaugural Address .....302

38 **27 Chapter 27: Noah Webster .....304**

39 27.1 America's Forgotten Founding Father .....304

40 27.2 The Anniversary of the Declaration of Independence .....305

41 **28 Benediction.....314**

**TABLE OF AUTHORITIES**

The authorities indicated below describe where specific cases, statutes, and regulations are cited within this book.

Page

**Constitutional Provisions**

13th Amendment ..... 149

14th Amendment ..... 149

16th amendment ..... 201

16th Amendment ..... 137

9th and 10th Amendments ..... 41

Art. 1 § 8.17 ..... 243

Art. 1 Sec 8..... 203

Article 7..... 199

Article I ..... 246

Article I § 8 ..... 248

Article I Section 10 ..... 133

Article I section 8 ..... 123

Article IV ..... 184

Article IV § 3.2..... 247, 248, 250

Article V ..... 184

Article VI ..... 184

Article VII ..... 34, 184

Article VIII..... 185

Article X..... 148

Articles of Confederation ..... 133

Constitution of Delaware, (1776), Article 22 ..... 37

Declaration of Independence 31, 33, 34, 36, 37, 38, 41, 43, 44, 45, 47, 52, 81, 82, 85, 86, 90, 111, 113, 136, 144, 145, 149, 165, 184, 185, 187, 188, 193, 195, 196, 197, 202, 203, 204, 208, 227, 230, 231, 242, 254, 288, 289, 305

First Amendment ..... 110

Magna Carta 1215 ..... 257

Magna Carta, or Great Charter of our Liberties ..... 252

PUBLIUS. (Madison) Federalist Papers #62 ..... 156

Second Amendment ..... 139

Sixteenth Amendment ..... 192, 246

The Federalist, No. 79 ..... 204

Thirteenth Amendment..... 33

U.S. Constitution ..... 207

United States Constitution ..... 111, 204

**Statutes**

18 U.S.C. §10 ..... 248

18 U.S.C. §5 ..... 247

28 U.S.C. §2072 ..... 247

4 U.S.C. §111(d) ..... 246, 247

4 U.S.C. §112(b) ..... 246

4 U.S.C. §112(d) ..... 247

44 U.S.C. §1505(a)(1) ..... 248

1 44 U.S.C.A. §1505, Note 16..... 248  
 2 48 U.S.C. §§874 & 1406f..... 250  
 3 Federal Reserve Act ..... 130  
 4 National Bank Act..... 191  
 5 National Bank Act of 1863..... 127  
 6 Pub.L. 91-538, Dec. 9, 1970, 94 Stat. 1397 et seq. .... 250  
 7 Religious Freedom Restoration Act ..... 33, 35  
 8 Religious Freedom Restoration Act of 1993 ..... 48  
 9 Social Security Act..... 146, 175  
 10 Statutes at Large, Vol. 68A ..... 246  
 11 Title 18 ..... 247  
 12 Title 18 of the United States Code ..... 247, 248  
 13 Title 26 ..... 175  
 14 Title 26 of the United States Code ..... 246  
 15 Title 4 of the United States Code, Sections 105-111 ..... 246  
 16 Title 5 United States Code, Chapter 552a ..... 147  
 17 Uniform Marriage and Divorce Act ..... 218

18

19 **Regulations**

20 28 C.F.R., Part 0.64-1..... 249  
 21 28 C.F.R., Part 0.96b..... 249  
 22

23 **Rules**

24 Rule 54(c) of the Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure ..... 247, 248  
 25

26 **Cases**

27 America Communicators Association v. Douds, 339 U.S. 382, 442..... 33  
 28 Board of Education of Kiryas Joel Village School District v. Grumet Decided June 27, 1994 ..... 226  
 29 Boerne v. Flores, No. 95-2074 ..... 3  
 30 Bowen v. Roy, 476 U.S. 693 (1986) ..... 141, 147  
 31 Burgin v. Forbes, 293 Ky. 456, 169 S.W.2d, 321, 325 ..... 247  
 32 City of Boerne, Petitioner v. P. F. Flores, Archbishop Of San Antonio, and United States ..... 111  
 33 Downes v. Bidwell, 182 U.S. 244 (1901)..... 149  
 34 Ex Parte Knowles, 5 Cal. 300..... 148  
 35 Georgia v. Brailsford, 3 Dall. 1, 4 (1794)..... 255  
 36 Helvering v. Davis, 301 U.S. 619..... 103  
 37 Helvering v. Davis, 301 U.S. 619 USSC (1937) ..... 106  
 38 Hotch v. U.S., 1954, 212 F.2d. 280, 14 Alaska 594 ..... 248  
 39 Jack Cole Co. v. MacFarland, 337 S.W. 2d. 453, 455-456 (Tenn. 1960)..... 169  
 40 Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. (2 Cranch) 137, 174, 176, (1803) ..... 176  
 41 Mattox v. U.S., 156 U.S. 237, 243 ..... 168  
 42 Miranda vs. Arizona, 384 U.S. 436 p. 491 ..... 176  
 43 New York v. United States, 112 S.Ct. 2408 (1992) ..... 288  
 44 Norton v. Shelby County, 118 U.S. 425 p.442 ..... 176  
 45 Pacific Ins. Co. v. Soule, 7 Wall. 433, 19 L.Ed. 95 ..... 205  
 46 People v. Kriho, No. 96CR91 (February 1997)..... 256

1	Robin vs. Hardaway, 1 Jefferson 109, (Va., 1772).....	176
2	Runkel v. Vinemiller, 1799 .....	45
3	So. Pacific v. Lowe, 238 F. 847 (1917).....	172
4	State of Georgia v. Brailsford (3 Dall 1) .....	252
5	U.S. v. Dougherty, 473 F.2d. 1113, 1139 (1972) .....	252
6	U.S. v. Morrison, No. 99-5, decided May 15, 2000 .....	3
7	U.S. v. Moylan, 417 F.2d. 1002, 1006 (1969).....	253
8	United States v. Flora, 362 U.S. 145 (1958).....	174
9	United States v. Lopez, 514 U.S. 549 (1995) .....	3
10	Watson v. Memphis, 375 U.S. 526.....	166
11	Woodson v. North Carolina, 428 U.S. 280, 293 (1976) .....	256

12

### 13 Other Authorities

14	"Free Agency.. A Divine Gift" 367, 378 .....	219
15	"Bankonomics" in One Easy Lesson, by Peter Cook .....	128
16	"Jury Nullification: History Proves It Is Not a New Idea," in CRIMINAL JUSTICE, vol. 11, no. 4 Winter 1997 .....	256
17	"Philip Dru: Administrator" .....	131
18	1904 Century Magazine .....	105
19	1984 Grace Commission report submitted to President Ronald Reagan .....	171
20	1992 Form 1040 Tax Instruction Booklet .....	173
21	2 Writings of James Madison 184 (G. Hunt ed. 1901) .....	111
22	A. V. Lunacharsky .....	138
23	Abraham Lincoln.....27, 33, 56, 107, 126, 130, 132, 162, 165, 168, 188, 191, 218	
24	Abraham Lincoln, Speeches and Writings: 1832-1858, edited by Don Fehrenbacher (N.Y.: Library of America, 1989) pp.	
25	32-33 .....	27
26	Adolf Hitler .....	29, 142, 161
27	Adolf Hitler (1889-1945), Mein Kampf.....	172
28	Adolf Hitler, Edict of March 18, 1938 .....	163
29	Albert Einstein.....	161, 164, 169
30	Albert Gallatin, Secretary of the Treasury.....	171
31	Alex Hamilton.....	161
32	Alexander Hamilton .....	43, 170
33	Alexander Hamilton, 1804 .....	251
34	Alexander Hamilton, Federalist Papers 28 .....	172
35	Alexander Hamilton, Federalist Papers 79 .....	170
36	Alexander Hamilton, The Federalist Papers.....	162
37	Alexander Pope .....	161
38	Alexis de Tocqueville.....	46, 160
39	Alfred Alder .....	161, 170
40	American Sunday School Union .....	44
41	Andrew Jackson .....	56, 159
42	Apostle Wirthlin .....	220
43	Arthur Schopenhauer.....	181
44	Benjamin Rush .....	44
45	Billions for the Bankers, by Sheldon Emry .....	128
46	Billy Graham .....	159, 167
47	Black's Law Dictionary, 6th Edition.....	246
48	Brendan Trainor .....	142
49	Brigham Young.....	220
50	British Commander-in-Chief Henry Clinton.....	56
51	Bruce Calvert.....	29
52	C. S. Lewis .....	103

1	C. S. Lewis, God in the Dock.....	168
2	C.F. Charpentier.....	164
3	Cal Thomas.....	56
4	Charles Austin Beard, 1874 -1948.....	164
5	Charles Darwin.....	145
6	Charles Darwin (1809-1882) 1871.....	29
7	Charles Wesley, 1742.....	160
8	Chief Justice John Marshall.....	175
9	Chief Justice Marshall.....	205
10	Christopher Hansen.....	202
11	Christopher Holloman Hansen ... 5, 33, 81, 103, 109, 134, 138, 143, 146, 165, 175, 186, 187, 194, 206, 212, 216, 222, 226, 227, 251	
12		
13	Coalition for the Protection of Marriage in Nevada.....	229
14	Columbus on Trial: 1492 vs. 1992.....	55
15	Confucius.....	161
16	Confucius circa 500 B.C.....	103, 143
17	Congressman John Rarick 1971.....	120
18	Congressman Larry P. McDonald, 1976.....	120
19	Congressman Louis T. McFadden.....	189
20	Congressman Rob Gramms of Minnesota.....	170
21	Council of State Governments.....	286
22	Council on Foreign Relations member Richard Gardner, 1974.....	120
23	CR, October, 1936: 13. President Heber J. Grant.....	221
24	Curtis Dall (Franklin D. Roosevelt’s son-in-law), My Exploited Father-in-Law.....	118
25	Curtis Dall, My Exploited Father-in-Law.....	119
26	Dalai Lama.....	159
27	Dalmer.....	184
28	Dan Hansen.....	227
29	Dan Meador.....	225, 242, 286
30	Daniel Hansen.....	227
31	Daniel J. Mitchell, economist.....	169
32	Daniel M. Hansen.....	201
33	Daniel McGavin Hansen.....	33, 43, 54, 123, 162, 167, 181, 196
34	Daniel Webster.....	158
35	Daniel Webster, June 1, 1837.....	158
36	David Farnham, Senior Trial Attorney.....	254
37	David O. McKay, former Commissioner of Education.....	165
38	David Rockefeller, founder of the Trilateral Commission, address to The Trilateral Commission, June, 1991.....	121
39	Dean Manion.....	36
40	Donald C. Alexander, IRS Commissioner, Federal Register, March 1974.....	173
41	Dorcas R. Hardy, former Commissioner of Social Security.....	114, 170
42	Dwight E. Avis, Head of ATF, IRS—House Ways and Means Subcommittee Hearings—1953.....	173
43	E. M. House.....	131
44	Edmund Burke.....	159, 161, 164, 166
45	Edward B. Sill.....	182
46	Edward Everett Hale.....	165
47	Edward Gibbons.....	34
48	Edward Mandell House.....	130
49	Edward R. Murrow.....	172
50	Elbridge Gerry.....	84, 88, 137
51	Emancipation Proclamation.....	188
52	Epictetus.....	161
53	Executive Order of June 4, 1963 11.110.....	130
54	Ezra Taft Benson.....	220
55	Ezra Taft Benson from (Not Commanded in All Things; and in GFC).....	222

1 Ezra Taft Benson, Secretary of Agriculture in the Eisenhower Administration..... 166

2 Famous Quotations on Money, by Sheldon Emry..... 126, 127, 128

3 Father of the Constitution, James Madison ..... 33

4 Founding Fathers 31, 33, 36, 47, 52, 81, 85, 86, 104, 106, 111, 124, 142, 149, 164, 165, 175, 184, 185, 193, 201, 206, 208,

5 228, 232, 239, 287, 304

6 Franklin D. Roosevelt..... 169

7 Franklin Sanders..... 187

8 Fraser Tytler, English historian ..... 160

9 Fred Goldberg, IRS Commissioner, Nightline with Ted Koppel, Apr.13, 1990 ..... 174

10 Frederic Bastiat ..... 171

11 Frederic Bastiat, Economic Sophisms ..... 175

12 G. Vance Smith ..... 163

13 G.K. Chesterton (1874-1936)..... 151, 159, 161, 167

14 Gary Makovski, Special IRS Agent, testifying under oath in U.S. v. Lloyd..... 171

15 Geo. Washington..... 235

16 George Bernard Shaw ..... 2

17 George Orwell..... 161

18 George Washington Carver..... 166

19 George Whitefield, Preached before the Governor, and Council, and the House of Assembly, in Georgia, on January 28,

20 1770..... 161

21 Gerry Spence..... 162

22 Haile Selassie ..... 160

23 Hans Kerrl, Reich Minister for Church Affairs..... 139

24 Harold B. Lee ..... 220

25 Harpers Magazine, 1958..... 120

26 Hazard Circular in July of 1862 ..... 190

27 Heber J. Grant ..... 219

28 Heber J. Grant, former Mayor of Salt Lake City..... 159

29 Henry Bellmon, Senator (1969) ..... 172

30 History of United States, Noah Webster ..... 157

31 Hitler ..... 184

32 Holocaust History Project Chapter 48: The Guardian of Paradise ..... 138

33 Hon. Charles A. Lindbergh, Sr., Dec. 23, 1913..... 118

34 Horace Greely ..... 159, 174, 191

35 How to Become a Member..... 29

36 Hugo Black, Supreme Court Justice, in U.S. v. Kahriger..... 171

37 I Want The Earth—Plus 5 Percent ..... 126

38 Ian McGavin..... 194, 198, 201, 237

39 Internal Revenue Code 501(c)(3) ..... 141

40 Internal Revenue Service..... 109, 224

41 Interview with Robert Menard Director of the World Freeman Society ..... 28

42 IRS 1040 form,..... 137

43 IRS Publication 21 ..... 173

44 J. A. Froude ..... 159

45 J. Patrick Shannon I Rode with Tupper, published by: Founders Publishing Co., Eustis, Florida..... 137

46 J. Ruben Clark, Jr., former Under-Secretary of State and Ambassador to Mexico ..... 167

47 J.A.I.L. (Judicial Accountability Initiative Law)..... 228

48 Jack the Ripper ..... 184

49 James A. Garfield..... 130

50 James Garfield..... 174

51 James Garfield 1877..... 164

52 James Madison (Federalist Papers #10) ..... 156

53 James Warburg member Council on Foreign Relations speaking before Senate Foreign Relations Committee on February

54 17th, 1950..... 119

55 Janet Reno, Attorney General of the United States ..... 139

1	Janine Hawkins .....	212
2	Jay David.....	45
3	Jerome Kurtz IRS Commissioner, 1980 IR Annual Report.....	174
4	Joel F. Hansen .....	85, 206
5	Johann W. von Goethe .....	193
6	John Bouvier .....	175
7	John F. Kennedy.....	165, 167
8	John F. Kennedy; Columbia University, 10 days prior to his assassination.....	165
9	John Flavel, minister of Dartmouth.....	159
10	John Jay .....	159
11	John Locke .....	160, 175
12	John Locke, late 1600’s; from: Of Tyranny .....	175
13	John Marshal .....	188
14	John Paul Jones .....	55
15	John Peter Zenger.....	252
16	John Quincy Adams .....	152
17	John Quincy Adams, 1821 .....	152
18	John Quincy Adams, July 4th, 1821.....	152
19	John Stuart Mill 1868.....	165
20	John Swinton, former chief of staff of The New York Times.....	169
21	Johnie M. Walters IRS Commissioner, 1971 Form 1040 Booklet.....	173
22	Jones v. Temmer (Aug. 1993) 829 F. Supp. 1226.....	161
23	Joseph A. Schumpeter, 1942 .....	168
24	Joseph B. Wirthlin, former president of a trade association.....	162
25	Joseph Kennedy, July 26th, 1936 New York Times .....	119
26	Joseph Smith .....	91
27	Joseph Smith, the founder of the LDS church.....	220
28	Joshua Hansen.....	203
29	Joshua J. H. Hansen.....	203
30	Joshua Joel Holloman Hansen.....	143
31	Josiah Quincy, 1774 .....	166
32	Juan Williams, Eyes on the Prize: America’s Civil Rights Years, 1954, 1965, at 38- 57, 22 1-25 (1987) .....	256
33	Judge Cummings, U.S. Federal Judge, in U.S. v. Dickerson (7th Circuit 1969).....	171
34	Justice Breyer .....	3
35	Karl Marx .....	119, 142, 197, 208
36	King James I.....	36
37	King John .....	252
38	L. Tolstoy .....	190
39	Las Vegas Review Journal .....	202, 203
40	Leon Czolgosz.....	130
41	Letter to Colonel House by Franklin D. Roosevelt, November 21st, 1933 .....	119
42	Lewis Cass .....	44
43	Lightning Over The Treasury Building, J.R. Elsom.....	125, 127, 128, 129
44	Lincoln Money Martyred .....	124, 125
45	Lord Acton .....	43, 126
46	Louisiana Purchase.....	45
47	Lynn Margulis.....	143
48	Madison, Federalist Papers 62.....	171
49	Mahatma Gandhi .....	162
50	Maltbie Davenport Babcock (1858-1901).....	234
51	Marcus Tullius Cicero 42 B.C.....	167
52	Margaret Ruth Holloman Hansen.....	58
53	Mark of Beast .....	206
54	Martin Bormann .....	138
55	Martin Luther King, Jr.....	160, 165, 167

1	Maurice Montgomery, Pastor Bible Baptist Church Madisonville, Kentucky .....	168
2	Maxim Gorky .....	138
3	Maxim of law .....	164, 170, 171, 174
4	Mayer Amsched Rothchild, a prominent European banker in the eighteenth century .....	118, 189
5	Mayer Amschel Rothschild of Germany (1743-1812) .....	131
6	Mercy Seat Christian Church .....	218
7	Money - Questions & Answers, C. Coughlin .....	125, 126, 127
8	Montesquieu .....	307
9	Mortimer Caplin, IRS Commissioner, 1975 IRS IR Audit Manual .....	173
10	Mr. Justice Brewer .....	36
11	Mr. Meacham .....	27
12	Mr. Meacham of the House Committee on the Judiciary .....	44
13	Ms. Shirley D. Peterson, former Commissioner of the IRS made in a "Tax Policy Lecture" before Southern Methodist	
14	University, on April 14, 1993 .....	172
15	Nazi Conspiracy & Aggression, Volume I .....	138
16	Nevada Eagle Forum .....	229
17	New York City Mayor John F. Hylan, 1922 .....	119
18	Noah Webster, 1888 .....	163
19	North American Review 1867 .....	45
20	Oliver F. Hansen .....	195, 199, 237
21	Orlando A. Battista .....	166
22	Pastor Everett Sileven, Faith Baptist Church, Louisville, Nebraska .....	172
23	Pastor Jim Phillips .....	222, 223
24	Pastor Trewhella .....	218
25	Patrick Henry, of Virginia, May 29, 1736 - June 6, 1799 .....	234
26	Paul Strassel, Former IRS Headquarters Agent "Wall St. Journal", 1/28/80 .....	173
27	Plato .....	166
28	Policy Document: Problems with Atheistic Anarchism, Form #08.020 .....	28
29	Policy Document: Rebutted False Arguments About Sovereignty, Form #08.018 .....	28
30	Policy Document: Rebutted False Arguments Against this Website, Form #08.011, Sections 4, and 6.1 through 6.3 .....	28
31	Pope Pius XI .....	174
32	President Abraham Lincoln .....	132, 235
33	President Andrew Jackson .....	129
34	President Calvin Coolidge .....	199
35	President Franklin D. Roosevelt .....	190
36	President Heber J. Grant .....	220
37	President James Buchanan .....	44
38	President James Madison .....	156
39	President Kennedy .....	137
40	President Lincoln .....	130
41	President of the Bank of England in the 1920's, SIR JOSIAH STAMP .....	189
42	President Ronald Reagan .....	170
43	President Theodore Roosevelt .....	160
44	President Washington .....	106
45	President Wilson .....	191, 202
46	President Woodrow Wilson .....	131
47	President Woodrow Wilson, 1913 .....	119
48	President Woodrow Wilson, 1916 .....	118
49	Prime Minister Benito Mussolini, June 8, 1923 .....	163
50	Professor Arnold Toynbee, 1931 Institute for the Study of International Affairs .....	119
51	Quorum of Stripes .....	40
52	R.J. Steck .....	200
53	Reno Gazette Journal .....	198, 199
54	Report on fighting of National Socialism in Apostolic Administration of Innsbruck-Feldkirch of Tyrol and Vorarlberg by	
55	Bishop Paulus Rusch, June 27, 1945 .....	140

1	Rev. Martin Niemoeller.....	166
2	Richard Stockton, a New Jersey State Supreme Court Justice .....	230
3	Robert B. Reich, former Secretary of the Treasury in the Clinton Administration .....	121
4	Robert Hays.....	56
5	Robert Hemphill, a former Credit Manager of the Federal Reserve Bank in Atlanta .....	190
6	Robin vs. Hardaway, 1 Jefferson 109, (Va., 1772).....	188
7	Rothschild Brothers.....	127
8	Ryan Oliver Hansen .....	165
9	Saint Pius X, Lucinda Sane, 12 March, 1904.....	160
10	Salmon P. Chase, (Lincoln’s Secretary to the Treasury).....	191
11	Samuel Adams.....	150, 151, 162
12	Samuel Adams, 1772.....	151
13	Samuel Adams, 1776.....	151
14	Samuel Adams, Debates & Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts .....	151
15	Samuel Chase .....	45, 84, 89, 254
16	Samuel Clemens, author writing under the pen name "Mark Twain" .....	164
17	Sarah Brady, July 1, 1988 .....	162
18	Secretary of the Treasury of the United States .....	126
19	Secrets of the Federal Reserve, by Eustace Mullins.....	128
20	SEDM.....	2
21	Senator Barry Goldwater 1964 from his book: With No Apologies .....	120
22	Senator Carter Glass 1983 .....	121
23	Senator Edward M. Kennedy .....	170
24	Senator Edward V. Long.....	170
25	Senator Everett Dirksen.....	174
26	Senator Frank Church, Chairman, Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations, 94th Congress, First Session, Volume 3, Internal Revenue Service (October 2, 1975).....	173
28	Senator Paul Laxalt .....	172
29	Senator Richard Bryan, Nevada: November 9, 1999 .....	172
30	Senator Sam Ervin.....	103, 167, 170
31	Senator Sam Ervin, principal sponsor of the Privacy Act of 1974 .....	170
32	Senator William Fulbright, Former chairman of the U.S. Senate Foreign Relations Committee, 1963 .....	120
33	Senator William Jenner, 1954 .....	120
34	Sir Hartley Shawcross .....	193
35	Sir William Blackstone, Commentaries 1:139 (1765).....	176
36	Social Security Administration .....	109
37	Sovereignty for Police Officers, Form #12.022.....	28
38	Spencer W. Kimbal .....	220
39	SS-5s and 1040 forms .....	183
40	Stalin .....	184
41	Strobe Talbott, Clinton’s Deputy Secretary of State, Time Magazine, July 20th, 1992.....	121
42	Subject Index, Section 53 on "Sovereign Citizens".....	28
43	Supreme Court Associate Justice Antonin Scalia.....	56
44	Supreme Court Justice Felix Frankfurter, 1952.....	120
45	Supreme Court Justice William O. Douglas.....	161
46	T. Coleman Andrews, Commissioner of IRS, May 25, 1956 in U.S. News & World Report.....	171
47	Tacitus, 56-120 A.D. ....	170
48	Testament of Sovereignty.....	5
49	The Book of the States, Volume 2, Book 2, pp. 142 & 143 .....	286
50	The Boy Scout Oath and Law .....	194
51	THE BULLET PROOF GEORGE WASHINGTON .....	55
52	The Church and Usury, by Rev. P. Cleary .....	125
53	The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints .....	220
54	The Decline & Fall of Rome .....	34
55	The Elements of Economics, J.L. Carmichael.....	128

1 The First Christian Fellowship Of Eternal Sovereignty ..... 47, 109

2 The Most Reverend George Niederauer, Roman Catholic Bishop..... 165

3 The Nizkor Project ..... 139

4 The Origin of Species ..... 144

5 The Washington Post front page Dec. 2, 1993, IRS Hopes Change..... 173

6 Theophilus Parsons, Massachusetts Convention for ratification of the U.S. Constitution ..... 171

7 Third General Assembly of the Council of State Governments ..... 286

8 Thomas Jefferson to Gideon Granger, 1800..... 3

9 Thomas Jefferson, 1789 ..... 251

10 Thomas Jefferson, 2nd Inaugural Address ..... 154, 169

11 Thomas Jefferson, letter to William Johnson, June 12, 1823, The Complete Jefferson ..... 155

12 Thomas Jefferson: Draft, Kentucky Resolutions, 1798..... 29

13 Thomas Nelson, Jr..... 230

14 Thomas Paine, 1776..... 166

15 Thomas W. Phelps..... 131

16 Thurston Bell..... 166, 225

17 Toyotomi Hideyoshi, Shogun, August 29, 1558, Japan ..... 163

18 Tragedy and Hope: A History of The World in Our Time 1966, Professor Carroll Quigley, Georgetown University..... 120

19 Treasury Inspector General of Tax Administration ..... 225

20 Tupper Saussy ..... 136

21 U.S. Congressman Oscar Callaway, 1917 ..... 118

22 U.S. Mint..... 44

23 U.S. Secretary of State ..... 45

24 U.S. Supreme Court Decision 1892 ..... 37

25 United Nation’s UNESCO’s General Conference..... 136

26 United States Supreme Court .....36, 45, 103, 110, 135, 143, 149, 201, 212

27 United States Supreme Court in Loan Association v. Topeka (1874)..... 171

28 USSC Justice O'Connor ..... 3

29 V. Bazarov..... 138

30 Victor Hugo..... 161

31 Virginia House Speaker Richard E. Byrd, 1910, predicting what would happen If the federal Congress were to enact a  
32 federal income tax ..... 173

33 Voltaire..... 169

34 W. J. Cameron..... 38

35 Walter E. Williams, John M. Olin Distinguished Professor of Economics at George Mason University in Fairfax, Virginia,  
36 January 24, 1996 ..... 171

37 Walter Lippmann..... 161

38 Warren Christopher ..... 192

39 Webster’s 1828 Dictionary..... 204

40 Webster's Dictionary ..... 47

41 Wendell Berry, "Discipline and Hope" in A Continuous Harmony (1972), p. 124..... 2

42 Whitney Francesca Hansen ..... 26

43 Why are Conservatives So Mean?, Andrew Klavan ..... 28

44 William C. Clegg..... 182

45 William Norman Grigg ..... 167

46 William Penn..... 160, 255

47 William Shakespeare ..... 188

48 Winston Churchill ..... 119, 138, 166

49 Winston Churchill, 1922 ..... 119

50 Wm. Shakespeare ..... 168

51 Wm. Tyndale..... 181

52 Woodrow Wilson ..... 162

53

1	<b>Scriptures</b>	
2	1 Chr. 16:16.....	210
3	1 Cor. 15:45.....	48
4	1 Kgs. 8:31.....	210
5	1 Sam. 24:21,22.....	210
6	1 Tim. 6:6.....	2
7	1st John, Chapter 1.....	4
8	2 Cor. 3:17.....	5
9	2 Tim. 2:15-17.....	28
10	Acts 2:30.....	211
11	Acts 23.....	118
12	Acts 5: 27-41.....	32
13	Acts, Chapter 23.....	186
14	Alma 60:36.....	220
15	Book of Revelation.....	55
16	Dan. 11:31.....	49
17	Dan. 11:32.....	42
18	Dan. 3:17.....	238
19	Daniel 11:31.....	47
20	Daniel 11:32.....	47
21	Deut. 10:20.....	210
22	Deut. 11.....	115
23	Deut. 11:26-28.....	116
24	Deut. 14:22-23.....	115
25	Deut. 18:4.....	114
26	Deut. 26:10.....	114
27	Deut. 28:43&44.....	190
28	Deut. 6:13.....	210
29	Deut.8 1-2.....	238
30	Deuteronomy 23:19.....	124
31	Eccl. 9:2.....	212
32	Ecclesiastes 1:15.....	224
33	Eph. 6:11.....	57
34	Eph. 6:12.....	136, 237
35	Ex 32:29-33.....	113
36	Exod. 23:19.....	114
37	Exodus Chapter 20.....	257
38	Ezek. 20:40.....	114
39	Ezek. 44:30.....	115
40	Ezek. 48:14.....	115
41	Ezra 10:5.....	211
42	First Samuel Chapter 8.....	146
43	Gal. 5:1.....	183
44	Gal. 6:7, 9-10.....	116
45	Galatians 5:1.....	48
46	Gen. 13:1, 6-7.....	238
47	Gen. 2:7.....	48
48	Gen. 26:3.....	211
49	Heb. 13:8, 9.....	209
50	Heb. 6:13.....	211
51	Heb. 6:13-20.....	211
52	Heb. 7:28.....	211
53	Hel. 6:38.....	221
54	Holy Bible.....	33, 41, 107, 304

1	Hosea 4:6.....	37
2	I Cor. 12:5 .....	39
3	I Tim. 6:12.....	238
4	II Chr. 15:14, 15 .....	210
5	II Chr. 34 .....	115, 116
6	II Chronicles 7:14.....	132
7	II Cor. 10:3 .....	238
8	II Cor. 13 .....	44
9	II Cor. 3:17 .....	34, 41
10	II Cor. 4:8,9.....	238
11	II Kgs. 11:4.....	210
12	II Tim. 1:7 .....	56
13	II Tim. 2:1-4.....	57
14	II Tim. Chapter 4:3 & 4.....	135
15	II Timothy, Chapter 3.....	135
16	In Job 38:1,3 & 7.....	58
17	Isa. 45:23 .....	48, 209
18	Isaiah 45.23 .....	47
19	Isaiah 54:17 .....	28
20	James 1: 6-8.....	225
21	James 1:26.....	134
22	James 5:12.....	212
23	Jer. 11:1-3.....	116
24	Jer. 12:10.....	212
25	Jer. 12:15-17.....	210
26	Jer. 2:19 & 20.....	136
27	Jer. 2:3.....	115
28	Jeremiah 1:4 & 5 .....	195
29	Jesus Christ... 25, 32, 34, 37, 38, 40, 41, 43, 44, 46, 47, 48, 49, 50, 51, 52, 57, 107, 111, 114, 115, 134, 140, 142, 143, 144, 30 145, 150, 153, 183, 195, 197, 201, 203, 206, 207, 208, 209, 220, 221, 223, 228, 314	
31	Job 2:3 .....	238
32	John 1:9-12.....	238
33	John 10:16 .....	39
34	John 10:34 .....	47
35	John 12:35 .....	134
36	John 7 .....	115
37	John. 10:34 .....	49
38	John. 7:49 .....	115
39	Josh. 23:7.....	210
40	Josh. 9:19.....	210
41	King James Version of the Holy Bible .....	5
42	Lamentations 3:27 .....	2
43	Law of Christ.....	109
44	Lev. 19:12 .....	211
45	Lev. 2:12 .....	114
46	Lev. 26.....	115
47	Lev. 26:14-38 .....	115
48	Leviticus 25:10.....	36
49	Leviticus 25:36-37.....	124
50	Luke 11.....	115
51	Luke 9:50 .....	39
52	Luke. 11:28 .....	115
53	Mal. 3:8-10.....	114
54	Mark 15:12 & 13 .....	195
55	Mark 3:25 & 26.....	134

1	Mark.12:17.....	111
2	Matt. 11:29.....	183
3	Matt. 2:13.....	238
4	Matt. 25:30.....	111
5	Matt. 4:8 & 9.....	135
6	Matt. 5:17-19.....	209
7	Matt. 6:24.....	50
8	Matt. 7:12.....	2
9	Matthew 18:21.....	40
10	Matthew 2:3.....	238
11	Matthew 6:24.....	48
12	Matthew 7:20.....	39
13	Micah 7:6.....	238
14	Neh. 10:35 and 37.....	115
15	Neh. 13:31.....	115
16	Neh. 5:12.....	210
17	Num. 14:8.....	238
18	Num. 18:12.....	114
19	Num. 30:1,2.....	211
20	Old Testament.....	55
21	Prov. 12:24.....	2
22	Prov. 15:28.....	2
23	Prov. 3:9.....	114
24	Prov. 8:32-36.....	116
25	Proverbs 12:24.....	185
26	Proverbs 14:34.....	158
27	Proverbs 22 vs 7.....	131
28	Proverbs 22:7.....	190
29	Proverbs 29:12.....	136
30	Proverbs 3:1, 5-6.....	57
31	Proverbs 3:9.....	48
32	Ps. 82:1.....	49
33	Psalms 33:12.....	196
34	Psalms 47:6 & 7.....	40, 58
35	Psalms 82.....	47
36	Psalms 138:7-8.....	238
37	Psalms 30:5.....	238
38	Psalms 37:23-24.....	238
39	Rev 13:8.....	35, 110
40	Rev. 1:5.....	49
41	Rev. 1:6 and 5:10.....	41
42	Rev. 12:9.....	238
43	Rev. 13: 16 & 17.....	35
44	Rev. 13:10.....	49
45	Rev. 13:16.....	47
46	Rev. 13:16 & 17.....	109
47	Rev. 13:6.....	49
48	Rev. 13:9.....	35, 110
49	Rev. 19:19 & 20.....	136
50	Rev. 20.....	48
51	Rev. 20:1.....	49
52	Rev. 3:15.....	134
53	Rev.3 Verses 15 to 22.....	115
54	Revelation 1:5,6.....	47
55	Revelation 12:7-17.....	46

---

1	Revelation 12:9 and 19:19-20 .....	135
2	Revelation 13:10 .....	47
3	Revelation 13:1 7,8,16 & 17 .....	47
4	Rom. 14:11 .....	49
5	Rom. 14:12 .....	49
6	Rom.13:10 .....	184
7	Satan .....	145, 148
8	St. John 11 .....	43
9	St. Mathew 25:40 .....	195
10	The Talmud, Sabbath, 54 b .....	166
11	Zech. 8:17 .....	210

12

## Acknowledgment

We Sovereigns acknowledge  
Jesus Christ as our King and Saviour,  
the Lord of lords and King of kings,  
and The Redeemer of all mankind.

"For we wrestle not against flesh and blood but against principalities... and wickedness in high places." Eph. 6: 12



The First Amendment is a powerful weapon; so encase yourself in the whole armor of Jesus Christ and pick up His sword before you go forth to Battle with the Beast.



Computer art by Whitney Francesca Hansen

The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty may help you educate yourself about the **Mark of the Beast** (the Social Security Number), help you to embrace the animating contest of freedom and discard the secure bands of American socialism.

Claim your Sovereignty and your God given Unalienable Rights.

But Please don't quit your current denomination. Just add us to your arsenal!

The march toward Victory starts here!

<http://www.sovereignfellowship.org>

## Foreword: Political Religion

Political Religion

Written by Abraham Lincoln

As an Address to the Young Men's Lyceum of Springfield, Illinois

January 27, 1838

I know the American People are much attached to their Government; - I know they would suffer much for its sake; - I know they would endure evils long and patiently, before they would ever think of exchanging it for another. Yet, notwithstanding all this, if the laws be continually despised and disregarded, if their rights to be secure in their persons and property, are held by no better tenure than the caprice of a mob, the alienation of their affections from the Government is the natural consequence; and to that, sooner or later, it must come.

Here then, is one point at which danger may be expected.

The question recurs "how shall we fortify against it?" The answer is simple. Let every American, every lover of liberty, every well-wisher to his posterity, swear by the blood of the Revolution, never to violate in the least particular, the laws of the country; and never to tolerate their violation by others. As the patriots of seventy-six did to the support of the Declaration of Independence, so to the support of the Constitution and Laws, let every American pledge his life, his property, and his sacred honor; -let every man remember that to violate the law, is to trample on the blood of his father, and to tear the character of his own, and his children's liberty. Let reverence for the laws, be breathed by every American mother, to the lisping babe, that prattles on her lap -let it be taught in schools, in seminaries, and in colleges; -let it be written in Primers, spelling books, and in Almanacs; -let it be preached from the pulpit, proclaimed in legislative halls, and enforced in courts of justice. And, in short, let it become the political religion of the nation; and let the old and the young, the rich and the poor, the grave and the gay, of all sexes and tongues, and colors and conditions, sacrifice unceasingly upon its altars." From Abraham Lincoln, Speeches and Writings: 1832-1858, edited by Don Fehrenbacher (N.Y.: Library of America, 1989) pp. 32-33.

Mr. Meacham delivered a report of the Committee on the Judiciary to the United States Congress on March 27th, 1854:

*"Down to the Revolution, every colony did sustain religion in some form. It was deemed peculiarly proper that the **religion of liberty** should be upheld by a free people.*

*"Had the people, during the Revolution, had a suspicion of any attempt to war against Christianity, that revolution would have been strangled in its cradle."*

1  
2 **NOTICE TO GOVERNMENT READERS AND STATE WORSHIPPERS INTENT ON**  
3 **SLANDERING US TO AGGRANDIZE THEMSELVES TO A SUPERIOR POSITION**

4 *"No weapon formed against you shall prosper,*  
5 *And every tongue which rises against you in judgment*  
6 *You shall condemn.*  
7 *This is the heritage of the servants of the LORD,*  
8 *And their righteousness is from Me,"*  
9 *Says the LORD.*  
10 *[Isaiah 54:17, Bible, NKJV]*

11 *"Be diligent to [investigate and expose the truth for yourself and thereby] present yourself [and the*  
12 *public servants who are your fiduciaries and stewards under the Constitution] approved to God, a*  
13 *worker who does not need to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word [and the deeds] of truth. But shun*  
14 *profane babblings [government propaganda, tyranny, and usurpation] for they will increase to more*  
15 *ungodliness. And their message [and their harmful affects] will spread like cancer [to destroy our*  
16 *society and great Republic]."*  
17 *[2 Tim. 2:15-17, Bible, NKJV]*

18 If you are a government representative or state-worshipping idolater intent on using these materials to slander and discredit  
19 us, in connection with the "sovereign citizen" movement, please carefully read the following resources:

- 20 1. Interview with Robert Menard Director of the World Freeman Society (OFFSITE LINK) - he answers press questions  
21 the same way we would  
22 [http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4\\_xYH2GUyN8](http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=4_xYH2GUyN8)  
23 2. Subject Index, Section 53 on "Sovereign Citizens"  
24 [http://sedm.org/Search/SubjectIndex.htm#Sovereign\\_Citizens](http://sedm.org/Search/SubjectIndex.htm#Sovereign_Citizens)  
25 3. Policy Document: Problems with Atheistic Anarchism, Form #08.020- addresses why we are NOT "anarchists" toward  
26 all law like most "sovereign citizens" and libertarians are.  
27 SLIDES: <http://sedm.org/Forms/08-PolicyDocs/ProbsWithAtheistAnarchism.pdf>  
28 VIDEO: <http://youtu.be/n883Ce11ML0>  
29 4. Sovereignty for Police Officers, Form #12.022- explains sovereignty concepts for law enforcement and government  
30 personnel  
31 SLIDES: <http://sedm.org/LibertyU/SovereigntyForPolice.pdf>  
32 VIDEO: <http://youtu.be/qFDWYLWiE1I>  
33 5. Policy Document: Rebutted False Arguments About Sovereignty, Form #08.018  
34 FORMS PAGE: <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>  
35 DIRECT LINK: <http://sedm.org/Forms/08-PolicyDocs/RebFalseArgSovereignty.pdf>  
36 6. Policy Document: Rebutted False Arguments Against this Website, Form #08.011, Sections 4, and 6.1 through 6.3  
37 FORMS PAGE: <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>  
38 DIRECT LINK: <http://sedm.org/Forms/08-PolicyDocs/RebFalseArgAgWebsite.pdf>  
39 7. Why are Conservatives So Mean? (OFFSITE LINK) –Andrew Klavan  
40 <http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sC6MnwknfmU>

41 Take NOTICE:

- 42 1. We are NOT elitists, but instead insist on the equality, dignity, autonomy, and self-determination of ALL. The largest  
43 collection of men called government has no more rights under REAL law than a single human being if in fact we are  
44 ALL equal, as [President Obama alleged in his first inauguration speech](#).  
45 2. We are NOT anti-government. If in fact THE PEOPLE are the SOVEREIGN and therefore the "State" as legally  
46 defined, its absolutely absurd to be against such a group because the Bible commands us to love our neighbor, and  
47 therefore indirectly, the People in their sovereign capacity as the "[State](#)".

- 1 3. We do NOT advance or condone injurious, lawless, or violent actions of any kind by anyone. Furthermore, to [not](#)  
2 [consent to become a "subject" of the civil statutory law, which is optional, is not "lawless"](#). If it is, then the  
3 GOVERNMENT is lawless, because under the concept of sovereign immunity, GOVERNMENTS claim (in violation  
4 of the constitution and the equality of all, we might add) the right to NOT be the subject of any law they want. If in fact  
5 we are all equal as the Constitution requires, then we ALL have the SAME sovereign immunity as the government has.  
6 If in fact the government is one of delegated powers, it can have NO MORE AUTHORITY or rights than the  
7 SOVEREIGN PEOPLE, WE THE PEOPLE, from whom that authority was delegated. Anyone who suggests otherwise  
8 is one or more of the following:  
9 3.1. An idiot.  
10 3.2. A lunatic.  
11 3.3. A selfish elitist who wants to benefit themselves or their group as one of the elite at the involuntary expense of  
12 someone else's EQUAL rights..  
13 3.4. A state worshipping idolater who attributes "supernatural" or "superior" powers to a government that the people  
14 themselves do not also have. Hence, they are often unknowingly advocating a [state-sponsored civil religion](#) in  
15 violation of the First Amendment prohibition against [government establishment of religion](#).  
16 4. We DO NOT claim to be "sovereign citizens".  
17 5. We think that anyone who claims that status or any other convenient label the [de facto government](#) uses to maliciously  
18 slander, control, or enslave people is an IDIOT. This includes "taxpayer", "citizen", "resident", "person", "individual",  
19 etc. See the following for the reason:

*Government Instituted Slavery Using Franchises, Form #05.030*

FORMS PAGE: <http://sedm.org/Forms/FormIndex.htm>

DIRECT LINK: <http://sedm.org/Forms/05-MemLaw/Franchises.pdf>

- 20 6. We think that those in the [de facto government](#) who use the term "sovereign citizens" or any other derogatory term are  
21 also MALICIOUS IDIOTS because they can't and won't even define their terms and [refuse to be accountable for the](#)  
22 [legal limitations imposed by any and every definition they publish](#). They are [presumptuous fools](#).

23 *"Ignorance more frequently begets confidence [and [presumptions](#)] than does knowledge."  
24 [Charles Darwin (1809-1882) 1871]*

25 *"Believing [[PRESUMING](#) without checking the facts and evidence] is easier than thinking. Hence so  
26 many more believers than thinkers."  
27 [Bruce Calvert]*

28 *"What luck for rulers that men do not think"  
29 [Adolf Hitler]*

- 30 7. We believe that anyone that trusts any government to either tell them the truth or protect their freedom is an IDIOT.

31 *"The only thing necessary for evil to triumph is for good men to do nothing, or to trust civil rulers or  
32 government to do the right thing."  
33 [Sovereignty Education and Defense Ministry (SEDM)]*

34 *"Confidence is everywhere the parent of despotism. Free government is founded in jealousy, and not in  
35 confidence."*

36 *[Thomas Jefferson: Draft, Kentucky Resolutions, 1798;*

37 *SOURCE: <http://www.famguardian.org/Subjects/Politics/ThomasJefferson/jeff4.htm>]*

- 38 8. Anyone such as yourself who abuses slander, misinformation, propaganda, or fallacies to radicalize the public against  
39 us and bring unwarranted violence or "selective enforcement" against us are the REAL terrorists and threat to the  
40 public.  
41 9. By downloading, quoting, or using anything from this site, you automatically become consenting parties to our  
42 [Member Agreement, Form #01.001](#). See the following for a warning on this subject:

*[How to Become a Member](#)*

<http://sedm.org/Membership/HowBecomeMember.htm>

- 43 10. If you don't like our tactics, then you have the government to thank. All we have done is immitate their behavior. They  
44 only talk to or help "taxpayers". We only talk to or help "members".



# 1 Chapter 1: Introduction to Sovereignty

2 By Daniel McGavin Hansen, Sovereign

3 Today, modern Americans find themselves in an ancient dilemma for we have traded in our Birthright for a 'mess of pottage'.  
4 As We the People confront trillion Dollar debt, gross and blatant immorality, and a long train of governmental abuses and  
5 usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce us under absolute Despotism... It is our Duty to  
6 seek proper remedy for our awful situation. Accordingly, it behooves us to cease groping in darkness and seek the light of  
7 faith which guided and sustained our Founding Fathers.

8 As modern day Sovereigns it is not our intention to invent or concoct a New Age religion beguiled by the titillating reasonings  
9 of mere man or the mysteries of ancient Babylon as embraced and expanded upon within the un-hallowed halls of the Great  
10 and Abominable government schools.

11 The precepts, beliefs and doctrines of our Founding Fathers have been hidden and censored to insure that our children are  
12 ignorant of their noble heritage and rights. The reason "Johnny can't read" is because the National Education Association and  
13 the federal Department of Education understand that book burning is passe' when Johnny can't read a book or a newspaper  
14 or the Bible, the *Declaration of Independence*, or the *Constitution of the United States of America*; even if and when he can  
15 discover the same away from the monopolized and tax financed centers of indoctrination.

16 Let us then light up the darkness with refreshing and tantalizing quotations from our Founding Fathers to whet our appetites  
17 with hunger and desire and nourishment to pursue our never ending quest for truth, justice and the American way.

18 Feast on the words of Benjamin Franklin as he addressed the Constitutional Convention.

19 *"Mr. President:*

20 *"The small progress we have made after four or five weeks close attendance & continual reasonings*  
21 *with each other--our different sentiments on almost every question, several of the last producing as*  
22 *many noes as ayes, is methinks a melancholy proof of the imperfection of the Human Understanding.*  
23 *"We indeed seem to feel our own want of political wisdom, since we have been running about in search*  
24 *of it. We have gone back to ancient history for models of government, and examined the different forms*  
25 *of those Republics which, having been formed with the seeds of their own dissolutions, now no longer*  
26 *exist. And we have viewed Modern States all round Europe, but find none of their Constitutions suitable*  
27 *to our circumstances.*

28 *"In this situation of this Assembly, groping as it were in the dark to find political truth, and scarce able*  
29 *to distinguish it when presented to us, how has it happened, Sir, that we have not hitherto once thought*  
30 *of humbly applying to the Father of lights to illuminate our understanding?"*

31 *"In the beginning of the Contest with G. Britain, when we were sensible of danger, we had daily prayer*  
32 *in this room for Divine protection. - Our prayers, Sir, were heard, & they were graciously answered.*  
33 *All of us who were engaged in the struggle must have observed frequent instances of superintending*  
34 *Providence in our favor.*

35 *"To that kind Providence we owe this happy opportunity of consulting in peace on the means of*  
36 *establishing our future national felicity. And have we now forgotten that powerful Friend? or do we*  
37 *imagine we no longer need His assistance?"*

38 *"I have lived, Sir, a long time, and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth--that*  
39 *God Governs in the affairs of men. And if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without His notice, is it*  
40 *probable that an empire can rise without His aid?"*

41 *"We have been assured, Sir, in the Sacred Writings, that 'except the Lord build the House, they labor*  
42 *in vain that build it.' I firmly believe this; and I also believe that without his concurring aid we shall*  
43 *succeed in this political building no better than the Builders of Babel: We shall be divided by our partial*

1 *local interests; our projects will be confounded, and we ourselves shall become a reproach and a by*  
2 *word down to the future ages.*

3 *"And what is worse, mankind may hereafter from this unfortunate instance, despair of establishing*  
4 *Governments by Human wisdom and leave it to chance, war and conquest.*

5 *"I therefore beg leave to move--that henceforth prayers imploring the assistance of Heaven, and its*  
6 *blessing on our deliberations, be held in this Assembly every morning before we proceed to business,*  
7 *and that one or more of the clergy of this city be requested to officiate in that service."*

8 Glimpse into the soul of the Father of our Nation, George Washington, as he pens a sacred prayer.

9 *"Most gracious God and heavenly Father, we cannot cease, but must cry unto Thee for mercy, because*  
10 *my sins cry against me for justice... .That I may know my sins are forgiven by His death and passion.*  
11 *Embrace me in the arms of Thy mercy; vouchsafe to receive me unto the bosom of Thy love, shadow me*  
12 *with Thy wings, that I may safely rest under Thy protection this night; and so into Thy hands I commend*  
13 *myself, both soul and body, in the name of Thy Son, Jesus Christ, beseeching Thee in Thy heavenly*  
14 *kingdom. Bless all in authority over us, be merciful to all those afflicted with Thy cross or calamity,*  
15 *bless all my friends, forgive my enemies and accept my thanksgiving this evening for all the mercies*  
16 *and favors afforded me; hear and graciously answer these my requests, and whatever else Thou see'st*  
17 *needful grant us, for the sake of Jesus Christ in whose blessed Name and Words I continue to pray, Our*  
18 *Father, who art in heaven, hallowed be Thy Name..."*

19 Read on dear reader for man does not live by bread alone but by every word of God uttered by Him and His servants.

20 As intelligent, moral and faithful men and women trouble themselves to consider the precepts and beliefs of The First  
21 Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty we would refer you first to the record of the foundations of the Church, following  
22 the death of Christ, under the direction of the apostles as contained in Acts 5: 27-41:

- 23 27. And when they had brought them, they set them before the council: and the high priest asked them,  
24 28. Saying, Did not we straightly command you that ye should not teach in this name? and, behold, ye have filled  
25 Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us.  
26 29. Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said, We ought to obey God rather than men.  
27 30. The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.  
28 31. Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and  
29 forgiveness of sins.  
30 32. And we are his witnesses of these things; and so is also the Holy Ghost, whom God hath given to them that obey  
31 him.  
32 33. When they heard that, they were cut to the heart, and took counsel to slay them.  
33 34. Then stood there up one in the council, a Pharisee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, had in reputation among  
34 all the people, and commanded to put the apostles forth a little space;  
35 35. And said unto them, Ye men of Israel, take heed to yourselves what ye intend to do as touching these men.  
36 36. For before these days rose up Theuclas, boasting himself to be somebody; to whom a number of men, about four  
37 hundred, joined themselves; who was slain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were scattered, and brought to nought.  
38 37. After this man rose up Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he also  
39 perished; and all, even as many as obeyed him, were dispersed.  
40 38. And now I say unto you, Refrain from these men, and let them alone: for if this council or this work be of men, it  
41 will come to nought:  
42 39. But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; lest haply ye be found even to fight against God.  
43 40. And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apostles, and beaten them, they commanded that they  
44 should not speak in the name of Jesus, and let them go.  
45 41. And they departed from the presence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to suffer shame for  
46 his name.

1 These words from the Bible clearly define the goals of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty in our  
2 opposition to the dictates of man, his mandates or laws when these tyrannies are in opposition to the teachings and laws of  
3 God.

4 The Father of the *Constitution*, James Madison, confirmed these divine principles recorded in Acts when he stated:

5 *"This duty [owed the Creator] is precedent both in order of time and degree of obligation, to the claims*  
6 *of Civil Society.... [E]very man who becomes a member of any Civil Society, [must] do it with a saving*  
7 *of his allegiance to the Universal Sovereign. We maintain therefore that in matters of Religion, no man's*  
8 *right is abridged by the institution of Civil Society, and that Religion is wholly exempt from its*  
9 *cognizance."* Writings of James Madison pg. 184 (G. Hunt ed. 1901).

10 We Sovereigns have herein boldly declared our doctrine and send it forth to withstand the buffetings and criticisms of the  
11 unforgiving marketplace of ideas. We lay no claim to originality or novelty in our quest to rediscover and resurrect the  
12 religion and beliefs our Founding Fathers treasured above life or fortune. Our goal is quite simply to inspire and organize  
13 Christian patriots, through understanding, wisdom and doctrine, to reclaim their rightful heritage as sons, daughters and  
14 heirs of God and of liberty.

## 15 **2 Chapter 2: Doctrinal & Organizational Explanations**

### 16 **2.1 Main objective of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty**

17 DOCTRINAL & ORGANIZATIONAL EXPLANATIONS REGARDING THE FIRST CHRISTIAN FELLOWSHIP OF  
18 ETERNAL SOVEREIGNTY

19 *"Let [the Constitution] be taught in schools, in seminaries, and in colleges, let it be preached from the*  
20 *pulpit, proclaimed in legislative halls and enforced in courts of justice. And in short, let it become the*  
21 *political religion of the nation."*  
22 *[Abraham Lincoln]*

23 By Daniel McGavin Hansen, Sovereign and Christopher Holloman Hansen, Sovereign

24 The main objective of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is to proselyte and educate sovereign Americans  
25 and empower them to demand and defend their God given rights and fulfill their duties as freedom loving Christians against  
26 the encroachment of the Beast and his agents. A Supreme Court Justice in *America Communicators Association v. Douds*,  
27 339 U.S. 382, 442 said,

28 *"It is not the function of our Government to keep the citizen from falling into error; it is the function of*  
29 *the citizen to keep the government from falling into error."*

30 We intend to do all we can as a Christian Fellowship and as a free sovereign people to return our governments to their proper  
31 Constitutional role as is our proper "function" and duty.

### 32 **2.2 Mark of the Beast**

33 We feel it is our obligation to teach our members to be self governing by learning the liberating principles of individual  
34 responsibilities under God. The Holy Bible tells us that we cannot serve two masters. We intend to use all legal means to  
35 regain our sovereignty as "We the People" by placing our governments back into the proper role of servants and not of masters  
36 by following the precepts and duties as defined in the Declaration of Independence, enforcing the Constitutional limitations  
37 set upon our governments and by applying the Religious Freedom Restoration Act. We intend, also, to help obtain for our  
38 membership salvation from the involuntary servitude (see the Thirteenth Amendment) imposed upon us by the Beast, through  
39 his agents, disguised as the Social Security System and its "Mark of the Beast" the infamous Social Security identification  
40 number.

41 *"In decent respect to the opinions of mankind," we offer the following reasoning, scripture and*  
42 *historical evidence of our heritage to articulate our deeply held belief that America must reestablish*

1 *individual freedoms through Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour of this Nation or become unwitting slaves*  
2 *to the Beast. Jealous of their newly won and God ordained rights of free men, the founders of our nation*  
3 *refused to ratify the Constitution of the United States unless and until the Bill of Rights or the first ten*  
4 *amendments were added thereto. The Bill of Rights for the people is in reality a bill of limitations on*  
5 *the government as expressed in the PREAMBLE thereof: "...in order to prevent misconstruction or*  
6 *abuse of its powers, that further declaratory and restrictive clauses should be added: ..."*

7 It is with great significance that the very first statement in the very first amendment, Article I, is

8 *"Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise*  
9 *thereof"*

10 This is self evident fact that the government is restricted from interfering in the establishment or free exercise of religion.  
11 Conversely, as we shall demonstrate in this doctrinal dissertation, the founders expected religion to significantly influence  
12 said government as established with contractual limitations to serve the people who received their sovereign powers from  
13 God.

14 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is a truly American establishment of religion as defined in the  
15 TESTAMENTS of TRUTH and our DECLARATION OF SOVEREIGNTY.

16 Membership in this fellowship is by invitation only to Christians who recognize Jesus Christ as "our Lord" as He is so  
17 designated under Article VII of the Constitution of the United States.

18 A membership application form is available with further explanations and pledges. All potential members should be  
19 thoroughly conversant with the above cited Christian Fellowship literature.

20 We Sovereigns have historical documents and chosen flagship scriptures which help define our purpose, justify our cause,  
21 and limit our membership. These *include* but are not limited to the following:

22 Isaiah, a prophet in ancient Israel declared (5:13),

23 *"Therefore my people have gone into captivity because they have no knowledge."*

24 The apostle Paul proclaims (II Cor. 3:17)

25 *"Where the spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty."*

26 The people in modern America are in captivity and debt and tax bondage because they, like the ancient Romans, (as recorded  
27 by Edward Gibbons in his monumental history The Decline & Fall of Rome):

28 *"...in the enjoyment of prosperity forgot freedom."*

## 29 **2.3 Armor of God**

30 Americans in the enjoyment of prosperity have relied on the *monopolized government school system* to educate our people  
31 and we have gone into captivity. No people, no nation can be free and in debt. In his letter to the Ephesians, (Eph. 6:10) Paul  
32 warned us where *Satan would manifest* his powers, *"in principalities and in corruption in high places."* He goes on to  
33 admonish us to take upon ourselves all the armor of God, not just the Gospel of peace, but also truth, righteousness, faith,  
34 salvation and the *Sword of the word of God*. We know, without doubt, that our nation was founded by God and that the  
35 Declaration of Independence, the Constitution and the Bill of Rights were inspired by God and are therefore a part of His  
36 Sword against "wickedness in high places." *We Sovereigns willingly put on the whole of God's armor and pick up His*  
37 *Sword.*

38 Even as Christ cast the money changers out of the temple, we Christians, must use His Sword to throw the money changers  
39 (the International Banking Cartels and the Federal Reserve System) out of our government and return it to its rightful masters:

1 **We the People.** We must throw off our shackles symbolized by the **Social Security Number (the Mark of the Beast)** and  
2 bind down the corrupt politicians and judges with the chains of our God given Constitution.

3 John the Revelator foresaw fierce looking beasts which represent tyrannical earthly governments controlled by Satan (Rev.  
4 13: 16 & 17)

5 *And he (the Beast) causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in*  
6 *their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he had the mark, or the*  
7 *name of the beast, or the number of his name.*

8 The Social Security number marks us just as certainly as if it was in our right hand or in our foreheads. Please note that the  
9 scripture says "in" and not on. A brand, tattoo or a ring would be considered on our hand not "in" our hand yet when we hold  
10 something it is referred to as being "in" your hand. Who does not have to show their Social Security card and hold it "in"  
11 their hand when applying for a job or to get a bank account? And who does not know their number by heart having it "in"  
12 their "forehead" so they may quote it upon demand by the government.

13 Many people also assume that the number must be 666 and that is not their Social Security Number so they fail to recognize  
14 it as the **"Mark of the Beast."** The scripture says, "and his (the Beast's) number is six hundred three score and six (666)."  
15 The scripture does not even say that the mark that we must carry is 666 for that is the number of HIS name. We will be  
16 marked by a "mark" OR "the name of the beast" OR "the number of his name." The true identifying quality of the "Mark" is  
17 that it must restrict buying and selling or in other words the ability to earn a living (selling our products or our labor) or to  
18 obtain that which we need (buying) in order to survive.

19 Any requirement, therefore, by any government that would Mark us, especially numerically, is so unconditionally repugnant  
20 to those whose names are "written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world." (Rev 13:8) as to  
21 make it impossible to practice their chosen religion. "If any man have ear, let him hear." (Rev. 13:9)

22 We Sovereigns do hereby demand our God given rights to free exercise of religion unalienable by any government. We also  
23 demand that "Government" comply with both the Constitution and the newly adopted **Religious Freedom Restoration Act**  
24 that states in part:

25 *SEC. 2. CONGRESSIONAL FINDINGS AND DECLARATION OF PURPOSES.*

26 *FINDINGS.-The Congress finds*  
27 *the framers of the American Constitution, recognizing free exercise of religion as an unalienable right,*  
28 *secured its protection in the First Amendment to the Constitution;*

29 *SEC. 3. FREE EXERCISE OF RELIGION PROTECTED.*

30 *IN GENERAL. - Government shall not substantially burden a person's exercise of religion even if the*  
31 *burden results from a rule of general applicability, except as provided in subsection (b).*

32 *EXCEPTION. - Government may burden a person's exercise of religion only if it demonstrates that*  
33 *application of the burden to the person furthers a compelling governmental interest; and is the least*  
34 *restrictive means of furthering that compelling governmental interest.*

35 To force any Sovereign Christian to **Mark** themselves by accepting or continuing to accept a "Government" identification  
36 that could limit their ability to "buy" or to "sell" is to force that Christian to take upon themselves the Mark of the Beast. This  
37 would be similar to forcing a Jew to wear a Nazi swastika or to force a Black American to don the robes of the KKK. It would  
38 be slavery of the most heinous form. It would force Sovereign Christians to proselyte for Satan. In essence it would force  
39 Sovereign Christians to support their enemies and prevent and pervert their religious practice, rights, and intentions.

40 This is a Christian Nation that has allowed Satan to manifest his powers because of "corruption in high places." We must  
41 return to our foundations as a nation or risk the retribution from our Almighty God who will not be mocked forever.

42 The Father of our Republic, George Washington, counseled in his Farewell Address to the people of the united States:

1 *"With slight shades of difference, you have the same religion, manners, habits and political*  
2 *principles...of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality*  
3 *are indispensable supports...And let us with caution indulge the supposition that morality can be*  
4 *maintained without religion."*

5 Inscribed on the Liberty Bell is the Old Testament admonition from Leviticus 25:10 to

6 *"...Proclaim liberty throughout all the land unto all the inhabitants thereof."*

7 Clarence Manion was one of America's greatest professors of Constitutional law. He served as the distinguished Dean of the  
8 College of Law of Notre Dame University and was the founder of the Natural Law Institute.

9 Dean Manion in his book ***THE KEY TO PEACE*** states:

10 *"The American Revolution was an official public acknowledgment of the one true pre-existing God, the*  
11 *Creator of all men and source of all the rights of men...our Founding Fathers were building*  
12 *Americanism upon the firm foundation of religious faith."*

13 Dean Manion demonstrates that the one and only possible formula for peace was discovered by the Founding Fathers when  
14 they indited and implemented the American Declaration of Independence. When the formula was established in the American  
15 constitutional system, a miracle resulted.

16 *"The whole atmosphere of the United States seemed charged with a kind of electricity that sparked the*  
17 *human spirit in a manner that was beyond all earthly precedent: ...a bloody Revolution was necessary*  
18 *to establish it. A desperate Civil War was necessary to maintain it. May God grant that the time may*  
19 *never come, but, if it becomes essential, other wars must be fought to preserve and perpetuate this*  
20 *exclusive and priceless heritage, for it is-the Key to Peace."*

## 21 **2.4 This is a Christian Nation**

22 Dean Manion cites as supportive evidence: The United States Supreme Court ruling in the Church of the Holy Trinity vs The  
23 United States. Mr. Justice Brewer delivered the opinion of the court (excerpted as follows):

24 *"No purpose of action against religion can be imputed to any legislation, state or nation, because this*  
25 *is a religious people. This is historically true. From the discovery of this continent to the present hour,*  
26 *there is a single voice making this affirmation.*

27 *"The commission to Christopher Columbus, prior to his sail westward, is from `Ferdinand and Isabella,*  
28 *by the grace of God, King and Queen of Castile,' etc., and recites that `it is hoped that by God's*  
29 *assistance some of the continents and islands in the ocean will be discovered,' etc.*

30 *"The first colonial grant, that was made to Sir Walter Raleigh in 1584 was from `Elizabeth, by the grace*  
31 *of God, of England, France and Ireland, queen, defender of the faith,' etc.; and the grant authorizing*  
32 *him to enact statutes of the government of the proposed colony provided that, -`they be not against the*  
33 *true Christian faith now professed in the Church of England.'*

34 *"The first charter of Virginia, granted by King James I in 1606, after reciting the application of certain*  
35 *parties for a charter, commenced the grant in these words: `We, greatly commending, and graciously*  
36 *accepting of, their Desires for the Furtherance of so noble a Work, which may, by the Providence of*  
37 *Almighty God, hereafter tend to the Glory of his Divine Majesty, in propagating of Christian Religion...'*

38 *"Language of similar import may be found in the subsequent charter of that colony...The celebrated*  
39 *compact made by the Pilgrims in the Mayflower, 1620, recites: `Having undertaken for the Glory of*  
40 *God and Advancement of the Christian Faith, and the Honour of our King and Country, a Voyage to*  
41 *plant the first Colony in the northern Parts of Virginia; Do by these Presents, solemnly and mutually,*  
42 *in the Presence of God and one another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civil Body*  
43 *Politick.'*

1 *"The Declaration of Independence recognizes the presence of the Divine in human affairs in these*  
2 *words: 'We hold these truths to be self evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed*  
3 *by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty, and the pursuit of*  
4 *Happiness.' 'We, therefore, the Representatives of the united States of America, in General Congress,*  
5 *assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the*  
6 *Name and by Authority of the good People of these Colonies, solemnly publish and declare,' etc.: 'And*  
7 *for the support of this Declaration, with a firm reliance on the Protection of Divine Providence, we*  
8 *mutually pledge to each other our Lives, our Fortunes, and our sacred Honor.'*

9 *"If we examine the constitutions of the various states, we find in them a constant recognition of religious*  
10 *obligations. Every constitution of every one of the forty-four states contains language which, either*  
11 *directly or by clear implication, recognizes a profound reverence for religion, and an assumption that*  
12 *its influence in all human affairs is essential to the well-being of the community.*

13 *"It may be only in the familiar requisition that all officers shall take an oath closing with the declaration,*  
14 *'so help me God.'*

15 *"Or by Article 22 of the constitution of Delaware, (1776), which required all officers, besides an oath*  
16 *of allegiance, to make and subscribe the following declaration:*

17 *"I, A. B., do profess faith in God the Father, and in Jesus Christ His only Son, and in the Holy Ghost,*  
18 *one God, blessed for evermore, and I do acknowledge the Holy Scriptures of the Old and New Testament*  
19 *to be given by divine inspiration.*

20 *"Even the Constitution of the United States, which is supposed to have **little touch upon the private life***  
21 ***of the individual**, (Emphasis added ed.)contains in the 1st amendment a declaration common to the*  
22 *constitutions of all the states, as follows: 'Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of*  
23 *religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof,' etc., There is no dissonance in these declarations.*  
24 *There is a universal language pervading them all, having one meaning. They affirm and reaffirm that*  
25 *this is a religious nation. These are not individual sayings, declarations of private persons. They are*  
26 *organic utterances. They speak the voice of the entire people.*

27 *"If we pass beyond these matters to a view of American life, as expressed by its laws, its business, its*  
28 *customs, and its society, we find everywhere a clear recognition of the same truth. Among other matters*  
29 *note the following: The form of oath universally prevailing, concluding with an appeal to the Almighty;*  
30 *the custom of opening sessions of all deliberative bodies and most conventions with prayer; the*  
31 *prefatory words of all wills, 'In the name of God, amen'; the laws respecting the observance of the*  
32 *Sabbath, with the general cessation of all secular business, and the closing of courts, legislatures, and*  
33 *other similar public assemblies on that day; the churches and church organizations which abound in*  
34 *every city, town, and hamlet; the multitude of charitable organizations existing everywhere under*  
35 *Christian auspices; the gigantic missionary associations, with general support, and aiming to establish*  
36 *Christian missions in every quarter of the globe.*

37 *"These, and many other matters which might be noticed, add a volume of unofficial declarations to the*  
38 *mass of organic utterances that this is a Christian nation."*

39 *[U.S. Supreme Court Decision 1892]*

40 We, Sovereigns, hold that the Constitution of the United States is a glorious standard founded in the wisdom of God. The  
41 foundation of this contract of freedom began in America with a little band of pilgrims seeking religious liberty.

42 *"MY PEOPLE ARE DESTROYED FOR LACK OF KNOWLEDGE."*  
43 *[Hosea 4:6]*

44 The godless government school monopoly has silently, relentlessly and deliberately censored our history. These book burning  
45 educators are guilty of the most heinous crimes of priestcraft, having denied us and our children of our birthright. Our  
46 birthright as Americans is the historical knowledge of who we are, where we came from, our inherited rights and

1 responsibilities, and the manifest destiny of this nation under God to be a shining beacon of liberty to all mankind and to  
2 proclaim liberty to all the inhabitants of the world.

3 Let us briefly review our **BIRTHRIGHT HISTORY** by reading from the words of W. J. Cameron who wrote: *Israel Arrives*  
4 *in America.*

5 *"Who were these Pilgrim Fathers? They called themselves 'the seed of Abraham. God's servant, and*  
6 *the children of Jacob, His chosen.' It is so written in their own records. They called themselves 'a vine*  
7 *out of Egypt into this wilderness.' These are their words:*

8 *"Being of Israel, these forefathers of ours proceeded in all their plans after the pattern of Israel. Let us*  
9 *always remember that the planting of America, in the strain that determined our country's character*  
10 *was a spiritual planting. The fathers who planted this nation were Christians. They came here as*  
11 *Christians. They came because they were Christians. They came on a specifically Christian venture.*  
12 *Get it fixed in your mind, beyond the power of any false history to erase, that the planting which*  
13 *determined the genius of this nation was a Church-not a town, not a colony, but a Church. A little*  
14 *Pilgrim Church crossed the sea for the sake of its church life-that is the true origin of our United States.*

15 *"There is a little shallot tossing on the Atlantic near the tip of Cape Cod. And there encompassed by the*  
16 *waters, ere yet a single foot was pressed on Plymouth Rock, our fathers called a solemn convocation in*  
17 *the Mayflower's stuffy cabin and drew up the Mayflower Compact...'In the Name of God. Amen. We*  
18 *whose names are underwritten, having undertaken for the glory of God and the advancement of the*  
19 *Christian faith, a voyage to plant the first colony...do by these Presents, solemnly and mutually in the*  
20 *presence of God combine ourselves into a civil body politic.' **That was the beginning of our politics-***  
21 ***'In the Name of God. Amen.'***

22 *"With increasing accessions from the godly people of the old lands, the number of the colonies grew to*  
23 *four, and federation became desirable. A man of God drew up the Articles of Federation...'Whereas,*  
24 *we all came into these parts of America with one and the same end, namely, to advance the kingdom of*  
25 *our Lord Jesus Christ and to enjoy the liberties of the Gospel in purity we therefore conceive it our*  
26 *bounden duty...that as in nation and religion, so in other respects, we be and continue one.'" **That***  
27 ***declaration made us a People.***

28 *"The British government forgot that the Colonists were British men, and adopted the strange unBritish*  
29 *policy of taxation without representation. Our fathers were 13 Colonies now, as there were thirteen*  
30 *tribes in Israel. And again there came a mighty division in Israel-the Colonies revolted against the rule*  
31 *of England. And determining to do this, they produced another great Covenant Document, The*  
32 *Declaration of Independence, and there once more their allegiance to Almighty God is declared.*

33 *"The Mayflower Compact made us a Civil Body Politic. The Articles of Federation made us a People.*  
34 *The Declaration of Independence made us a Nation. All of them are based on the people's allegiance*  
35 *to God. Not one of them ever has been or ever can be amended.*

36 *"I often wonder," wrote historian J. W. Cameron, "how many Americans see the four great Characters,*  
37 *the four great Attributes of God, in our Declaration of Independence. Let me show them to you in four*  
38 *brief passages. (1) "The separate and equal station by which the laws of Nature and of Nature's God*  
39 *entitle them." There we acknowledge **the God of Nature, Creator of Heaven and Earth.** (2) "All men*  
40 *are endowed by their Creator with certain inalienable rights." There we acknowledge **God the Father***  
41 ***of Mankind.** (3) "We therefore, the representatives of the United States, in General Congress*  
42 *assembled, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions." There we*  
43 *acknowledge **God, the Moral Governor of the Earth,** beneath whose awful hand we hold dominion*  
44 *over the land and the people. (4) "And for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on the*  
45 *protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our lives, our fortunes, and our*  
46 *sacred honor." There we fervently acknowledge **God, the Providential Guide, and Protector, and***  
47 ***Savior of Peoples.** There, my friends, in the Compact, the Articles, and the Declaration, is the three-*  
48 *fold cord of solemn obligation which binds us to the Law of God. Our Patriotism and our Religion grow*  
49 *on the same stem.*

1 Out of our own mouths are we judged.

## 2 **2.5 Multiple Church or Fellowship Memberships**

### 3 MULTIPLE CHURCH or FELLOWSHIP MEMBERSHIPS

4 *"And Jesus said unto him, Forbid him not; for he that is not against us is for us."*  
5 *[Luke 9:50]*

6 Every disciple or minister of the Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is encouraged to be a member in good standing  
7 of another denomination of his own subjective choice. We believe that dual membership should cause no conflict. The Apostle  
8 Paul in I Corinthians, chapter 12, spoke of the whole body of Christ being diverse and having different duties. The First  
9 Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty was formed to be a specific part of His body. Paul also says in I Cor. 12:5 that,  
10 **"...there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord."** And in 12:21 that the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have  
11 no need of thee. Paul continues in 12:28 to say that people who have the spiritual gift of "governments" are a part of the body  
12 of Christ. Our Nation needs the spiritual "words of knowledge" given by the sword of God and defended by God's shield-  
13 Faith in Christ-if we are ever to be free of the Beast" that secretly runs our government.

14 We submit for your consideration the following predicates of our belief. In the words of George Washington, "...The name  
15 of American, which belongs to you in your national capacity must always exalt the just pride of patriotism, more than any  
16 appellation derived from local discriminations. With slight shades of difference, you have the same religion, manners, habits  
17 and political principles ..."

18 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is organized to enhance the ability of every Christian to fulfill his  
19 responsibility to "proclaim liberty throughout the land."

20 Christ taught (Matthew 7:20) "Wherefore by their fruits ye know them." He also declared in John 10:16, "And other sheep I  
21 have which are not of this fold: ...and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold and one shepherd." The last portion  
22 of that scripture regarding one fold certainly has not been accomplished yet by any Christian sect on earth and thus seems to  
23 suggest that it would behoove us all to judge each other with charity towards all.

## 24 **2.6 Organization of the Fellowship**

### 25 **2.6.1 PRESIDING MINISTRY**

26 A Presiding Sovereign stands as our chief executive minister. He may appoint with advice and consent of the Quorum of 13  
27 Stripes, assistant ministers as counselors or subordinate executives such as Minister of Law, Music, Communication,  
28 Finance, Records, and etc.

### 29 **2.6.2 QUORUM OF 13 STRIPES**

30 A Quorum of 13 Stripes has been established to share executive responsibility with the Presiding Sovereign, to govern over  
31 the affairs of the Christian Fellowship and to serve as judges in the Christian Fellowship.

### 32 **2.6.3 CONSTELLATION OF STARS**

33 A Constellation of Stars has been established under the Quorum of Thirteen Stripes having prime responsibility to proclaim  
34 and establish the gospel of liberty and sovereignty throughout the 50 states.

### 35 **2.6.4 HOUSE OF SOVEREIGN REPRESENTATIVES**

36 A House of Sovereign Representatives under the direction of the Constellation of Stars has been established to provide,  
37 maintain and supervise local parish, mission, family, individual and/or other needed assemblies of our people.

## 1 **2.6.5 SOVEREIGN MINISTERS**

2 All applicants found worthy and accepted for membership will be symbolically coronated as Sovereign Ministers invested  
3 with power, rights, privilege, authority and responsibility to proclaim, enhance, and minister in the holy cause of liberty and  
4 sovereignty.

5 **Coronated Sovereigns** will spiritually bear a crown with 13 points as symbolic reminders of the 13 covenanted tribes of  
6 ancient Israel and the 13 colonies which threw off the shackles of an unjust kingdom in order to establish a more perfect  
7 union with and under the dominion and protection of "our Lord." Written on the crown are the words of Thomas Jefferson  
8 **"REBELLION TO TYRANNY IS OBEDIENCE TO GOD."**

9 Our faithful prayer is that God may bless all Sovereign Ministers in the enjoyment and fulfillment of their duty as servants  
10 under and to the ETERNAL SOVEREIGN of us all, our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ.

## 11 **2.6.6 SOVEREIGN AMBASSADORS**

12 Sovereign Ambassadors will be assigned by the Constellation of Stars to serve under the Sovereign Minister of Finance to  
13 act in the capacity of missionaries with authority to recruit and enroll new members.

14 Membership in The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is voluntary, but by invitation only. Sovereign Ministers  
15 will all receive a signed certificate of coronation and a membership packet.

16 Membership may be terminated upon just cause as determined by constituted authority within the Christian Fellowship. This  
17 ex-communication may be appealed to the Quorum of Stripes.

18 Members in good standing are required to contribute a designated minimum free will offering on at least a yearly basis. Ex-  
19 communication of the member by the Christian Fellowship will entitle the contributor to a pro-rated refund of this yearly free  
20 will offering from the designated date of the termination of his membership.

## 21 **2.6.7 HYMNAL**

22 In Job 38:1,3 & 7 is recorded, "Then the Lord answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said...where wast thee when I laid the  
23 foundation of the earth?...When the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for joy?"

24 Psalm 47:6 & 7 declares, "Sing praises to God, sing praises: Sing praises unto our king, sing praises. For God is the King of  
25 all the earth: Sing praises with understanding."

26 Accordingly, a hymnal has been prepared under the direction of the Minister of Music to provide our membership with  
27 musical selections that will inspire, uplift, sustain, and refresh our souls that we may more powerfully engage ourselves in  
28 the holy cause of liberty and shout hosannas of thanksgiving and praise to our acknowledged Sovereign who is Christ the  
29 Lord... Amen & Amen.

## 30 **2.7 MEETINGS**

31 *"For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them."*  
32 *[Matthew 18:21]*

33 Meetings will be conducted by this Christian Fellowship in manners deemed expedient by leadership. These meetings may  
34 **include** but are not limited to assemblies and congregations of sovereigns utilizing the rights of freemen to peacefully  
35 assemble and enjoy Rights of Speech & Press & Worship & Petition in public or in private. Methods of meetings may include  
36 traditional cottage gatherings to grand conventions attended in person or by utilizing modern technology to facilitate  
37 gatherings via telephone, radio, televisions, computers, and/or video-teleconferencing.

### 3 Chapter 3: Testaments Of Truth

#### 3.1 Thirteen testaments in honor of the original thirteen united States

"... where the spirit of the Lord is, there is liberty'." II Cor. 3:17

1. **We Recognize as Truth** that Jesus Christ is the "Supreme Judge" of this Nation and that our freedom and unalienable rights are granted by Him, not by governments; we are therefore authorized by Him to be Sovereigns. (Rev. 1:6 and 5:10)
2. **We Recognize as Truth:** The Bible, all teachings of Jesus Christ, The Ten Commandments, The Declaration of Independence, The Constitution of the United States, The Bill of Rights and George Washington's Farewell Address.
3. **We Recognize as Truth** that our original Constitutional Government was instituted by God for the benefit of man. That it was created by "We the People" and their agents, the Sovereign States, by a contract known as The Constitution of the United States of America.
4. **We Recognize as Truth** that the federal government is only a contracted agent of the Sovereign States and that if any branch of the federal government violates that contract the Sovereign States, acting in unison, severally or individually, have the duty to redress that violation through State sponsored legislation and enforced action.
5. **We Recognize as Truth** that if the Sovereign States fail to redress federal usurpation of power that "We the People" have the "Duty." according to the Declaration of Independence, and the "rights" and "powers," according to the 9th and 10th Amendments to act in unison, severally or as individuals "to throw off that Government law by law (and peacefully if possible) and to provide new Guards for our future security.
6. **We Recognize as Truth** that any form of *numerical identification or* NAME CHANGE, such as the Social Security Identification Number and/or a NEW SATANIC NAME, of individual Sovereigns or their children is a direct violation of the First, Fourth, Fifth, Ninth, Tenth, and Thirteenth Amendments to the Constitution and is, either a precursor to or in actuality, the prophesied numerical satanic "*Mark of the Beast*" and we reject them on both legal and religious grounds.
7. **We Recognize as Truth** that parents are responsible for their children and for their moral standards, education and religious beliefs and that the proper role of parenthood and its Biblically sanctioned duties and restrictions are found within the Holy Bible and that governmental interference with parental authority is in violation of the First Amendment.
8. **We Recognize as Truth** that no government has the right to force adults or children (under the direction of their parents) into any form of involuntary servitude, except as punishment for a crime whereof the party shall have been duly convicted by an *informed jury*. That involuntary servitude includes, but is not limited to, the forced or coerced indoctrination or teaching of any kind; and therefore, all "education" must be totally voluntary.
9. **We Recognize as Truth** that the First Amendment strictly forbids the making of any law that would prohibit the free exercise of religion and that any government agency promoting the belief that humanity has no Creator not only infringes on the free exercise of religion but, also undermines the very basis of our Republic which was founded upon unalienable rights given us by our Creator. ***The Eternal Truth is: If we have no Creator we have no rights.***
10. **We Recognize as Truth** that if we, as individuals, knowingly obey any law that helps to limit our God given Unalienable rights and enslave us, our posterity or any people, that we are guilty of Crimes against Humanity, as defined by the International Military Tribunal at Nuremberg, "the true test...is not the existence of the order but whether moral choice in executing it) 'was in fact possible.'" We also believe, as stated by Benjamin Franklin, "They that can give up essential liberty to obtain a little temporary safety deserve neither liberty nor safety." We, therefore, cannot tolerate even the slightest loss of our sovereignty, rights, or freedom and in the words of Thomas Jefferson, "find nothing so dreadful as voluntary slavery."
11. **We Recognize as Truth** that all men are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights. They include: Life, Liberty, and the pursuit of Happiness; and that, above all law is the eternal difference between right and wrong; and that, we are personally responsible for our own actions. Ignorance is not a defense against the decree of this Higher Law but knowledge of this Higher Law more fully condemns the educated.
12. **We Recognize as Truth** that the War Powers Act, Presidential Executive Orders Article I and IV Tribunals, the General Welfare Clause and the Commerce Clause of the Constitution have been blatantly misconstrued and abused by all three branches of the federal government so that they may intentionally abrogate Constitutional limits in order to advance their ever growing tyrannical power.

1 13. ***We Recognize as Truth*** that freedom is not merely the right to choose, but that, ***freedom is the result of right***  
2 ***choices***; that freedom is not free and that "We the People" must be eternally valiant, vigilant and perform  
3 "Exploits" (Dan. 11:32) if we are to regain our freedoms anti-constitutionally pillaged and plundered by the United  
4 States federal government and its agents and assignees including but not limited to: The New World Order, United  
5 Nations, Federal Reserve, IRS, SSA, OSHA, EPA, BATF, DEA, NEA and BLM; and/or also confiscated,  
6 abandoned and/or forfeited by our State governments.

## 4 Chapter 4: Origins of the Fellowship

ORIGINS of The FIRST CHRISTIAN FELLOWSHIP of ETERNAL SOVEREIGNTY  
By Daniel McGavin Hansen, Sovereign

### 4.1 Miraculous Resurrection

In the vast stretches of Nevada's deserts and mountains where droughts may last weeks, months or years at a time, the earth can turn dull in color and appear desolate and void of life. The land can look tortured as it is often scorched and baked by unrelenting barrages from the elements. But, baptized by moisture from heaven to mix with the sun the seeds of the earth spring forth with treasures of life that have lain dormant or hidden awaiting a miraculous resurrection. Billions of flowers blossom in splendor to splash the mountains and valleys with colors to rival and even, if possible, to exceed the rainbow with multiple hues and seemingly unending varieties of colors: reds and pinks, blues and lavenders, whites, greens, yellows, oranges and rusts to please the heart, gladden the eye, and tantalize the senses.

The desert flowers are like Lazarus of Biblical acclaim (St. John 11), apparently dead in the tomb but coming forth to new life at the beckoning of the Master of Life, Jesus the Christ. The Origin of the flowers was not the reemergence of Life at the time of rain. Generations of the cycle of life provided an undeniable chain of continuity that resurrected and redisplayed the history of the earth into spectacularly visible current events.

Similarly, The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is not an isolated or newly discovered religion. Our roots go deep into the history and firmament of the earth. Keeping the indomitable spirit of Freedom and Sovereignty alive have been brief periods of thunder and lightning and war that have baptized the earth with the purest blood of the generations of mankind to nurture the roots of liberty that they may endure generations of neglect, ingratitude and tyranny to reemerge at the behest of Freemen inspired by the gospel of Christ to reestablish their dominance over the weeds of ignorance, fear, cupidity, treachery, moral apathy and slavish devotion to the false gods of comfort and security.

Ponder, Dear Reader, the words of Lord Acton:

*"It was from America that the plain ideas that men ought to mind their own business, and that the nation is responsible for the acts of State - ideas long locked in the breasts of solitary thinkers and hidden among Latin folios, burst forth like a conqueror upon the world they were destined to transform, under the title of the Rights of Man."*

### 4.2 Alexander Hamilton's Christian Constitutional Society

Trace our origin to Alexander Hamilton who declared in 1802:

*"In my opinion, the present constitution is the standard to which we are to cling. Under its banner bona fide must we combat our political foes, rejecting all changes but through the channel itself provided for amendments. By these general views of the subject have my reflections been guided."*

*"I now offer you the outline of the plan they have suggested. Let an association be formed to be denominated 'The Christian Constitutional Society,' its object to be first: The support of the Christian religion. second: The support of the United States"*

CONSIDER:

A. After each of the delegates had signed the Declaration of Independence Samuel Adams declared:

*"We have this day restored the Sovereign to Whom all men ought to be obedient. He reigns in heaven and from the rising to the setting of the sun, let His kingdom come."*

B. Jonathan Turnbull a Crown-appointed Governor wrote back to England:

*"If you ask an American, who is his master? He will tell you he has none, nor any governor but Jesus Christ."*

1 C. The Committees of Correspondence sounded the cry across the Colonies:

2 *"NO King but KING JESUS"*

3 D. The men of Marlborough, Massachusetts unanimously declared in 1773:

4 *"Death is more eligible than slavery, a free-born people are not required by the religion of Jesus Christ to*  
5 *submit to tyranny, but may make use of such power as God has given them to recover and support their laws*  
6 *and liberties..."*

7 These men of Marlborough implored,

8 *"the Ruler above the skies, that He would make bare His arm in defense of His Church and people, and*  
9 *let Israel go."*

10 What is the origin of our Sovereign Religion?

11 James Madison wrote in 1785:

12 *"Religion [is] the basis and Foundation of Government."*

13 Mr. Meacham of the House Committee on the Judiciary reported to the Congress of the United States of America March  
14 27, 1854:

15 *"Down to the Revolution. ...It was deemed peculiarly proper that the RELIGION of LIBERTY should be*  
16 *upheld by a free people."*

### 17 **4.3 Witnesses of America's Christian history**

18 In the mouths of two or more Witnesses shall all things be established. II Cor. 13 vs I.

19 1. Witness 1: \*PATRICK HENRY BOLDLY DECLARED\*

20 *"It cannot be emphasized too strongly or too often that this great nation was founded, not by religionists,*  
21 *but by Christians; not on religions, but on the Gospel of Jesus Christ. For this very reason peoples of*  
22 *other faiths have been afforded asylum, prosperity, and freedom of worship here."*

23 2. Witness 2: \*CHRISTOCRAT\*

24 Benjamin Rush was a signer of the Declaration of Independence, and a principle promoter of the American Sunday School  
25 Union. He also served as the Surgeon General of the Continental Army, helped to write the Pennsylvania Constitution and  
26 was the treasurer of the U.S. Mint. In 1798, after the adoption of the Constitution, Benjamin Rush declared:

27 *"The only foundation for...a republic is to be laid in Religion. Without this there can be no virtue there*  
28 *can be no liberty, and liberty is the object and life of all republican governments."*

29 Benjamin Rush described himself:

30 *"I have alternately been called an Aristocrat and a Democrat. I am neither. I am a **Christocrat.**"*

31 3. Witness 3: \*CHRISTIAN SOLDIER\*

32 Lewis Cass was an American soldier, lawyer, politician and diplomat. After serving in the War of 1812, he became the  
33 Governor-General of the Territory of Michigan, where he made treaties with the Indians, organized townships and built roads.  
34 He was a United States Senator, Secretary of State under President James Buchanan and the Democratic Candidate for the  
35 Presidency in 1848. Lewis Cass stated:

1 *"Independent of its connection with human destiny hereafter, the fate of republican government is*  
2 *indissolubly bound up with the fate of the Christian religion, and a people who reject its holy faith will*  
3 *find themselves the slaves of their own evil passions and of arbitrary power."*

4 4. Witness 4: \*COMMUNIST SPY\*

5 (Jay David) Whittaker Chambers was an American journalist who had formerly been a Communist agent, but recanted and  
6 defected to the West. He stated:

7 *"Freedom is a need of the soul, and nothing else. It is in striving toward God that the soul strives*  
8 *continually after a condition of freedom. God alone is the inciter and guarantor of freedom. He is the*  
9 *only guarantor. External freedom is only an aspect of interior freedom. Political freedom, as the*  
10 *Western world has known it, is only a political reading of the Bible. Religion and freedom are*  
11 *indivisible. Without freedom the soul dies. Without the soul there is no justification for freedom."*

12 5. Witness 5: \*JOURNALISTIC REPORT\*

13 According to North American Review 1867:

14 *"The American government and the Constitution is the most precious possession which the world holds,*  
15 *or which the future can inherit. This is true-true because the American system is the political expression*  
16 *of Christian ideas."*

17 6. Witness 6: \*JUDICIAL TESTIMONY\*

18 Samuel Chase was appointed a Justice on the United States Supreme Court by George Washington, a signer of the  
19 Declaration of Independence and later served as the Chief Justice of the State of Maryland. In the case of Runkel v.  
20 Vinemiller, 1799, Justice Chase gave the courts opinion:

21 *"Religion is of general and public concern, and on its support depend, in great measure, the peace and*  
22 *good order of government, the safety and happiness of the people. By our form of government, the*  
23 *Christian religion is the established religion; and all sects and denominations of Christians are placed*  
24 *upon the same equal footing, and are equally entitled to protection in their religious liberty."*

25 7. Witness 7: \*WEBSTER'S DICTIONARY\*

26 Noah Webster, author of our American dictionary, defines our origin:

27 *"Lastly, our ancestors established their system of government on morality and religious sentiment.*  
28 *Moral habits, they believed, cannot safely be trusted on any other foundation than religious principle,*  
29 *nor any government be secure which is not supported by moral habits."*

30 8. Witness 8: \*PRESIDENTIAL PRONOUNCEMENT\*

31 James Madison recorded the debates of the Constitutional Convention and addressed the Convention himself more than 161  
32 times. He is revered as the "Chief Architect of the Constitution." He was a member of the first United States Congress;  
33 authored the *Bill of Rights*; served as U.S. Secretary of State in President Jefferson's cabinet facilitating the Louisiana  
34 Purchase of 1803; served as 4th President of the United States from 1809-1817. Madison wrote:

35 *"We have staked the whole future of American civilization, not upon the power of government, far from*  
36 *it. We have staked the future of all our political institutions upon the capacity of mankind for self*  
37 *government; upon the capacity of each and all of us to govern ourselves, to control ourselves, to sustain*  
38 *ourselves according to the Ten Commandments of God."*

39 9. Witness 9: \*HISTORIAN'S ASSESSMENT\*

1 Alexis de Tocqueville was a famous French statesman, historian and social philosopher. His two-part work, which was  
2 published in 1835 and 1840, was entitled *Democracy in America*. He observed:

3 *"Upon my arrival in the United States the religious aspect of the country was the first thing that struck*  
4 *my attention; and the longer I stayed here, the more I perceived the great political consequences*  
5 *resulting from this new state of things.*

6 *"In France I had almost always seen the spirit of religion and the spirit of freedom marching in opposite*  
7 *directions, But in America I found they were intimately united and that they reigned in common over*  
8 *the same country."*

9 10. Witness 10: \*BIBLICAL REVELATION\*

10 Revelation 12:7-17:

11 *And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought*  
12 *and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great*  
13 *dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world; he*  
14 *was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in*  
15 *heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of His Christ:*  
16 *for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And*  
17 *they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not*  
18 *their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabters*  
19 *of the earth and of the sea! For the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth*  
20 *that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted*  
21 *the woman which brought forth the man child, And to the woman was given two wings of a great eagle,*  
22 *that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and*  
23 *half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the*  
24 *woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and*  
25 *the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth, **And***  
26 ***the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which***  
27 ***keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ...***

28 And so we see, dear reader, the hand of God in the history of man and the Religion of Eternal Sovereignty. The current  
29 blossom of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is rooted in a blood nourished epic that is indeed as the  
30 great I AM, without beginning or end; claiming origin in one eternal round of conflict with the forces of evil in a war of will  
31 and majesty that grants meaning and purpose to the otherwise mundane and vain existence of man; to provide him the exalting,  
32 ennobling and challenging contests inherited by man from the throne of God. Long Live Freedom and Honor for such are the  
33 fruits and origins of the religion of Eternal Sovereignty.

## 5 Chapter 5: Invitation to Sovereignty

### Invitation to Sovereignty

#### 5.1 An Invitation to devout Christian patriots

This letter is an open invitation from the Presiding Sovereign of the Fellowship to all Christians or those who would like to be Christians who are interested in clothing themselves in the armour of God before going forth to battle against the Beast and his agents.

The First Christian Fellowship Of Eternal Sovereignty is searching for devout *Christian patriots* to not only join the cause of freedom but to act as leaders and evangelists. We, the founders of the Christian Fellowship, have felt for some time that the patriot movement has forgotten to put Jesus Christ first and foremost as our King and have all too often relied on the arm of flesh in our war against the Beast. King David praying in Psalm 86:9 says: "*All nations whom Thou hast made shall come and worship before Thee, O Lord; and shall glorify Thy name.*" Remember: Whenever Israel ceased to worship God as a NATION they were punished as a nation. The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty was founded for the purpose of helping the members of all Christian denominations, (we do not ask nor want you to quit your current denomination) and also those patriots that do not currently belong to a specific Christian sect to put on the armour of Christ before going into battle, because we cannot have any real success without recognizing to Whom the victories rightfully belong. (*Isaiah 45:23 also Romans 14:11\**)

Christ inspired our Founding Fathers to write the *Declaration of Independence*, the *Constitution* and the *Bill of Rights* so that We the People in these last days could use them as weapons against the Beast and his agents. We can and must use all of the arrows provided us in the quiver of the *Constitution*, the *Declaration of Independence* and the *Bill of Rights* including the glorious First Amendment to regain our position as living souls (Genesis 2:7\*) that were created equal (sovereigns see *Revelation 1:5,6; Psalm 82 and John 10:34\**) under *Jesus Christ our King*. The King of kings and Lord of lords, Christ, working through the Founding Fathers, has given us the weapons, but; they have been buried under the thick dust of forgetfulness and the whispering flatteries of Satan. We must dig up these weapons that have been so long buried by the government schools, judges, lawyers, and agents of the Beast and with the Holy Spirit to guide us, polish them in the sunlight of truth so that we may take back our God given right and duty to be free and accountable for our own actions (*Romans 14:12\**). We need not use them to shed blood (*Revelation 13:10\**) because these weapons are the law of this land and they support our positions. The Supreme Court has continuously ruled in our favor. Even when they ruled against prayer in the government schools, it was in truth a victory for us; for it is wrong to be hypocritical and be led in prayer by a school system that worships Satan. We must destroy the government school system as it now exists before it destroys all of the young minds of America with its feculent pollutions. (*Daniel 11:31\**)

In Daniel 11:32 the prophet in prophesying of the last days and of the Beast says: "And such as do wickedly against the covenant shall he corrupt by flatteries: but the people that do know their God shall be strong, and do exploits."

Webster's Dictionary defines exploit:

*(eks-ploit) n. A deed or act, especially one marked by heroism or daring.*

Biblical prophesies often times have many meanings within a single verse and we do not claim to know all their meanings but when we read this in Daniel we cannot help but feel that this is at least one of its meanings:

The *Constitution* is a covenant, given us by God, that we may be a free people and those that have done wickedly against this covenant have been led away by the flatteries of the government schools and the controlled news media and other agents of the Beast. Therefore, "*We the People*" that do know our God must now be strong and do **EXPLOITS**.

One of our main objectives is to educate Americans about the Social Security number and its enforcement arm, the IRS. The Social Security number is either the actual Mark of the Beast or the precursor to it (*Revelation 13:1 7,8,16 & 17\**). Taking steps to remove this Mark from both the card we carry in our hand and from our thoughts (*Rev. 13:16* \*says in not on our foreheads) is vital to our Christianity. How can we be Christians if we are afraid to remove Satan's tracking symbol. This act of bravery alone is an exploit for Christ.

1 The penalties for taking upon oneself this Mark of the Beast are catastrophic for the Christian believer as our soul will be  
2 eternally locked in hell, removing us eternally from the presence of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. It is the absolute  
3 antithesis of our beliefs. We literally cannot be practicing Christians and carry the Mark of the Beast. (*Rev. 20 \**)

4 If you want to remove yourself from the Beast's system, we are sorry to say that we discovered for ourselves that it is a long  
5 and complicated process if you wish to escape the legal entanglements of Satan's web and by doing so put additional strain  
6 upon the Beast's limited resources. Knowledge about the system is vital and support by Christians who believe as you do is  
7 essential.

8 I have not given the Beast of my wages in almost two decades because **I could not, in all good conscience be a true**  
9 **Christian**, and give of my firstfruits to Satan for in Proverbs 3:9 it says, "*Honour the Lord with thy substance, and with the*  
10 *firstfruits of all thine increase:*" The compelled voluntary Social Security tax and/or the coerced voluntary compliance of the  
11 Income tax are withheld from the average laborer's wages before he can even give God the honour He demands. Satan and  
12 his agents, therefore, have stolen, through lies, deception, threats and "*flatteries*", the firstfruits of our "*increase*" and in doing  
13 so have stripped us of our voluntary firstfruits gift to Christ. To give anything less than our firstfruits to our Creator is to give  
14 Him of the dregs of our wages. To put him second, beneath the federal government, or any government is to proclaim to the  
15 world that we fear man more than God and to that condition I say, "Forbid it Almighty God." I know not what course others  
16 may take but as for me, give me liberty or give me death.

17 "*No man can serve two masters:*" Matthew 6:24\*.

18 Ask yourself: Where do my firstfruits go? What programs am I helping to support with what should rightly go to God? Are  
19 they righteous? Am I helping to perpetuate and advance good or evil?

20 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is a religious organization that promotes efforts to help people regain  
21 their firstfruits and God given sovereignty. We are also looking to advance our learning and associations with other groups  
22 or individuals that are in the forefront of this glorious battle. We believe that The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal  
23 Sovereignty gives us Christian warriors an advantage absent from all other programs, namely Jesus Christ. With appeals to  
24 Christ's help we plan to utilize the First Amendment: (Congress shall make no law respecting the establishment of religion,  
25 or prohibiting the free exercise thereof...) and the Religious Freedom Restoration Act of 1993. This is, however, only one  
26 facet of the purposes of this Christian Fellowship which are stated in the Testaments of Sovereignty.

## 27 **5.2 Know your God and do Exploits**

28 We now ask for your active help because the only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men and women to do  
29 nothing. We cannot expect others to pick up and bear the weight of the cross alone to save our freedom. May our Heavenly  
30 Father help us all be heroic and pick up the Covenant of the Cross and the *Constitution* and march on to do "**exploits**" for  
31 **the glory of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, Amen.**

32 "*Stand fast therefore in the liberty wherewith Christ hath made us free, and be not entangled again with*  
33 *the yoke of bondage.*"  
34 [*Galatians 5:1* ]

## 35 **5.3 Scripture references**

36 *Gen. 2:7* And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the  
37 *breath of life; and man became a living soul.*

38 *1 Cor. 15:45* And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made  
39 a quickening spirit.

40 *Isa. 45:23* I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not  
41 return, That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear.

42 *24* Surely, shall one say, in the LORD have I righteousness and strength: even to him shall men come;  
43 and all that are incensed against him shall be ashamed.

44 *25* In the LORD shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory.

1 **Rom. 14:11** For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue  
2 shall confess to God.

3 **John. 10:34** Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods?

4 **Rev. 1:5** And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the  
5 prince of the kings of the earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood,  
6 **6** And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father; to him be glory and dominion for ever  
7 and ever. Amen.

8 **Ps. 82:1** God standeth in the congregation of the mighty; he judgeth among the gods.  
9 **2** How long will ye judge unjustly, and accept the persons of the wicked? Selah.  
10 **3** Defend the poor and fatherless: do justice to the afflicted and needy.  
11 **4** Deliver the poor and needy: rid them out of the hand of the wicked.  
12 **5** They know not, neither will they understand; they walk on in darkness: all the foundations of the  
13 earth are out of course.  
14 **6** I have said, Ye are gods; and all of you are children of the most High.  
15 **7** But ye shall die like men, and fall like one of the princes.  
16 **8** Arise, O God, judge the earth: for thou shalt inherit all nations.

17 **Rom. 14:12** So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.

18 **Rev. 13:10** He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be  
19 killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.

20 **Dan. 11:31** And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall  
21 take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate.

22 **Rev. 13:6** And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his  
23 tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.  
24 **7** And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given  
25 him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.  
26 **8** And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life  
27 of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world.  
28 **9** If any man have an ear, let him hear.  
29 **10** He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed  
30 with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints.  
31 **11** And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he  
32 spake as a dragon.  
33 **12** And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which  
34 dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed.  
35 **13** And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the  
36 sight of men,  
37 **14** And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to  
38 do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to  
39 the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live.  
40 **15** And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both  
41 speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed.  
42 **16** And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their  
43 right hand, or in their foreheads:  
44 **17** And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the  
45 number of his name.  
46 **18** Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the  
47 number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.

48 **Rev. 20:1** And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a  
49 great chain in his hand.

1 *2 And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a*  
2 *thousand years,*

3 *3 And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should*  
4 *deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be*  
5 *loosed a little season.*

6 *4 And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls*  
7 *of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not*  
8 *worshipped the beast, neither his image, **neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in***  
9 ***their hands**; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.*

10 *5 But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first*  
11 *resurrection.*

12 *6 Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no*  
13 *power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.*

14 *7 And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,*

15 *8 And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog,*  
16 *to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.*

17 *9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the*  
18 *beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.*

19 *10 And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and*  
20 *the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.*

21 *11 And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven*  
22 *fled away; and there was found no place for them.*

23 *12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another*  
24 *book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were*  
25 *written in the books, according to their works.*

26 *13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which*  
27 *were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.*

28 *14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.*

29 *15 And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.*

30 *Matt. 6:24 No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he*  
31 *will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.*

## 32 **5.4 Application for membership**

33 Application for membership in The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

34 Full name with no abbreviations (print or type): \_\_\_\_\_

35 Birth or nativity date: \_\_\_\_\_

36 Currently a Citizen of the \_\_\_\_\_ Republic (State)

37 Address where you receive mail, \_\_\_\_\_

38 Do you believe in Jesus Christ? Yes \_\_\_\_\_ No \_\_\_\_\_

39 Have you accepted Jesus Christ as your Saviour? Yes \_\_\_\_\_ No \_\_\_\_\_

40 Are you currently, or have you in the past been employed by any State Government or Federal Government? Yes \_\_\_\_\_

41 No \_\_\_\_\_ If yes, please explain: \_\_\_\_\_

42 You need not quit your current denomination to join with us in our battle for liberty. Membership in The First Christian  
43 Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is open to all Christians of all sects and sovereign Americans who are willing to sign the  
44 following pledges, agreement of beliefs, and explanations:

45 We hold these truths to be self evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed with sovereign power over the  
46 United States of America's Governments by their Creator.

47 I pledge allegiance to Jesus Christ the recognized God of this Republic called the United States of America. I further pledge  
48 my life, my fortune, and my sacred honor to the holy cause of liberty and individual sovereignty, under God, in sacred  
49 remembrance of our Lord Jesus Christ, the valiant founders of our Republic, and in behalf of ourselves and our posterity.

1 I pledge that I am not an employee nor agent of the "Beast" or his agents of the Internal Revenue Service or the Social Security  
2 Administration or any other Federal Agency.

3 I pledge in the name of God, Jesus Christ, that if I am accepted for any position, including membership, within The First  
4 Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty that I will be an ordained Minister and that all dealings within the Christian  
5 Fellowship and/or with other members or officers are to be held sacrosanct.

6 I pledge in the name of God, Jesus Christ, that I am not joining The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty in order  
7 to gather information about The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty or its members to give to any Governmental  
8 agency or court or that I may use that information to in any way hinder the divinely inspired goals of The First Christian  
9 Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty.

10 I understand that it cost nothing to claim membership in The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty. If you wish  
11 to be a "Sovereign in Good Standing" with a fellowship certificate, and a letter stating that you are a "Sovereign in Good  
12 Standing" and to be placed upon the Fellowship's official records so that if we are contacted by a government agency we may  
13 inform them, upon your written request, that you are a member of our Fellowship; please send a \$100.00 minimum yearly  
14 love offering. Children under eighteen need not donate. Any additional donations are welcome and will be used for the  
15 Fellowship's stated goals.

16 "Sovereigns in Good Standing" will also receive forms stating your religious reasons for removing yourself from the Social  
17 Security administration's voluntary "Mark of the Beast" numbering system. You may also request other materials and personal  
18 assistance in your Battles with the Beast. These materials will be designed for your personal battles to free yourself from the  
19 evils of withholding taxes and the Satan's tithing the income tax.

20 Membership of "Sovereigns in Good Standing" does not guarantee the Social Security System nor the IRS will exempt you  
21 nor allow you to be free of the Social Security Identification Number, as we cannot guarantee the actions of governmental  
22 agencies that often disregard law. We do guarantee that you can demand your freedom and sovereignty under God and work  
23 toward that goal as a "Sovereign in Good Standing" in fellowship with others who also fight against the "Beast" with the aid  
24 of Jesus Christ and belief in His ultimate victory.

25 I have read the above pledges, beliefs and explanations and have studied the Fellowship's Testaments of Truth and do hereby  
26 pledge to the same. I do hereby apply for membership as a "Sovereign in Good Standing" of ***The First Christian Fellowship***  
27 ***of Eternal Sovereignty.***

28 Signed: \_\_\_\_\_ Date: \_\_\_\_\_

29 Witnessed: \_\_\_\_\_ Date : \_\_\_\_\_

30 Enclosed is my free will offering of \_\_\_\_\_

## 6 Chapter 6: Declaration of Sovereignty

### The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty Declaration of Sovereignty

I, the undersigned, in order to free myself from the satanic influence and keep myself from being marked in any way that may be construed by me to have any relation to the satanic "Mark of the Beast", do hereby join The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty. I do this for my Creator and in recognition of His will above all, that I may become enabled to regain my freedoms for myself, my family, my children, my posterity: and for my Nation that was created by the divine intervention of God and nature's God. I also pledge my Life, my Fortune and my sacred Honor to the cause of freedom and righteousness in this year of our Lord.

The beliefs of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty are founded upon the Holy Scriptures, All the teachings of Jesus Christ, The Ten Commandments; The God given *Declaration of Independence*, The *Constitution of the United States of America*, The *Bill of Rights*, And all other God given Amendments to our Glorious *Constitution*. We pledge allegiance to the flag of the United States of America and to the Republic for which it stands, one nation under the direction of Divine Providence as created and composed of the individual sovereign States. We do this as Sovereigns ourselves, Kings or Queens all, with God given unalienable rights, from which this government receives its privilege to govern only within Constitutional contractual limitations.

I recognize that our United States of America's *Constitution* was founded upon the distrust of government by men and that the division of powers is one manifestation of that distrust; believing that each branch of government would jealously guard its power thereby limiting government. I also recognize that our Founding Fathers warned us, Americans, that we must be eternally vigilant against government usurpation of power; that we must jealously guard our Sovereign rights and freedoms. We Sovereigns do hereby jealously reclaim our rights and powers; and pledge to guard and defend them at all costs, from this day forward and forever.

I abhor and denounce, as satanic, any and all numbers, tattoos, electronic identification, my name spelled in all CAPITAL LETTERS and not with correct capital and lower case letters, or other devices compelled, forced, or coerced by any government or its agents upon Sovereign individuals or private groups to thus label, track, brand, mark or identify Sovereigns or non-governmental associations. I claim my religious freedom to be free of such markings as they are a direct "infringement" by government upon such religious freedom. The Mark of the Beast, as found in the book of Revelation, is intended to prevent mankind from working, buying, selling, trading, or engaging in commerce without paying a slaves share to the Beast's plan of socialism. Such a payment and marking is in direct opposition to our beloved Savior's will. We cannot have religious freedom and be marked nor identified by any such numbers or name changes that include the Social Security Identification Number and Card.

All members of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty recognize themselves and all Citizens of any of the fifty Sovereign States that form our Christ created union, as Sovereigns, accountable only to God and applicable Constitutional law and constitutional State law as intended by the founders of our nation and recognize as null and void all statutes, court interpretations contrived upon case law, executive orders, etc., which are in any way contrary to the principles and powers enunciated and defined by the founding documents of our Sovereign States and Nation. Members are Christians and may also be members of other Christian organizations. Members support this entire document and The Testaments of Truth. Members also recognize that any law that is in contradiction to God's law must be opposed or we may be held accountable, by God, as having committed *Crimes against Humanity*. Members support Natural law. Members are expected to rid themselves of all Identifying numbers or names spelled in all capital letters that are imposed upon them by any government to deny, infringe upon, or curtail our God given natural rights as sovereigns including, but not limited to, personal property ownership; travel by any means; and or engaging in commerce, buying, selling trading, exchanging and/or participating in gainful employment for emoluments and /or wages.

**We do hereby declare ourselves free** of all former and future contracts entered into with any corporation, government, or their agents that have or would in anyway deprive us of our personal Sovereignty and/or freely chosen Citizenship and proclaim to all the world that all such contracts are null and void as they were entered into under duress or without proper legal understanding of any contractual obligations pertaining to citizenship.

Signed: \_\_\_\_\_

1 Printed Name: \_\_\_\_\_

2 **6.1 Free yourself from Satanic influence**

## 7 Chapter 7: Divine Intervention in America

### DIVINE INTERVENTION IN AMERICA

By Daniel McGavin Hansen, Sovereign

#### 7.1 Scriptural attestations and other historical accounts of Divine intervention

Scriptural attestations and other historical accounts of Divine intervention lend volumes of evidence to substantiate Benjamin Franklin's assertion that "God governs in the affairs of man."

Sovereigns seeking to enhance their capacity to serve their fellowman by building up the Kingdom of God on earth as it is in heaven need to reflect upon the hand of God which superintends our feeble efforts to overcome the forces of evil. We need to consider the actuality of our Pledge of Allegiance to the flag of the United States of America and to the Republic for which it stands one nation UNDER GOD, indivisible with liberty and justice for all.

Faith is the incentive of ambition, the key to success. Our human limitations of reason and vision often encumber our greater capacity to achieve, because we do not believe. Knowledge of God enhances our will to fight on against seemingly impossible odds.

When we truly believe that we are a nation **Under God**, miracles will mark our march to victory.

Let us therefore consider, briefly, historical documentation of Divine Intervention to give light to our vision, facts to our reason, and faith to our will.

Probably, the most dramatic and well known acts of Divine Intervention are associated with the life of Moses as he led his people Israel out of the security and slavery of Egypt into the wilderness of challenges and freedom. Israel crossed the Red Sea by Divine Intervention and the glory was the Lord's.

#### 7.2 Gideon

Gideon, (the name means, "hewer down or slayer of men, warrior") is memorialized in the Bible (Judges 6:1 1- 8:35) as a hero.

*"And Israel was greatly impoverished because of the Midianites; and the children of Israel cried to the Lord."*

The Lord heard their prayers and inspired Gideon to lead them. Gideon started by casting down the alter of Baal. He then gathered an army of over 30,000 solders.

*"And the Lord said unto Gideon, The people that are with thee are too many for me to give the Midianites into their hands, lest Israel vaunt themselves against me, saying, mine own hand hath saved me."*

God reduced Gideon's forces to 300, then armed them with lamps of oil and trumpets which symbolize the light of Christ and trumpets of truth. The Midianites were numerous as hordes of grasshoppers. The Gideonite soldiers circled their camps, positioning themselves on the hillsides. They then illuminated their lamps and blew their trumpets. In shock and confusion the sleeping Midianites came out of their tents and slew each other.

Israel, shortly thereafter returned like dogs to their own vomit, reveling in idolatry and priestcraft in their descent back to bondage and slavery. Israel lost their God, their nationhood, and their identity as they were dispersed. Ephraim, though lost, became a fruitful bow whose branches ran over the wall.

#### 7.3 Columbus

1 Columbus, like Moses, crossed over the sea to discover a wilderness and open the door for a nation of liberty. Toward the  
2 end of his life he compiled a *Book of Prophecies*, mostly from the Old Testament and the Book of Revelation, that he thought  
3 predicted his discovery of new lands ushering in the final ages of the world. In that book Columbus explains, "I believe that  
4 the Holy Spirit works among Christians, Jews, and Moslems, and all men of every faith, not merely among the learned, but  
5 also among the uneducated."

6 In the book *Columbus on Trial: 1492 vs. 1992* author Robert Royal writes, "There is no question that the actions of Columbus  
7 were undertaken in part out of personal ambition, but more strongly in service of a global religious vision."

8 Columbus testifies:

9 *"I prayed to the most merciful Lord about my heart's great desire, and He gave me the spirit and*  
10 *intelligence for the task... It was the Lord who put into my mind (I could feel His hand upon me) the fact*  
11 *that it would be possible to sail to the Indies. All who heard of my project rejected it with laughter,*  
12 *ridiculing me."*

13 Other inspired men followed in the faith of Columbus. Patrick Henry boldly declared in his famous speech, "*The War*  
14 *Inevitable*," March 1775:

15 *"They tell us, Sir, that we are weak...we are not weak, if we make a proper use of those means which*  
16 *the God of nature hath placed in our power... Besides, Sir, we shall not fight our battles alone. There*  
17 *is a just God who presides over the destinies of nations and who will raise up friends to fight our battles*  
18 *for us...Is life so dear or peace so sweet, as to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery? Forbid*  
19 *it, Almighty God! I know not what course others may take; but as for me, give me liberty or give me*  
20 *death!"*

21 That was the fate, the vision and the battle cry of the revolution! Men, like John Paul Jones, inspired by Patrick Henry's vision  
22 and spirit abandoned the confines of reason. John Paul Jones refused the demands of surrender from the British but, instead,  
23 commanded a sinking ship to attack as he declared:

24 *"I have not yet begun to fight!"*

## 25 **7.4 Bullet proof George Washington**

26 George Washington was well acquainted with Divine Intervention. On the back cover of David Barton's book *THE BULLET*  
27 *PROOF GEORGE WASHINGTON* is this summary:

28 *George Washington's part in the July 9th, 1755 battle during the French and Indian War in undisputedly*  
29 *one of the most significant events of his early years: his life literally hung in the balance for over two*  
30 *hours. This dramatic event helped shape his character and confirm God's call on him.*

31 *"During the two-hour battle the twenty-three year Colonel Washington had ridden to and fro on the*  
32 *battlefield delivering the General's orders to other officers and troops. The officers had been a special*  
33 *target of the Indians. Of the eighty-six British and American officers sixty-three were casualties.*  
34 *Washington was the only officer on horseback not shot down.*

35 *"Following the battle Washington wrote a letter to his brother in which he readily and openly*  
36 *acknowledge:*

37 *By the all powerful dispensations of Providence, I have been protected beyond all human probability*  
38 *or expectation; for I had four bullets through my coat and two horses shot under me, yet I escaped*  
39 *unhurt, although death was leveling my companions on every side of me!*

40 *"Fifteen years later, an old, respected Indian Chief sought out Washington. The Chief, explaining that*  
41 *he had led the Indians against them in the battle fifteen years earlier, revealed to Washington what had*  
42 *occurred behind the scenes:*

1 *I called to my young men, mark yon tall and daring warrior (Washington?)... Himself is alone exposed.*  
2 *Quick let your aim be certain, and he dies. Our rifles were leveled, rifles but for you, knew not how to*  
3 *miss-twas all in vain, a power mightier far than we shielded you. Seeing you were under **the special***  
4 ***guardianship of the Great Spirit** we immediately ceased to fire at you... I am come to pay homage to*  
5 *the man who is the particular favorite of Heaven, and who can never die in battle.*

6 *"This account of God's miraculous care of Washington and of Washington's open gratitude for God's*  
7 *Divine Intervention could be found in virtually all student textbooks until 1934; today, few have ever*  
8 *heard of it."*

## 9 **7.5 Other Testimonies**

10 The British were also acquainted with Divine Intervention. On February 13, 1781, American Troops escaped across the Dan  
11 River into Virginia. British Commander-in-Chief Henry Clinton reported:

12 *"Here the royal army was again stopped by a sudden rise of the waters, which had only fallen (almost*  
13 *miraculously) to let the enemy over, who could not else have eluded Lord Cornwallis' grasp, so close*  
14 *was he upon their rear."*

15 George Washington proclaimed in his Inaugural Speech, April 30, 1789:

16 *"No people can be bound to acknowledge and adore the Invisible Hand which conducts the affairs of*  
17 *men more than the people of the United States."*

18 Regarding the War of 1812 and the victorious battle of New Orleans, Andrew Jackson wrote to Secretary of War James  
19 Monroe:

20 *"Heaven, to be sure, has interposed most wonderfully in our behalf, and I am filled with gratitude, when*  
21 *I look back to what we have escaped."*

22 On January 8, 1815 Jackson wrote to Robert Hays concerning the same battle:

23 *"It appears that the unerring hand of Providence shielded my men from the shower of balls, bombs, and*  
24 *rockets when every ball and bomb from our guns carried with them a mission of death,"*

25 A more recent testimonial of faith is recorded by national columnist Cal Thomas, in April 1996, when Supreme Court  
26 Associate Justice Antonin Scalia shook the foundations of the secular establishment when he dared to pronounce the name  
27 of God without embarrassment.

28 *"At a prayer breakfast in Jackson, Miss., Scalia spoke not only of his personal faith, but of reaction by*  
29 *the press and the rest of the secular establishment to people who believe in an Authority higher than*  
30 *themselves. He even talked about his belief in miracles, which caused some commentators to place him*  
31 *in the category of those who phone psychic hot lines, Cartoonist Herblock drew Scalia reading a Bible*  
32 *while his fellow justices read the Constitution. Would Herblock have thought ill of Abraham Lincoln,*  
33 *who said, 'But for this Book, we would not know right from wrong'?"*

34 *"In his most powerful statement, Scalia urged the 650 present to ignore the scorn of the 'worldly wise'*  
35 *and merely stand up for their beliefs."*

36 Such is the testimony, faith and heritage of Sovereignty. May we as a people not forsake our God Given mandate to perpetuate  
37 the gospel of liberty as foundation stones for the Kingdom of God. Let us not be found to be wantonly guilty of the blood and  
38 sins of this generation as ignoble sons and daughters of noble sires. But rather let us heed the counsel of Paul:

39 *"For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind." (II Tim.*  
40 *1:7)*

1           *"Thou therefore, my son, be strong in the grace that is in Christ Jesus. And the things that thou hast*  
2           *heard of me among many witnesses, the same commit thou to faithful men, who shall be able to teach*  
3           *others also. Thou therefore endure hardness as a good soldier of Jesus Christ. No man that warreth*  
4           *entangleth himself with the affairs of this life; that he may please him who hath chosen him to be a*  
5           *soldier." (II Tim. 2:1-4)*

6           *"Put on the whole armor of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil." (Eph. 6:11)*

7   **Finally, dear reader, let us always remember the words of wisdom recorded in Proverbs 3:1, 5-6**

8           *"My son, forget not my law; but let thine heart keep my commandments: ...Trust in the Lord with all*  
9           *thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, and he shall*  
10          *direct thy paths."*

11   **Such is the promise of Divine Intervention which blessings we Sovereigns humbly seek after in the name of Jesus Christ, our**  
12   **King, Amen.**

1 **8 Chapter 8: Sovereign Hymnal**

2 **8.1 Introduction to the Hymnal**

3 Complied under the direction of the Minister of Music, Margaret Ruth Holloman Hansen

4 In Job 38:1,3 & 7 is recorded,

5 *"Then the Lord answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said...where wast thee when I laid the*  
6 *foundation of the earth?...When the morning stars sang together and all the sons of God shouted for*  
7 *joy?"*

8 Psalm 47:6 & 7 declares,

9 *"Sing praises to God, sing praises: Sing praises unto our King, sing praises. For God is the King of all*  
10 *the earth: Sing praises with understanding."*

11 We encourage our readers to not only enjoy the refreshment to soul enhanced by the harmonic, resonate, and rhythmic  
12 vibrations of the music, but, to ponder the meaning of the words that are often chanted without intellectual understanding.  
13 We cite for example, the practice of singing only the first stanza of the Star Spangled Banner...with images of fireworks to  
14 amuse us, but, without understanding and appreciation of our national anthem so artfully fashioned as a united concept with  
15 also stanzas two, three, and four.

16 Accordingly, this hymnal was prepared under the direction of the Minister of Music to provide our membership with musical  
17 selections that will inspire, uplift, sustain, and refresh our souls that we may more powerfully engage ourselves in the holy  
18 cause of liberty and shout hosannas of thanksgiving and praise to our acknowledged Sovereign who is Christ the Lord...Amen  
19 & Amen.  
20

1 **8.2 All Creatures of our God and King**

With exaltation 72

## All Creatures of Our God and King

Francis of Assisi

1. All crea- tures of our God and King, Lift up your voice and with us  
 2. Thou rush- ing wind that art so strong, Ye clouds that sail in heav'n a -  
 3. Thou flow- ing wa- ter, pure and clear, Make mu- sic for your Lord to

sing, Al- le- lu- ia! Al- le- lu- ia! Thou  
 long, Al- le- lu- ia! Al- le- lu- ia! Thou  
 hear, Al- le- lu- ia! Al- le- lu- ia! Thou

burn- ing sun with gold- en beam, Thou sil- ver moon with soft- er  
 ris- ing morn, in praise re- joice, Ye light of eve- ning find a  
 fire so mas- ter- ful and bright, That gives to man both warmth and

gleam, voice, Al- le- lu- ia! Al- le- lu- ia! Al- le-  
 light,

lu- ia! O praise him! Al- le- lu- ia!

2  
3

1 **8.3 Amazing Grace**

With grace 72

# Amazing Grace

John Newton  
Early American Melody

1. A - maz ing that grace! how sweet the  
2. 'Twas grace man - y taught dan - gers heart to  
3. Thro' man - y dan - gers heart toils, and

sound, That saved a wretch like me!  
fear, And I grace have my al - fears re - lieved  
snares, I have my al - y read - y come;

I once was lost but  
How 'Tis pre - grace cious hath did brought that  
me

now grace am found Was blind but  
safe thus ap - pear far, The And hour grace I  
will

now first I see  
lead be - lieved  
me home

2  
3

1 **8.4 America The Beautiful**

With passion 94

# America the Beautiful

Katherine Lee Bates  
Samuel A. Ward

1. Oh beau - ti - ful for spa - cious skies, For am - ber waves of grain, For  
 2. Oh beau - ti - ful for pil - grim feet, Whose stern im - pas - ioned stress A  
 3. Oh beau - ti - ful for he - roes proved In lib - er - at - ing strife, Who  
 4. Oh beau - ti - ful for pa - triot dream That sees be - yond the years. Thine

pur - ple mount - ain maj - es - ties A - bove the fruit - ed plain! A -  
 thor - ough - fare of free - dom beat A - cross the wil - der - ness! A -  
 more than self their coun - try loved, And mer - cy more than life! A -  
 al - a - bas - ter cit - ies gleam Un - dimmed by hu - man tears. A -

mer - i - ca! A - mer - i - ca! God shed his grace on thee And  
 mer - i - ca! A - mer - i - ca! God mend thine ev - ery flaw, Con -  
 mer - i - ca! A - mer - i - ca! May God thy gold re - fine, Till

mer - i - ca! A - mer - i - ca! God shed his grace on thee And  
 crown thy good with broth - er hood From sea to shin - ing sea.  
 firm thy soul in self - con - trol, Thy lib - er - ty in law.  
 all suc - cess be - ing - ness, And ev - ery gain di - vine.

crown thy good with broth - er hood From sea to shin - ing sea.

2  
3

1 **8.5 Am I a Solider of the Cross**

With power 104

## Am I a Soldier of the Cross

Isaac Watts  
Thomas A. Arne

1. Am I a sol - dier of the cross, A  
 2. Must I be car - ried to the skies, On  
 3. Sure I must fight If I would reign; In-

fol - lower of the Lamb, And shall I fear to  
 flow - 'ry beds of ease, While oth - ers fought to  
 crease my cour - age, Lord; I'll bear the toil, en -

own His cause Or blush to speak His name?  
 win the prize And sailed thro' blood - y seas?  
 dure the pain, Sup - port - ed by Thy word.

2  
3

1 **8.6 A Mighty Fortress is Our God**

With great dignity 64

# A Mighty Fortress

Martin Luther

*ff*  
A might- y for- tress is our God, A tower of strength ne'er fail - ing. A

help- er might- y is our God, O'er ills of life pre- vail - ing. He *mf*

o - ver com- eth all. He sav- eth from the fall. His might and powr are

great. He all things did ere - ate And he shall reign for - ev - er more.

2  
3

1 **8.7 Battle Hymn of the Republic**

With spirit 96

# Battle Hymn of the Republic

Julia Ward Howe  
William Steffe

1. Mine eyes have seen the glo-ry of the com- ing of the Lord; He is  
 2. He has sound- ed forth the trum- pet that shall nev- er call re- treat; He is  
 3. In the beau- ty of the hil- ies, Christ was born a- cross the sea, With a

tram - pling out the vin- tage where the grapes of wrath are stored. He hath  
 sift - ing out the hearts of men be- fore his judg- ment seat. Oh, be  
 glo- ry in his bo- som that trans- fig- ures you and me. As he

loosed the fate- ful light- ning of His ter- ri- ble, swift sword; His  
 swift, my soul, to an- swer him; let be- ju- ri- ble, swift sword; His  
 died to make men ho- ly, let us live to make men free, Our  
 While

truth is march- ing on, Glo- ry, glo- ry, hal- le-  
 God is march- ing on, ry, glo- ry, glo- ry, hal- le-  
 God as march- ing on, ry, glo- ry, glo- ry, hal- le-

lu - jah! Glo- ry, glo- ry ha - le - lu - jah!

Glo- ry, glo- ry, hal- le - lu - jah! His truth is march - ing on!

2  
3

1 **8.8 Before Jehovah's Awesome Throne**

With praise 96

# Before Jehovah's Awesome Throne

Isaac Watts  
Louis Bourgeois

1. Be - fore Je - ho - vah's awe - some throne, Ye  
2. His sov - reign pow'r, with - out our aid, made  
3. We'll crowd thy gates with thank - ful songs, High

na - tion's bow with sa - cred joy: Know that the Lord is  
us of clay and formed us men: And when like wan - d'ring  
as the heav'n's our voic - es raise, And eath with all its

God a - lone, He can cre - ate, and be de - stroy.  
sheep we strayed, He brought us to his fold a - gain.  
thou - sand tongues, Shall fill thy courts with sound - ing praise

2  
3

1 **8.9 Christ the Lord is Risen Today**

With exultation 104

# Christ the Lord Is Risen Today

Charles Wesley  
Henry Carey

Christ the Lord is risen to-day  
Love's re-deem-ing work is done,  
Lives a-gain our glo-ri-ous King:  
Al - le - lu - ia!

Sons of men and an-gels say,  
Fought the fight, the vic-tory won,  
Where, O death, is now thy sting?

Raise your joys and tri-umphs high,  
Je-sus' ag-on-y is o'er save,  
Once he died our souls to

Sing, ye heav'n, and earth re-ply,  
Dark-ness veils the earth no more,  
Where thy vic-to-ry, O grave?

1 **8.10 Do What Is Right**

With marked accent 120

# Do What Is Right

E. Kaillmark

Do what is right; the day - dawn is break - ing, Hail - ing a fu - ture of  
 Do what is right; the shack - les are fall - ing; Chains of the bonds - men no  
 Do what is right; be faith - ful and fear less; On - ward, press on - ward, the

free - dom and light; An - gels a - bove us are si - lent notes  
 long - er are in bright; Light - ened by hope soon they'll cease to be  
 goal is in sight; Eyes that are wet now, ere long will be

tak - ing Of ev - 'ry ac - tion, do what is right!  
 gall - ing Truth go - eth on - ward; do what is right!  
 tear - less; Bless - ings a - wait you in do - ing what's right!  
 Do what is right; let

con - se - quence fol - low Bat - tle for free - dom in spir - it and might; And with stout

hearts look ye forth till to - mor - row God will pro - tect you then do what is right!

2  
3

1 **8.11 Faith of Our Fathers**

Thankfully 104

# Faith of Our Fathers

Frederick W. Faber  
Henri F. Henry  
Adapted by James G. Walton

1. Faith of our fa - thers, liv - ing still, In spite of dun - geon,  
 2. Faith of our fa - thers, we will strive To win all na - tions  
 3. Faith of our fa - thers, we will love Both friend and foe in

fire, and sword, Oh, how our hearts beat high with joy  
 un - to thee, And thru the truth that as comes from God,  
 all our strife, And preach thee, too, as love knows how,

When - e'er we hear that glo - rious word, Faith of our fa - thers,  
 Man - kind shall then be tru - ly free. By kind - ly words and vir - tuous life.

ho - ly faith, We will be true to thee till death!

2  
3

1 **8.12 God of Our Father's, Whose All Mighty Hand**

With power

# God of Our Fathers, Whose Almighty Hand

Daniel C. Roberts  
G. W. Warren

1. God of our fa - thers whose all might - y  
 2. Thy love di - vine hath led us in the  
 3. From war's a - larms, from dead - ly pes - ti-

hand past; Leads forth in beau - ty all the star - ry  
 lence, In this free land by thee our lot is  
 Be thy strong arm our ev - er - sure de - fence.

Of shin - ing worlds in splen - dor through the skies  
 Be thou our Rul - er, Guard - ian, Guide, and Stay,  
 Thy true re - li - gion in our hearts in - crease.

Our grate - ful songs be - fore thy throne a - rise.  
 Thy word our law, thy paths our cho - sen way.  
 Thy boun - teous good - ness near - ish us in peace.

2  
3

1 **8.13 How Firm a Foundation**

Stately 104

# How Firm a Foundation

Kirkham

1. How firm a founda- tion, ye Saints of the Lord, Is  
 2. In ev- ery con- di- tion, in in sick- ness, in health, Is  
 3. Fear not, I am with thee, O be not dis- mayed, For

laid for your faith in His ex- cel- lent word! What more can be  
 er- ty's vale or a- bound- ing in wealth, At home or a-  
 I am thy God and will still give thee aid, I'll strength- en thee,

say than to you he hath said, You who un- to Je- sus, you  
 broad, on the land or the sea, As thy days may de- mand, as thy  
 help thee, and cause thee to stand Up- held by my right- eous, Up-

who un- to Je- sus, You who un- to Je- sus for ref- uge have fled?  
 days may de- mand, As thy days un- may de- mand, so thy suc- cor shall be,  
 held by my right- eous, Up held by my right- eous, on- nip- o- tent Isaid.

2  
3

1 **8.14 Master the Tempest is Raging**

pleadingly 58

# Master, The Tempest Is Raging

M. A. Baker  
H. R. Palmer

1. Mas - ter, the tem - pest is rag - ing! The bil - lows are toss - ing high - The  
2. Mas - ter, with an - guish of spir - it I bow in my grief to - day. The  
3. Mas - ter, the ter - ror is o - ver The el - e - ments sweet - ly rest. Earth's

sky is o'er shad - owed with black - ness, No shel - ter or help is nigh.  
depths of my sad heart are trou - bled, Oh, wak - en and save, I pray!  
sun in the calm lake is mir - rored, And heav - en's with - in my breast.

Car - est thou not that we per - ish? How canst thou lie a - sleep When each  
Tor - rents of sin and of an - guish er! Sweep o'er my sink - ing soul, And I  
Lin - ger, O bless - ed Re - deem - er! Leave me a - lone no more, And with

mo - ment so mad - ly is theat - 'ning A grave in the an - gry deep? *mp*  
per - ish! I per - ish! dear Mas - ter. Oh has - ten and take con - trol! The  
joy I shall make the best har - bor And rest on the bliss - ful shore.

winds and the waves shall o - bey thy will: *p* Peace, be still *mp* Wheth - er the wrath of the  
Peace, be still, peace, be still

2

storm tossed sea Or de - mons or men or what - ev - er it be No wa - ters can swal - low the

ship where lies The Mas - ter of o - cean and earth and skies. They

all shall sweet - ly o - bey my will. Peace, be still Peace, still! They

all shall sweet - ly o - bey my will. Peace, peace be still.

1  
2

1 **8.15 I Know that My Redeems Lives**

With devotion 60

# I Know That My Redeemer Lives

Samuel Medley  
Lewis D. Edwards

1. I know that my Re- deem- er lives; What com- fort this sweet  
2. He lives to my grant me wise, rich heav' ly friend, He lives and guide me  
3. He lives, to my kind, me wise, heav' ly friend, He lives and loves me

see- ter- give! He lives, he to lives, who once was dead. He  
with his eye, He lives, and while he lives, I'll faint, He  
to the end. He lives, and while he lives, I'll sing, He  
He

lives, my ev- er- liv- ing Head. He lives to bless me with his  
lives, to hear my soul's com- plaint He lives to si- lence all my  
lives, my Proph- et, Priest and King He lives and grants me dai- ly

love. He lives to plead for me a- bove He  
fears. He lives to wipe a- way my tears. He  
breath. He lives, and I shall con- quer death. He

lives my hun- gry soul to feed. He lives, to bless in time of need.  
lives to calm my trou- bled heart. He lives, all bless- ings to im- part.  
lives my man- sion to pre- pare. He lives, to bring me suf- ly there.

2  
3

1 **8.16 My Country 'Tis of Thee**

With emphasis 76

# My Country, 'Tis of Thee

Samuel F. Smith  
Henry Carey

My coun- try 'tis of thee, Sweet land of lib- er- ty  
 My na- tive coun- try thee, Land of the no- ble, free,  
 Let mu- sic swell the breeze, And ring from all the trees

Our fa- thers' God to thee, Auth- or of lib- er- ty

Of thee I sing; Land where my fa- thers died,  
 Thy name I love; thy rocks and rills,  
 Sweet free- dom's song; Let mor- tal tounge a- wake;

To thee we sing. Long may our land be bright

Land of the pil- grim's pride From ev- ery  
 Thy woods and that breathe- pled hills. with  
 Let all that par- take; take; rocks their

With free- dom's ho- ly light. Pro- tect us

moun- tain side Let free- dom ring !  
 rap- ture thrills Like that a- bove  
 si- lience break, The sound pro- long.

by thy might, Great God our King!

2  
3

1 **8.17 Onward Christian Soldiers**

Martial 104

# Onward, Christian Soldiers

Sabine Baring-Gould  
 Author S. Sullivan

On-ward, Chris-tian sol-diers! March-ing as to war, With the cross of  
 At the sign of tri-umph, Sa-tan's host doth flee; On, then Chris-tian  
 Like a might-y ar-my Moves the Church of God. Broth-ers, we are

Je-sus Go-ing on be-fore. Christ, the royal-al Mas-ter,  
 sol-diers, On to vic-tory. Hell's four-da-tions quiv-er  
 tread-ing Where the Saints have trod. We are not di-vid-ed,

Leads a-against the foe; For-ward in-to bat-tle, See his ban-ners go!  
 At the shout of praise, Broth-ers, lift your voi-es, Loud your an-thems raise,  
 All one bod-y we, One in hope and doc-trine, One in char-i-ty.

On-ward Chris-tian sol-diers, March-ing as to war, war, With the

With the cross of Je-sus Go-ing on be-fore.  
 cross of Je-sus

2  
 3

1 **8.18 Rejoice the Lord is King**

With vigor 100

# Rejoice, the Lord Is King

Charles Wesley  
Horatio Parker

Re-joice, the Lord is King! Your Lord and King a -  
The Lord, the Sav - ior reigns, The God of truth and  
His king- dom can - not fail; He rules o'er earth and

Mer - tals give thanks and sing And tri - umph ev - er more.  
When he had purged our stains, He took his seat a -  
The keys of death and hell To Christ the Lord are given Lift

up your heart lift up your voice! Re - joice a - gain; I say re - joice! Lift

up your heart! lift up your voice! Re - joice a - gain; I say, re - joice!

2  
3

# 8.19 The Star Spangled Banner

With spirit 104

## The Star Spangled Banner

Francis Scott Key  
John Stafford Smith

1. Oh say can you see, by the dawn's early light,  
2. On the shore, dimly seen through the mists of the deep,  
3. Oh, thus be it remembered, our first and our last,  
What so proudly we hail'd at the twilight's last gleaming,  
Whose broad stripes and bright stars through the perilous fight,  
O'er the ramparts we watch'd, so gallantly streaming?  
And the rock-ets red glare, the bombs bursting in air,  
glean- ing, Whose broad stripes and bright stars, through the per- il- ous  
pos - es; What is that which the breeze, o'er the tow - er - ing  
la - tion! Blest with vic - try and peace, may the heav'n res - cue

fight, What so proud - ly we hailed at the twi - light's last  
deep, Where the foe's haugh - ty loved host in dread si - lence re -  
stand Be - tween their loved homes and the war's des - o -

gleam - ing, Whose broad stripes and bright stars, through the per - il - ous  
pos - es; What is that which the breeze, o'er the tow - er - ing  
la - tion! Blest with vic - try and peace, may the heav'n res - cue

fight, O'er the ram - parts we watch'd were so gal - lant - ly  
steep, As it fit - ful - ly blows, half con - ceals half dis -  
land Praise the Pow'r that hath made and pre - served us a

stream - ing ? And the rock - ets red glare, the bombs burst - ing in  
clos - es? Now it catch - es the glare, the of the morn - ing's first  
na - tion! Then con - quer we must, when our cause it is

2

air, beam, just, Gave In full And proof glo - this thru ry be our night fleet - mot - ed to that our now \*In our flag shines on is the still the our

there. stream; trust!" Oh 'Tis the And the say, star - star - does span - span - that gled gled star - ban - spinner! Oh, in

ban - ner may yet it wa - ve O'er the land of the long may it shall wa - ve O'er the land of the tri - umph shall wa - ve O'er the land of the

free free free and the home of the brave? and the home of the brave! and the home of the brave!

1  
2

1 **8.20 We Are All Enlisted**

Martial 108

# We Are All Enlisted

William B. Bradbury

We are all enlisted till the conflict is o'er--  
 Hark! the sound of battle sounding loudly and clear--  
 Fighting for a kingdom, and the world is our foe--

Hap- py are we! Hap- py are we! Sol- diers in the ar- my there's a  
 Come join the ranks! Come join the ranks! We are wait- ing now for sol- diers,  
 Hap- py are we! Hap- py are we! Glad to join the ar- my, we will

bright crown in store; We shall win and wear it by and by.  
 who'll vol- un- teer? Ral- ly round the stan- dard of the cross.  
 sing as we go; We shall gain the vic- tory by and by.

Haste to the bat- tle, quick to the feild, Truth is our hel- met,  
 Hark! 'tis our Cap- tain calls you to day; Lose not a mo- ment,  
 Dan- gers may gath- er-- why should we fear? Je- sus, our lead- er,

buck- ler, and shield. Stand by our col- ors-- proud- ly they wave-- We're  
 make no de- lay! Fight for our Sav- ior, come, come a-way!-- We're  
 ev- er is near. He will pro- tect us, com- fort and cheer: We're

2  
3

1 **8.21 Rock of Ages**

With dignity 70

# Rock of Ages

Augustus M. Toplady  
Thomas Hastings

The musical score for 'Rock of Ages' is presented in three systems. Each system consists of a vocal line and a piano accompaniment. The key signature is one flat (B-flat) and the time signature is 3/4. The lyrics are as follows:

Rock of Ages, cleft for me, let me hide my - self in  
Not of la - bors of my hands, Can fill all thy law's de -  
While I draw this fleet - ing breath, When mine eyes shall close in  
thee; Let the wa - ter and the blood, From thy wound - ed side which  
mands; Could my zeal no re - spite know, Could my tears for - ev - er  
death, When I rise, to worlds un - known And be - hold thee on thy  
flowed, Be of sin the dou - ble cure, Save from wrath and make me pure.  
flow All for sin could not a - tone; Thou must save, and thou a - lone.  
throne Rock of A - ges, cleft for me, Let me hide my - self in thee.

2

## 9 Chapter 9: Declaration of Taking Up Arms, 1775

### 9.1 Introduction

Introduction to:  
A Declaration by the Representatives of the United  
Colonies of North-America. 1775  
By Christopher Holloman Hansen

### 9.2 Duty bound to support liberty

Before the *United States Constitution* or even the *Declaration of Independence* were written, the Representatives of the United Colonies in 1775, still seeking to be loyal English subjects yet unwilling to allow the yoke of tyranny to set comfortably upon their necks met in Philadelphia and offered a humble and dutiful petition to the King of England to inform him that parliament had usurped their authority and violated the constitution of the kingdom, of which the colonies were a part, and that their attachment to no nation upon earth would "**supplant their attachment to liberty.**" As freemen, duty bound to support liberty, the common law and constitution of the kingdom, and with reason and negotiations having failed, the Continental Congress decided that Parliament had limited the colonies to choosing between an unconditional submission to tyranny, or resistance by force. The latter was their choice.

The Declaration is a very interesting document and deserves close attention when we consider the current state of affairs in the United States of America. One of the key reasons for taking up arms against England was that our Founding Fathers could not endure the infamy and guilt of VOLUNTARILY resigning succeeding generations to that wretchedness which inevitably awaited those coming generations if the founders were to allow hereditary bondage to be placed upon their children by failing to resist the threats and encroachments upon their liberty by England. America's founders were not only concerned with their own liberty but that of their children and posterity. The Preamble to the *Constitution* clearly declares, to **secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our Posterity**. Their children's liberty was more important to them than their own SECURITY; lives and fortunes as such concerns were manifestations of their honor.

In contrast, the celebrated and currently revered World War II generation led by *Franklin Delano Roosevelt* established and actively pursued a system: the Social Security System, which has basely entailed hereditary bondage upon each succeeding generation. Every child born today that is assigned a Social Security number is assigned the chains of debt placed upon their shoulders by a government originally established for the very purpose of keeping future generations free of bondage. The taxes that support this socialist program are paid by "succeeding generations." The most horrible truth is that the financial beneficiaries of this slavery are the very mothers and fathers that receive government Social Security checks paid for by monies collected by force through threat of incarceration and financial ruin from the very succeeding generations that they should have been protecting from such slavery. This "voluntary system" is the very antithesis of this declaration, the *Declaration of Independence* and the *United States Constitution*. The *Constitution* was written to, "secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our Posterity." In contrast the Social Security Act was established to create hereditary bondage upon Posterity. The following is a quote from the Social Security Administration- Publication Number 05-10010 January 1999.

"Social Security represents a pact between generations-a financial and social commitment among people of all ages."

The Bible, centuries ago, foretold of a similar scenario in Hosea 4:6,

My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, **I will also forget thy children.**

This nation has forgotten our duty and responsibilities to our children and has instead enslaved them with debt bondage. We must repent or face the wrath of a just God.

"Indeed, I tremble for my country when I reflect that God is just." Thomas Jefferson as quoted in *The Federalist Digest*.

The following declaration was written for the Colonial Representatives by Thomas Jefferson, Henry Steele Commanger, John Dickinson, and Samuel Eliot.

### 9.3 The Declaration

Declaration of Independence of the  
Thirteen Colonies  
In Congress, July 4, 1776

The unanimous Declaration of the thirteen united States of America,

When in the Course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the Laws of Nature and of Nature's God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the causes which impel them to the separation.

We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty, and the pursuit of Happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed. That whenever any Form of Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most likely to effect their Safety and Happiness.

Prudence, indeed, will dictate that Governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly all experience hath shewn, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed.

But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security.

Such has been the patient sufferance of these Colonies; and such is now the necessity which constrains them to alter their former Systems of Government. The history of the present King of Great Britain [George III] is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations, all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute Tyranny over these States. To prove this, let Facts be submitted to a candid world.

He has refused his Assent to Laws, the most wholesome and necessary for the public good.

He has forbidden his Governors to pass Laws of immediate and pressing importance, unless suspended in their operation till his Assent should be obtained, and when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.

He has refused to pass other Laws for the accommodation of large districts of people, unless those people would relinquish the right of Representation in the Legislature, a right inestimable to them and formidable to tyrants only.

He has called together legislative bodies at places unusual, uncomfortable, and distant from the depository of their public Records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures.

He has dissolved Representative Houses repeatedly, for opposing with manly firmness his invasions on the rights of the people.

He has refused for a long time, after such dissolutions, to cause others to be elected; whereby the Legislative powers, incapable of Annihilation, have returned to the People at large for their exercise; the State remaining in the meantime exposed to all the dangers of invasion from without, and convulsions within.

He has endeavoured to prevent the population of these States; for that purpose obstructing the Laws for Naturalization of Foreigners; refusing to pass others to encourage their migrations hither, and raising the conditions of new Appropriations of Lands.

1 He has obstructed the Administration of Justice, by refusing his Assent to Laws for establishing Judiciary powers.

2 He has made Judges dependent on his Will alone, for the tenure of their offices, and the amount and payment of their salaries.

3 He has erected a multitude of New Offices, and sent hither swarms of Officers to harass our people, and eat out their substance.

4 He has kept among us, in times of peace, Standing Armies, without the consent of our legislatures.

5 He has affected to render the Military independent of and superior to the Civil power.

6 He has combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitution and unacknowledged by our laws;  
7 giving his Assent to their Acts of pretended Legislation:

8 For protecting them by a mock Trial from punishment for any Murders which they should commit on the Inhabitants of these  
9 States:

10 For cutting off our Trade with all parts of the world:

11 For imposing Taxes on us without our Consent:

12 For depriving us in many cases of the benefits of Trial by Jury:

13 For transporting us beyond Seas to be tried for pretended offences:

14 For abolishing the free System of English Laws in a neighbouring Province, establishing therein an Arbitrary government,  
15 and enlarging its Boundaries so as to render it at once an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule  
16 into these Colonies:

17 For taking away our Charters, abolishing our most valuable Laws and altering fundamentally the Forms of our Governments:

18 For suspending our own Legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

19 He has abdicated Government here by declaring us out of his Protection and waging War against us.

20 He has plundered our seas, ravaged our Coasts, burnt our towns, and destroyed the lives of our people.

21 He is at this time transporting large Armies of foreign Mercenaries to complete the works of death, desolation and tyranny,  
22 already begun with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy  
23 the Head of a civilized nation.

24 He has constrained our fellow Citizens taken Captive on the high Seas to bear Arms against their Country, to become the  
25 executioners of their friends and Brethren, or to fall themselves by their Hands.

26 He has excited domestic insurrections amongst us, and has endeavoured to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers, the  
27 merciless Indian Savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes and conditions.

28 In every stage of these Oppressions We have Petitioned for Redress in the most humble terms. Our repeated Petitions have  
29 been answered only by repeated injury. A Prince, whose character is thus marked by every act which may define a Tyrant, is  
30 unfit to be the ruler of a free people.

31 Nor have We been wanting in attentions to our British brethren.

32 We have warned them from time to time of attempts by their legislature to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us.

33 We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here.

1 We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity, and we have conjured them by the ties of our common kindred to  
2 disavow these usurpations, which would inevitably interrupt our connections and correspondence.

3 They too have been deaf to the voice of justice and of consanguinity. We must, therefore, acquiesce in the necessity, which  
4 denounces our Separation, and hold them, as we hold the rest of mankind, Enemies in War, in Peace Friends.

5 We, therefore, the Representatives of the United States of America, in General Congress, Assembled, appealing to the  
6 Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the Name, and by the authority of the good People of  
7 these Colonies, solemnly publish and declare.

8 That these United Colonies are, and of Right ought to be Free and Independent States; that they are Absolved from all  
9 Allegiance to the British Crown, and that all political connection between them and the State of Great Britain is and ought to  
10 be totally dissolved; and that as Free and Independent States, they have full Power to levy War, conclude Peace, contract  
11 Alliances, establish Commerce, and to do all other Acts and Things which Independent States may of right do.

12 And for the support of this Declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to  
13 each other our Lives, our Fortunes, and our sacred Honor.

14 The signers of the Declaration represented the new States as follows:

15 New Hampshire: Josiah Bartlett, William Whipple, Matthew Thornton

16 Massachusetts: John Hancock, Samuel Adams, John Adams, Robert Treat Paine, Elbridge Gerry

17 Rhode Island: Stephen Hopkins, William Ellery

18 Connecticut: Roger Sherman, Samuel Huntington, William Williams, Oliver Wolcott

19 New York: William Floyd, Philip Livingston, Francis Lewis, Lewis Morris

20 New Jersey: Richard Stockton, John Witherspoon, Francis Hopkinson, John Hart, Abraham Clark

21 Pennsylvania: Robert Morris, Benjamin Rush, Benjamin Franklin, John Morton, George Clymer, James Smith, George  
22 Taylor, James Wilson, George Ross

23 Delaware: Caesar Rodney, George Read, Thomas McKean

24 Maryland: Samuel Chase, William Paca, Thomas Stone, Charles Carroll of Carrollton

25 Virginia: George Wythe, Richard Henry Lee, Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Harrison, Thomas Nelson, Jr., Francis Lightfoot  
26 Lee, Carter Braxton

27 North Carolina: William Hooper, Joseph Hewes, John Penn

28 South Carolina: Edward Rutledge, Thomas Heyward, Jr., Thomas Lynch, Jr., Arthur Middleton

29 Georgia: Button Gwinnett, Lyman Hall, George Walton

30 **9.4 Divine Author of our existence**

31 **9.5 Our attachment to no nation should supplant our attachment to liberty**

32 **9.6 infamy and guilt of resigning succeeding generations to hereditary bondage**

## 10 Chapter 10: The Declaration of Independence

### 10.1 Introduction

By Jonathan Joel Hansen

On October 12, 1999, I, Jonathan J. Hansen, passed the Nevada Bar Examination and entered into practice with my father, Joel F. Hansen. Prior to that time I had been instructed for twelve years in the public education given by government schools in Las Vegas, Nevada. After graduating from high school with honors, I attended four years at two private universities, Brigham Young University and Brigham Young University-Hawaii, and graduated with a B.A. in history. I then decided to go into law and was accepted at the University of San Diego School of Law.

Throughout these many years of schooling, I learned many interesting things about our nation and its birth. I enjoyed classes focusing on the Revolutionary War and early American history. However, not once in all my many years of schooling was I ever required to read the entire *Declaration of Independence*, even in law school. I was told why the document was written and in fact, had to memorize the famous paragraph that begins “We hold these truths to be self-evident... ;” but at no time did I ever know or understand what the specific grievances were that compelled our Founding Fathers to declare that they were being oppressed under a tyrannical government.

The first time I ever actually read the entire *Declaration of Independence* was sometime in November of 1999. I had been working on some research regarding jury trials and administrative agencies and came upon several references to the words of Thomas Jefferson. I decided to read Thomas Jefferson’s words first-hand and picked up an old copy of the *Declaration of Independence*.

### 10.2 Chipping away at our freedom

For quite some time I had been feeling like our present government was chipping away at our freedom, and had been doing so for a long time, but I did not completely comprehend the exact means the government was implementing to limit and destroy our freedom. However, after reading Thomas Jefferson’s words where he cited many “injuries and usurpations... all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute Tyranny over these states...,” I understood the subtle means the government employed. The words of this great document were like a revelation to me. The King of England had done just what our present government was doing, and is doing, to destroy our freedom!!!

A few examples include the following:

1. Imposing taxes on us without our consent, which is equal to the tirades of the IRS, Social Security taxes, and other oppressive taxes used for evil purposes,
2. Depriving us of the benefits of a trial by jury by establishing administrative review boards as the only forum for factual determination of so called “public rights,”
3. Making judges dependent on his will alone for their payment of salaries, which is again similar to the administrative review board judges who are part of the executive branch and have no real judicial independence,
4. Combining with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our Constitution, and unacknowledged by our laws; giving his Assent to their acts of pseudo legislation, which evokes thoughts of the UN, WTO, and many other multinational organizations they have policies directly contrary to the independence of the United States of America,
5. Altering fundamentally the forms of our governments, which in our time is the huge growth of the fourth branch of government, administrative agencies, that have all three branches of government combined into one, and are immune from any traditional checks and balances on their power.
6. Erecting a multitude of New Offices, and sent hither swarms of Officers to harass our people, and eat out our substance, which is exactly what the Federal Government is doing with offices or agencies such as OSHA, EPA, BLM, USFS, IRS, and many others.
7. For abolishing the free System of English Laws in a neighboring Province, establishing therein an Arbitrary government, and enlarging its Boundaries so as to render it at once an example, which is just like the Federal government has done with large tracts of land in the western states, subject only to Congress’ absolute authority over territories under Article IV of the *Constitution*, leaving the state governments to beg to use land within the states’ own borders.

1 There are others grievances that Thomas Jefferson cited which were particular to that time and are not necessarily applicable  
2 now, but the main focus of the *Declaration of Independence* was that the government had usurped power and authority from  
3 those it governed and had become tyrannical. England had deprived them of the ability to obtain redress by taking away their  
4 capacity to check the government’s power, and that is what our government is doing today.

### 5 **10.3 Failure of government education**

6 It became painfully obvious to me the reason I had never been taught the **specific** reasons that prompted the writing of the  
7 declaration. Why would the government operated schools want to teach the citizens of this nation that they were losing their  
8 freedom in exactly the same manner as those who lived here 200 years ago? If we do not know our history we are bound to  
9 repeat it. And that is exactly what is happening. We are losing our freedom because we do not know the specific reasons the  
10 Founding Fathers declared their independence from England.

11 The Founding Fathers were inspired men who were well aware what happens when a government becomes oppressive. They  
12 pledged their time, fortunes, and even their very lives to the cause of freedom. Their knowledge of government and the  
13 potential for abuse by those in power led to the drafting of our *Constitution*. I now more fully understand why our government  
14 wages a continual war to limit the power of the *Constitution*—because it stands in the way of tyranny. Our founders’ words  
15 have inspired me to join the cause of freedom in an attempt to regain our God given rights as free men.

### 16 **10.4 The Declaration**

17 In Congress, July 4, 1776

18 The unanimous Declaration of the thirteen united States of America,

19 When in the Course of human events, it becomes necessary for one people to dissolve the political bands which have  
20 connected them with another, and to assume among the powers of the earth, the separate and equal station to which the Laws  
21 of Nature and of Nature’s God entitle them, a decent respect to the opinions of mankind requires that they should declare the  
22 causes which impel them to the separation.

### 23 **10.5 Endowed by their Creator**

### 24 **10.6 Unalienable Rights**

25 We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal, that they are endowed by their Creator with certain  
26 unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty, and the pursuit of Happiness. That to secure these rights, Governments  
27 are instituted among Men, deriving their just powers from the consent of the governed. That whenever any Form of  
28 Government becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it, and to institute new  
29 Government, laying its foundation on such principles and organizing its powers in such form, as to them shall seem most  
30 likely to effect their Safety and Happiness.

31 Prudence, indeed, will dictate that Governments long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and  
32 accordingly all experience hath shewn, that mankind are more disposed to suffer, while evils are sufferable, than to right  
33 themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed.

### 34 **10.7 Long train of abuses**

35 But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object evinces a design to reduce them under  
36 absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future  
37 security.

38 Such has been the patient sufferance of these Colonies; and such is now the necessity which constrains them to alter their  
39 former Systems of Government. The history of the present King of Great Britain [George III] is a history of repeated injuries  
40 and usurpations, all having in direct object the establishment of an absolute Tyranny over these States. To prove this, let Facts  
41 be submitted to a candid world.

1 He has refused his Assent to Laws, the most wholesome and necessary for the public good.

2 He has forbidden his Governors to pass Laws of immediate and pressing importance, unless suspended in their operation till  
3 his Assent should be obtained, and when so suspended, he has utterly neglected to attend to them.

4 He has refused to pass other Laws for the accommodation of large districts of people, unless those people would relinquish  
5 the right of Representation in the Legislature, a right inestimable to them and formidable to tyrants only.

6 He has called together legislative bodies at places unusual, uncomfortable, and distant from the depository of their public  
7 Records, for the sole purpose of fatiguing them into compliance with his measures.

8 He has dissolved Representative Houses repeatedly, for opposing with manly firmness his invasions on the rights of the  
9 people.

10 He has refused for a long time, after such dissolutions, to cause others to be elected; whereby the Legislative powers, incapable  
11 of Annihilation, have returned to the People at large for their exercise; the State remaining in the meantime exposed to all the  
12 dangers of invasion from without, and convulsions within.

13 He has endeavoured to prevent the population of these States; for that purpose obstructing the Laws for Naturalization of  
14 Foreigners; refusing to pass others to encourage their migrations hither, and raising the conditions of new Appropriations of  
15 Lands.

16 He has obstructed the Administration of Justice, by refusing his Assent to Laws for establishing Judiciary powers.

17 He has made Judges dependent on his Will alone, for the tenure of their offices, and the amount and payment of their salaries.

18 He has erected a multitude of New Offices, and sent hither swarms of Officers to harass our people, and eat out their substance.

19 He has kept among us, in times of peace, Standing Armies, without the consent of our legislatures.

20 He has affected to render the Military independent of and superior to the Civil power.

21 He has combined with others to subject us to a jurisdiction foreign to our constitution and unacknowledged by our laws;  
22 giving his Assent to their Acts of pretended Legislation:

23 For protecting them by a mock Trial from punishment for any Murders which they should commit on the Inhabitants of these  
24 States:

25 For cutting off our Trade with all parts of the world:

26 For imposing Taxes on us without our Consent:

27 For depriving us in many cases of the benefits of Trial by Jury:

28 For transporting us beyond Seas to be tried for pretended offences:

29 For abolishing the free System of English Laws in a neighbouring Province, establishing therein an Arbitrary government,  
30 and enlarging its Boundaries so as to render it at once an example and fit instrument for introducing the same absolute rule  
31 into these Colonies:

32 For taking away our Charters, abolishing our most valuable Laws and altering fundamentally the Forms of our Governments:

33 For suspending our own Legislatures, and declaring themselves invested with power to legislate for us in all cases whatsoever.

34 He has abdicated Government here by declaring us out of his Protection and waging War against us.

1 He has plundered our seas, ravaged our Coasts, burnt our towns, and destroyed the lives of our people.

2 He is at this time transporting large Armies of foreign Mercenaries to complete the works of death, desolation and tyranny,  
3 already begun with circumstances of cruelty and perfidy scarcely paralleled in the most barbarous ages, and totally unworthy  
4 the Head of a civilized nation.

5 He has constrained our fellow Citizens taken Captive on the high Seas to bear Arms against their Country, to become the  
6 executioners of their friends and Brethren, or to fall themselves by their Hands.

7 He has excited domestic insurrections amongst us, and has endeavoured to bring on the inhabitants of our frontiers, the  
8 merciless Indian Savages, whose known rule of warfare is an undistinguished destruction of all ages, sexes and conditions.

9 In every stage of these Oppressions We have Petitioned for Redress in the most humble terms. Our repeated Petitions have  
10 been answered only by repeated injury. A Prince, whose character is thus marked by every act which may define a Tyrant, is  
11 unfit to be the ruler of a free people.

12 Nor have We been wanting in attentions to our British brethren.

13 We have warned them from time to time of attempts by their legislature to extend an unwarrantable jurisdiction over us.

14 We have reminded them of the circumstances of our emigration and settlement here.

15 We have appealed to their native justice and magnanimity, and we have conjured them by the ties of our common kindred to  
16 disavow these usurpations, which would inevitably interrupt our connections and correspondence.

17 They too have been deaf to the voice of justice and of consanguinity. We must, therefore, acquiesce in the necessity, which  
18 denounces our Separation, and hold them, as we hold the rest of mankind, Enemies in War, in Peace Friends.

## 19 **10.8 Appeal to the Supreme Judge of the world**

20 We, therefore, the Representatives of the United States of America, in General Congress, Assembled, appealing to the  
21 Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the Name, and by the authority of the good People of  
22 these Colonies, solemnly publish and declare.

23 That these United Colonies are, and of Right ought to be Free and Independent States; that they are Absolved from all  
24 Allegiance to the British Crown, and that all political connection between them and the State of Great Britain is and ought to  
25 be totally dissolved; and that as Free and Independent States, they have full Power to levy War, conclude Peace, contract  
26 Alliances, establish Commerce, and to do all other Acts and Things which Independent States may of right do.

## 27 **10.9 A heavenly banner**

28 And for the support of this Declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to  
29 each other our Lives, our Fortunes, and our sacred Honor.

30 The signers of the Declaration represented the new States as follows:

31 New Hampshire: *Josiah Bartlett, William Whipple, Matthew Thornton*

32 Massachusetts: *John Hancock, Samuel Adams, John Adams, Robert Treat Paine, Elbridge Gerry*

33 Rhode Island: *Stephen Hopkins, William Ellery*

34 Connecticut: *Roger Sherman, Samuel Huntington, William Williams, Oliver Wolcott*

35 New York: *William Floyd, Philip Livingston, Francis Lewis, Lewis Morris*

- 1 New Jersey: *Richard Stockton, John Witherspoon, Francis Hopkinson, John Hart, Abraham Clark*
- 2 Pennsylvania: *Robert Morris, Benjamin Rush, Benjamin Franklin, John Morton, George Clymer, James Smith, George*  
3 *Taylor, James Wilson, George Ross*
- 4 Delaware: *Caesar Rodney, George Read, Thomas McKean*
- 5 Maryland: *Samuel Chase, William Paca, Thomas Stone, Charles Carroll of Carrollton*
- 6 Virginia: *George Wythe, Richard Henry Lee, Thomas Jefferson, Benjamin Harrison, Thomas Nelson, Jr., Francis Lightfoot*  
7 *Lee, Carter Braxton*
- 8 North Carolina: *William Hooper, Joseph Hewes, John Penn*
- 9 South Carolina: *Edward Rutledge, Thomas Heyward, Jr., Thomas Lynch, Jr., Arthur Middleton*
- 10 Georgia: *Button Gwinnett, Lyman Hall, George Walton*

# 11 Chapter 11: The Constitution - A Glorious Standard

## 11.1 Introduction

## 11.2 A presidential candidate speaks

In January of 1844 a statement was issued to the world that Joseph Smith of Illinois was a candidate for President of the United States. He organized a political party, sent his supporters forth throughout America disseminating his views of the power and policy of the government of the United States.

## 11.3 A nation of kings and priests

Herein are excerpts from that message:

*"I would not have suffered my name to have been used by my friends on anywise as President of the United States or candidate for that office, if I and my friends could have had the privilege of enjoying our religious and civil rights as American citizens, even those rights which the constitution guarantees unto all her citizens alike. But this we as a people have been denied from the beginning. Persecution has rolled upon our heads from time to time from portions of the United States, like peals of thunder, because of our religion; and no portion of the government as yet has stepped forward for our relief. And under view of these things, I feel it to be my right and privilege to obtain what influence and power I can, lawfully, in the United States, for the protection of injured innocence; and if I lose my life in a good cause, \* I am willing to be sacrificed on the altar of virtue, righteousness and truth, in maintaining the laws and Constitution of the United States, if need be, for the general good of mankind.*

*"My cogitations, like Daniel's, have for a long time troubled me, when I viewed the condition of men throughout the world, and more especially in this boasted realm, where the Declaration of Independence 'holds these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal; that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness,' but at the same time some two or three millions of people are held as slaves for life, because the spirit of them is covered with a darker skin than ours; and hundreds of our own kindred for an infraction, or supposed infraction, of some otherwise statute, have to be incarcerated in dungeon glooms,...while the duelist, the debauchee, and the defaulter for millions and other criminals, take the uppermost rooms at feasts, or, like the bird of passage, find a more congenial clime by flight.*

*"The wisdom which ought to characterize the freest, wisest and most noble nation of the nineteenth century, should, like the sun in its meridian splendor, warm every object beneath its rays; and in main efforts of her officers, who are nothing more or less than the servants of the people...*

*"Now, O people! people! turn unto the Lord and live, and reform this nation. Frustrate the designs of wicked men. Reduce Congress at least two-thirds. Two senators from a state and two members to a million of population will do more business than the army that now occupy the halls of the national legislature. Pay them two dollars and their board per diem (except Sundays). That is more than the farmer gets, and he lives honestly. Curtail the officers of the government in pay, number and power; for the Philistine lords have shorn our nation of its goodly locks in the lap of Delilah...*

*"Petition, also, ye goodly inhabitants of the slave states, your legislators to abolish slavery by the year 1850, or now, and save the abolitionist from reproach and ruin, infamy and shame.*

*"Pray Congress to pay every man a reasonable price for his slaves out of the surplus revenue arising from the sale of public lands and from the deduction of pay from the members of Congress.*

*"Break off the shackles from the poor black man, and hire him to labor like other human beings; for 'an hour of virtuous liberty on earth is worth a whole eternity of bondage.'" Abolish the practice in the army and navy of trying men by court-martial for desertion. If a soldier or marine runs away, send him his wages, with this instruction, that his country will never trust him again; he has forfeited his honor.*

1 *"Make honor the standard with all men. Be sure that good is rendered for evil in all cases, **and the***  
2 ***whole nation, like a kingdom of kings and priests, will rise up in righteousness, and be respected as***  
3 *wise and worthy on earth, and as just and holy for heaven, by Jehovah, the author of perfection.*

4 *"More economy in the national and state governments would make less taxes among the people; more*  
5 *equality through the cities, towns and country, would make less distinction among the people... The very*  
6 *name of "American" is fraught with friendship. Oh, then, create confidence! Restore freedom! Break*  
7 *down slavery! Banish imprisonment for debt... Remember that honesty is not subject to law: the law*  
8 *was made for transgressors...*

9 *"We have had Democratic presidents, Whig presidents, a pseudo-Democratic-Whig president, and now*  
10 *it is time to have a President of the United States..."*

11 Joseph Smith was well acquainted with tyranny. In 1838-39 he spent several months incarcerated in the dungeon of a jail  
12 ironically named "Liberty" jail at "Independence" Missouri. While jailed there he penned the following statement:

13 *"Hence we say, that the Constitution of the United States is a **glorious standard**; it is founded in the*  
14 *wisdom of God. It is a heavenly banner; it is to all those who are privileged with the sweets of liberty,*  
15 *like the cooling shades and refreshing waters of a great rock in a thirsty and weary land. It is like a*  
16 *great tree under whose branches men from every clime can be shielded from the burning rays of the*  
17 *sun.*

18 *"We, brethren, are deprived of the protection of its glorious principles, by the cruelty of the cruel, by*  
19 *those who only look for the time being, for pasturage like the beasts of the field, only to fill themselves;*  
20 *and forget that the "Mormons," as well as the Presbyterians, and those of every other class and*  
21 *description, have equal rights to partake of the fruits of the great tree of our national liberty. But*  
22 *notwithstanding we see what we see, and feel what we feel, and know what we know, yet that fruit is no*  
23 *less precious and delicious to our taste; we cannot be weaned from the milk, neither can we be driven*  
24 *from the breast; neither will we deny our religion because of the hand of oppression; but we will hold*  
25 *on until death.*

26 *"We say that God is true; that the Constitution of the United States is true; that the Bible is true; that*  
27 *the Book of Mormon is true; that the Book of Covenants is true; that Christ is true; that the ministering*  
28 *angels sent forth from God are true..."*

29 In June of 1844 Joseph Smith spoke to a vast assemblage and stated, "We are American citizens. We live upon a soil, for the  
30 liberties of which our fathers periled their lives and spilt their blood upon the battle-field. Those rights, so dearly purchased,  
31 shall not be disgracefully trodden under foot by lawless marauders without at least a noble effort on our part to sustain our  
32 liberties." It was his last public address. On June 27, in the year of our Lord 1844, he became the first candidate for the  
33 President of the United States of America to be assassinated.

34 \* \* \* \* \*

35 We Sovereigns hold, by the blood of our Forefathers, by the words and deeds of minorities and majorities of generations of  
36 Americans, that the *Constitution of the United States* of America is a sacred document. We hereby reprint that **Holy Writ** for  
37 humble and diligent consideration, and call upon Freemen everywhere to help us, in our quest as Sovereigns, to restore the  
38 *Constitution and Bill of Rights* to force and effect... so help us God.

## 39 **11.4 The Constitution of the United States of America**

### 40 **11.4.1 Preamble**

41 We the People of the United States, in Order to form a more perfect Union, establish Justice, insure domestic Tranquility,  
42 provide for the common defence, promote the general Welfare, and secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our  
43 Posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America.

## 1 **11.4.2 Article. I.**

2 Section. 1. All legislative Powers herein granted shall be vested in a Congress of the United States, which shall consist of a  
3 Senate and House of Representatives.

4 Section. 2. The House of Representatives shall be composed of Members chosen every second Year by the People of the  
5 several States, and the Electors in each State shall have the Qualifications requisite for Electors of the most numerous Branch  
6 of the State Legislature.

7 No Person shall be a Representative who shall not have attained to the Age of twenty five Years, and been seven Years a  
8 Citizen of the United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an Inhabitant of that State in which he shall be chosen.

9 Representatives and direct Taxes shall be apportioned among the several States which may be included within this Union,  
10 according to their respective Numbers, which shall be determined by adding to the whole Number of free Persons, including  
11 those bound to Service for a Term of Years, and excluding Indians not taxed, three fifths of all other Persons [Modified by  
12 Amendment XIV]. The actual Enumeration shall be made within three Years after the first Meeting of the Congress of the  
13 United States, and within every subsequent Term of ten Years, in such Manner as they shall by Law direct. The Number of  
14 Representatives shall not exceed one for every thirty Thousand, but each State shall have at Least one Representative; and  
15 until such enumeration shall be made, the State of New Hampshire shall be entitled to chuse three, Massachusetts eight,  
16 Rhode Island and Providence Plantations one, Connecticut five, New York six, New Jersey four, Pennsylvania eight,  
17 Delaware one, Maryland six, Virginia ten, North Carolina five, South Carolina five, and Georgia three.

18 When vacancies happen in the Representation from any State, the Executive Authority thereof shall issue Writs of Election  
19 to fill such Vacancies.

20 The House of Representatives shall chuse their Speaker and other Officers; and shall have the sole Power of Impeachment.

21 Section. 3. The Senate of the United States shall be composed of two Senators from each State, chosen by the Legislature  
22 thereof for six Years; and each Senator shall have one Vote.

23 Immediately after they shall be assembled in Consequence of the first Election, they shall be divided as equally as may be  
24 into three Classes. The Seats of the Senators of the first Class shall be vacated at the Expiration of the second Year, of the  
25 second Class at the Expiration of the fourth Year, and of the third Class at the Expiration of the sixth Year, so that one third  
26 may be chosen every second Year; and if Vacancies happen by Resignation, or otherwise, during the Recess of the Legislature  
27 of any State, the Executive thereof may make temporary Appointments until the next Meeting of the Legislature, which shall  
28 then fill such Vacancies.

29 No Person shall be a Senator who shall not have attained to the Age of thirty Years, and been nine Years a Citizen of the  
30 United States, and who shall not, when elected, be an Inhabitant of that State for which he shall be chosen.

31 The Vice President of the United States shall be President of the Senate, but shall have no Vote, unless they be equally  
32 divided.

33 The Senate shall chuse their other Officers, and also a President pro tempore, in the Absence of the Vice President, or when  
34 he shall exercise the Office of President of the United States.

35 The Senate shall have the sole Power to try all Impeachments. When sitting for that Purpose, they shall be on Oath or  
36 Affirmation. When the President of the United States is tried, the Chief Justice shall preside: And no Person shall be convicted  
37 without the Concurrence of two thirds of the Members present.

38 Judgment in Cases of Impeachment shall not extend further than to removal from Office, and disqualification to hold and  
39 enjoy any Office of honor, Trust or Profit under the United States: but the Party convicted shall nevertheless be liable and  
40 subject to Indictment, Trial, Judgment and Punishment, according to Law.

1 Section. 4. The Times, Places and Manner of holding Elections for Senators and Representatives, shall be prescribed in each  
2 State by the Legislature thereof; but the Congress may at any time by Law make or alter such Regulations, except as to the  
3 Places of chusing Senators.

4 The Congress shall assemble at least once in every Year, and such Meeting shall be on the first Monday in December unless  
5 they shall by Law appoint a different Day.

6 Section. 5. Each House shall be the Judge of the Elections, Returns and Qualifications of its own Members, and a Majority  
7 of each shall constitute a Quorum to do Business; but a smaller Number may adjourn from day to day, and may be authorized  
8 to compel the Attendance of absent Members, in such Manner, and under such Penalties as each House may provide.

9 Each House may determine the Rules of its Proceedings, punish its Members for disorderly Behaviour, and, with the  
10 Concurrence of two thirds, expel a Member.

11 Each House shall keep a Journal of its Proceedings, and from time to time publish the same, excepting such Parts as may in  
12 their Judgment require Secrecy; and the Yeas and Nays of the Members of either House on any question shall, at the Desire  
13 of one fifth of those Present, be entered on the Journal.

14 Neither House, during the Session of Congress, shall, without the Consent of the other, adjourn for more than three days, nor  
15 to any other Place than that in which the two Houses shall be sitting.

16 Section. 6. The Senators and Representatives shall receive a Compensation for their Services, to be ascertained by Law, and  
17 paid out of the Treasury of the United States. They shall in all Cases, except Treason, Felony and Breach of the Peace, be  
18 privileged from Arrest during their Attendance at the Session of their respective Houses, and in going to and returning from  
19 the same; and for any Speech or Debate in either House, they shall not be questioned in any other Place.

20 No Senator or Representative shall, during the Time for which he was elected, be appointed to any civil Office under the  
21 Authority of the United States, which shall have been created, or the Emoluments whereof shall have been increased during  
22 such time; and no Person holding any Office under the United States, shall be a Member of either House during his  
23 Continuance in Office.

24 Section. 7. All Bills for raising Revenue shall originate in the House of Representatives; but the Senate may propose or concur  
25 with Amendments as on other Bills.

26 Every Bill which shall have passed the House of Representatives and the Senate, shall, before it become a Law, be presented  
27 to the President of the United States: If he approve he shall sign it, but if not he shall return it, with his Objections to that  
28 House in which it shall have originated, who shall enter the Objections at large on their Journal, and proceed to reconsider it.  
29 If after such Reconsideration two thirds of that House shall agree to pass the Bill, it shall be sent, together with the Objections,  
30 to the other House, by which it shall likewise be reconsidered, and if approved by two thirds of that House, it shall become a  
31 Law. But in all such Cases the Votes of both Houses shall be determined by yeas and Nays, and the Names of the Persons  
32 voting for and against the Bill shall be entered on the Journal of each House respectively. If any Bill shall not be returned by  
33 the President within ten Days (Sundays excepted) after it shall have been presented to him, the Same shall be a Law, in like  
34 Manner as if he had signed it, unless the Congress by their Adjournment prevent its Return, in which Case it shall not be a  
35 Law.

36 Every Order, Resolution, or Vote to which the Concurrence of the Senate and House of Representatives may be necessary  
37 (except on a question of Adjournment) shall be presented to the President of the United States; and before the Same shall  
38 take Effect, shall be approved by him, or being disapproved by him, shall be repassed by two thirds of the Senate and House  
39 of Representatives, according to the Rules and Limitations prescribed in the Case of a Bill.

40 Section. 8. The Congress shall have Power To lay and collect Taxes, Duties, Imposts and Excises, to pay the Debts and  
41 provide for the common Defence and general Welfare of the United States; but all Duties, Imposts and Excises shall be  
42 uniform throughout the United States;

43 To borrow Money on the credit of the United States;

- 1 To regulate Commerce with foreign Nations, and among the several States, and with the Indian Tribes;
- 2 To establish an uniform Rule of Naturalization, and uniform Laws on the subject of Bankruptcies throughout the United  
3 States;
- 4 To coin Money, regulate the Value thereof, and of foreign Coin, and fix the Standard of Weights and Measures;
- 5 To provide for the Punishment of counterfeiting the Securities and current Coin of the United States;
- 6 To establish Post Offices and post Roads;
- 7 To promote the Progress of Science and useful Arts, by securing for limited Times to Authors and Inventors the exclusive  
8 Right to their respective Writings and Discoveries;
- 9 To constitute Tribunals inferior to the supreme Court;
- 10 To define and punish Piracies and Felonies committed on the high Seas, and Offences against the Law of Nations;
- 11 To declare War, grant Letters of Marque and Reprisal, and make Rules concerning Captures on Land and Water;
- 12 To raise and support Armies, but no Appropriation of Money to that Use shall be for a longer Term than two Years;
- 13 To provide and maintain a Navy;
- 14 To make Rules for the Government and Regulation of the land and naval Forces;
- 15 To provide for calling forth the Militia to execute the Laws of the Union, suppress Insurrections and repel Invasions;
- 16 To provide for organizing, arming, and disciplining, the Militia, and for governing such Part of them as may be employed in  
17 the Service of the United States, reserving to the States respectively, the Appointment of the Officers, and the Authority of  
18 training the Militia according to the discipline prescribed by Congress;
- 19 To exercise exclusive Legislation in all Cases whatsoever, over such District (not exceeding ten Miles square) as may, by  
20 Cession of particular States, and the Acceptance of Congress, become the Seat of the Government of the United States, and  
21 to exercise like Authority over all Places purchased by the Consent of the Legislature of the State in which the Same shall  
22 be, for the Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, dock-Yards, and other needful Buildings; --And
- 23 To make all Laws which shall be necessary and proper for carrying into Execution the foregoing Powers, and all other Powers  
24 vested by this Constitution in the Government of the United States, or in any Department or Officer thereof.
- 25 Section. 9. The Migration or Importation of such Persons as any of the States now existing shall think proper to admit, shall  
26 not be prohibited by the Congress prior to the Year one thousand eight hundred and eight, but a Tax or duty may be imposed  
27 on such Importation, not exceeding ten dollars for each Person.
- 28 The Privilege of the Writ of Habeas Corpus shall not be suspended, unless when in Cases of Rebellion or Invasion the public  
29 Safety may require it.
- 30 No Bill of Attainder or ex post facto Law shall be passed.
- 31 No Capitation, or other direct, Tax shall be laid, unless in Proportion to the Census or Enumeration herein before directed to  
32 be taken.
- 33 No Tax or Duty shall be laid on Articles exported from any State.

1 No Preference shall be given by any Regulation of Commerce or Revenue to the Ports of one State over those of another; nor  
2 shall Vessels bound to, or from, one State, be obliged to enter, clear, or pay Duties in another.

3 No Money shall be drawn from the Treasury, but in Consequence of Appropriations made by Law; and a regular Statement  
4 and Account of the Receipts and Expenditures of all public Money shall be published from time to time.

5 No Title of Nobility shall be granted by the United States: And no Person holding any Office of Profit or Trust under them,  
6 shall, without the Consent of the Congress, accept of any present, Emolument, Office, or Title, of any kind whatever, from  
7 any King, Prince, or foreign State.

8 Section. 10. No State shall enter into any Treaty, Alliance, or Confederation; grant Letters of Marque and Reprisal; coin  
9 Money; emit Bills of Credit; make any Thing but gold and silver Coin a Tender in Payment of Debts; pass any Bill of  
10 Attainder, ex post facto Law, or Law impairing the Obligation of Contracts, or grant any Title of Nobility.

11 No State shall, without the Consent of the Congress, lay any Imposts or Duties on Imports or Exports, except what may be  
12 absolutely necessary for executing it's inspection Laws; and the net Produce of all Duties and Imposts, laid by any State on  
13 Imports or Exports, shall be for the Use of the Treasury of the United States; and all such Laws shall be subject to the Revision  
14 and Control of the Congress.

15 No State shall, without the Consent of Congress, lay any Duty of Tonnage, keep Troops, or Ships of War in time of Peace,  
16 enter into any Agreement or Compact with another State, or with a foreign Power, or engage in War, unless actually invaded,  
17 or in such imminent Danger as will not admit of delay.

### 18 **11.4.3 Article. II.**

19 Section. 1. The executive Power shall be vested in a President of the United States of America. He shall hold his Office during  
20 the Term of four Years, and, together with the Vice President, chosen for the same Term, be elected, as follows:

21 Each State shall appoint, in such Manner as the Legislature thereof may direct, a Number of Electors, equal to the whole  
22 Number of Senators and Representatives to which the State may be entitled in the Congress: but no Senator or Representative,  
23 or Person holding an Office of Trust or Profit under the United States, shall be appointed an Elector.

24 The Electors shall meet in their respective States, and vote by Ballot for two Persons, of whom one at least shall not be an  
25 Inhabitant of the same State with themselves. And they shall make a List of all the Persons voted for, and of the Number of  
26 Votes for each; which List they shall sign and certify, and transmit sealed to the Seat of the Government of the United States,  
27 directed to the President of the Senate. The President of the Senate shall, in the Presence of the Senate and House of  
28 Representatives, open all the Certificates, and the Votes shall then be counted. The Person having the greatest Number of  
29 Votes shall be the President, if such Number be a Majority of the whole Number of Electors appointed; and if there be more  
30 than one who have such Majority, and have an equal Number of Votes, then the House of Representatives shall immediately  
31 chuse by Ballot one of them for President; and if no Person have a Majority, then from the five highest on the List the said  
32 House shall in like Manner chuse the President. But in chusing the President, the Votes shall be taken by States, the  
33 Representation from each State having one Vote; a quorum for this Purpose shall consist of a Member or Members from two  
34 thirds of the States, and a Majority of all the States shall be necessary to a Choice. In every Case, after the Choice of the  
35 President, the Person having the greatest Number of Votes of the Electors shall be the Vice President. But if there should  
36 remain two or more who have equal Votes, the Senate shall chuse from them by Ballot the Vice President Congress may  
37 determine the Time of chusing the Electors, and the Day on which they shall give their Votes; which Day shall be the same  
38 throughout the United States.

39 No Person except a natural born Citizen, or a Citizen of the United States, at the time of the Adoption of this Constitution,  
40 shall be eligible to the Office of President; neither shall any Person be eligible to that Office who shall not have attained to  
41 the Age of thirty five Years, and been fourteen Years a Resident within the United States.

42 In Case of the Removal of the President from Office, or of his Death, Resignation, or Inability to discharge the Powers and  
43 Duties of the said Office, the Same shall devolve on the Vice President, and the Congress may by Law provide for the Case

1 of Removal, Death, Resignation or Inability, both of the President and Vice President, declaring what Officer shall then act  
2 as President, and such Officer shall act accordingly, until the Disability be removed, or a President shall be elected.

3 The President shall, at stated Times, receive for his Services, a Compensation, which shall neither be increased nor diminished  
4 during the Period for which he shall have been elected, and he shall not receive within that Period any other Emolument from  
5 the United States, or any of them.

6 Before he enter on the Execution of his Office, he shall take the following Oath or Affirmation:-"I do solemnly swear (or  
7 affirm) that I will faithfully execute the Office of President of the United States, and will to the best of my Ability, preserve,  
8 protect and defend the Constitution of the United States."

9 Section. 2. The President shall be Commander in Chief of the Army and Navy of the United States, and of the Militia of the  
10 several States, when called into the actual Service of the United States; he may require the Opinion, in writing, of the principal  
11 Officer in each of the executive Departments, upon any Subject relating to the Duties of their respective Offices, and he shall  
12 have Power to grant Reprieves and Pardons for Offences against the United States, except in Cases of Impeachment.

13 He shall have Power, by and with the Advice and Consent of the Senate, to make Treaties, provided two thirds of the Senators  
14 present concur; and he shall nominate, and by and with the Advice and Consent of the Senate, shall appoint Ambassadors,  
15 other public Ministers and Consuls, Judges of the supreme Court, and all other Officers of the United States, whose  
16 Appointments are not herein otherwise provided for, and which shall be established by Law: but the Congress may by Law  
17 vest the Appointment of such inferior Officers, as they think proper, in the President alone, in the Courts of Law, or in the  
18 Heads of Departments.

19 The President shall have Power to fill up all Vacancies that may happen during the Recess of the Senate, by granting  
20 Commissions which shall expire at the End of their next Session.

21 Section. 3. He shall from time to time give to the Congress Information of the State of the Union, and recommend to their  
22 Consideration such Measures as he shall judge necessary and expedient; he may, on extraordinary Occasions, convene both  
23 Houses, or either of them, and in Case of Disagreement between them, with Respect to the Time of Adjournment, he may  
24 adjourn them to such Time as he shall think proper; he shall receive Ambassadors and other public Ministers; he shall take  
25 Care that the Laws be faithfully executed, and shall Commission all the Officers of the United States.

26 Section. 4. The President, Vice President and all civil Officers of the United States, shall be removed from Office on  
27 Impeachment for, and Conviction of, Treason, Bribery, or other high Crimes and Misdemeanors.

28 **11.4.4 Article. III.**

29 Section. 1. The judicial Power of the United States shall be vested in one supreme Court, and in such inferior Courts as the  
30 Congress may from time to time ordain and establish. The Judges, both of the supreme and inferior Courts, shall hold their  
31 Offices during good Behaviour, and shall, at stated Times, receive for their Services a Compensation, which shall not be  
32 diminished during their Continuance in Office.

33 Section. 2. The judicial Power shall extend to all Cases, in Law and Equity, arising under this Constitution, the Laws of the  
34 United States, and Treaties made, or which shall be made, under their Authority;-to all Cases affecting Ambassadors, other  
35 public Ministers and Consuls;-to all Cases of admiralty and maritime Jurisdiction;-to Controversies to which the United States  
36 shall be a Party;-to Controversies between two or more States;-between a State and Citizens of another State -between  
37 Citizens of different States;-between Citizens of the same State claiming Lands under Grants of different States, and between  
38 a State, or the Citizens thereof, and foreign States, Citizens or Subjects.

39 In all Cases affecting Ambassadors, other public Ministers and Consuls, and those in which a State shall be Party, the supreme  
40 Court shall have original Jurisdiction. In all the other Cases before mentioned, the supreme Court shall have appellate  
41 Jurisdiction, both as to Law and Fact, with such Exceptions, and under such Regulations as the Congress shall make.

1 The Trial of all Crimes, except in Cases of Impeachment, shall be by Jury; and such Trial shall be held in the State where the  
2 said Crimes shall have been committed; but when not committed within any State, the Trial shall be at such Place or Places  
3 as the Congress may by Law have directed.

4 Section. 3. Treason against the United States shall consist only in levying War against them, or in adhering to their Enemies,  
5 giving them Aid and Comfort. No Person shall be convicted of Treason unless on the Testimony of two Witnesses to the  
6 same overt Act, or on Confession in open Court.

7 The Congress shall have Power to declare the Punishment of Treason, but no Attainder of Treason shall work Corruption of  
8 Blood, or Forfeiture except during the Life of the Person attainted.

#### 9 **11.4.5 Article. IV.**

10 Section. 1. Full Faith and Credit shall be given in each State to the public Acts, Records, and judicial Proceedings of every  
11 other State. And the Congress may by general Laws prescribe the Manner in which such Acts, Records and Proceedings shall  
12 be proved, and the Effect thereof.

13 Section. 2. The Citizens of each State shall be entitled to all Privileges and Immunities of Citizens in the several States.

14 A Person charged in any State with Treason, Felony, or other Crime, who shall flee from Justice, and be found in another  
15 State, shall on Demand of the executive Authority of the State from which he fled, be delivered up, to be removed to the State  
16 having Jurisdiction of the Crime.

17 No Person held to Service or Labour in one State, under the Laws thereof, escaping into another, shall, in Consequence of  
18 any Law or Regulation therein, be discharged from such Service or Labour, but shall be delivered up on Claim of the Party  
19 to whom such Service or Labour may be due.

20 Section. 3. New States may be admitted by the Congress into this Union; but no new State shall be formed or erected within  
21 the Jurisdiction of any other State; nor any State be formed by the Junction of two or more States, or Parts of States, without  
22 the Consent of the Legislatures of the States concerned as well as of the Congress.

23 The Congress shall have Power to dispose of and make all needful Rules and Regulations respecting the Territory or other  
24 Property belonging to the United States; and nothing in this Constitution shall be so construed as to Prejudice any Claims of  
25 the United States, or of any particular State.

26 Section. 4. The United States shall guarantee to every State in this Union a Republican Form of Government, and shall protect  
27 each of them against Invasion; and on Application of the Legislature, or of the Executive (when the Legislature cannot be  
28 convened), against domestic Violence.

#### 29 **11.4.6 Article. V.**

30 The Congress, whenever two thirds of both Houses shall deem it necessary, shall propose Amendments to this Constitution,  
31 or, on the Application of the Legislatures of two thirds of the several States, shall call a Convention for proposing  
32 Amendments, which, in either Case, shall be valid to all Intents and Purposes, as Part of this Constitution, when ratified by  
33 the Legislatures of three fourths of the several States, or by Conventions in three fourths thereof, as the one or the other Mode  
34 of Ratification may be proposed by the Congress; Provided that no Amendment which may be made prior to the Year One  
35 thousand eight hundred and eight shall in any Manner affect the first and fourth Clauses in the Ninth Section of the first  
36 Article; and that no State, without its Consent, shall be deprived of its equal Suffrage in the Senate.

#### 37 **11.4.7 Article. VI.**

38 All Debts contracted and Engagements entered into, before the Adoption of this Constitution, shall be as valid against the  
39 United States under this Constitution, as under the Confederation.

1 This Constitution, and the Laws of the United States which shall be made in Pursuance thereof; and all Treaties made, or  
2 which shall be made, under the Authority of the United States, shall be the supreme Law of the Land; and the Judges in every  
3 State shall be bound thereby, any Thing in the Constitution or Laws of any State to the Contrary notwithstanding.

4 The Senators and Representatives before mentioned, and the Members of the several State Legislatures, and all executive and  
5 judicial Officers, both of the United States and of the several States, shall be bound by Oath or Affirmation, to support this  
6 Constitution; but no religious Test shall ever be required as a Qualification to any Office or public Trust under the United  
7 States.

## 8 **11.4.8 Article. VII.**

9 The Ratification of the Conventions of nine States, shall be sufficient for the Establishment of this Constitution between the  
10 States so ratifying the Same.

11 The Word, "the," being interlined between the seventh and eighth Lines of the first Page, The Word "Thirty" being partly  
12 written on an Erazure in the fifteenth Line of the first Page, The Words "is tried" being interlined between the thirty second  
13 and thirty third Lines of the first Page and the Word "the" being interlined between the forty third and forty fourth Lines of  
14 the second Page.

15 Attest William Jackson  
16 Secretary

17 Done in Convention by the Unanimous Consent of the States present the Seventeenth Day of September **in the Year of our**  
18 **Lord** one thousand seven hundred and Eighty seven and of the Independence of the United States of America the Twelfth  
19 In witness whereof We have hereunto subscribed our Names,

20 Go. WASHINGTON-Presidt. and deputy from Virginia

21 New Hampshire

- 22 • JOHN LANGDON
- 23 • NICHOLAS GILMAN

24 Connecticut

- 25 • WM. SAML. JOHNSON
- 26 • ROGER SHERMAN

27 New Jersey

- 28 • WIL: LIVINGSTON
- 29 • DAVID BREARLEY.
- 30 • WM. PATERSON.
- 31 • JONA: DAYTON

32 Delaware

- 33 • GEO: READ
- 34 • GUNNING BEDFORD jun
- 35 • JOHN DICKINSON
- 36 • RICHARD BASSETT
- 37 • JACO: BROOM

38 Virginia

- 1       • JOHN BLAIR  
2       • JAMES MADISON Jr.  
3       • HU WILLIAMSON

4       South Carolina

- 5       • CHARLES COTESWORTH PINCKNEY  
6       • CHARLES PINCKNEY  
7       • PIERCE BUTLER

8       Massachusetts

- 9       • NATHANIEL GORHAM  
10      • RUFUS KING

11      New York

- 12      • ALEXANDER HAMILTON

13      Pennsylvania

- 14      • B FRANKLIN  
15      • THOMAS MIFFLIN  
16      • ROBT MORRIS  
17      • GEO. CLYMER  
18      • THOS. FITZSIMONS  
19      • JARED INGERSOLL  
20      • JAMES WILSON  
21      • GOUV MORRIS

22      Maryland

- 23      • JAMES MCHENRY  
24      • DAN OF ST THOS. JENIFER  
25      • DANL CARROLL

26      North Carolina

- 27      • WM. BLOUNT  
28      • RICHD. DOBBS SPAIGHT  
29      • J. RUTLEDGE

30      Georgia

- 31      • WILLIAM FEW  
32      • ABR BALDWIN

33      In Convention Monday, September 17th, 1787.

34      Present The States of

35      New Hampshire, Massachusetts, Connecticut, MR. Hamilton from New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware,  
36      Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia.

1 Resolved,

2 That the preceding Constitution be laid before the United States in Congress assembled, and that it is the Opinion of this  
3 Convention, that it should afterwards be submitted to a Convention of Delegates, chosen in each State by the People thereof,  
4 under the Recommendation of its Legislature, for their Assent and Ratification; and that each Convention assenting to, and  
5 ratifying the Same, should give Notice thereof to the United States in Congress assembled. Resolved, That it is the Opinion  
6 of this Convention, that as soon as the Conventions of nine States shall have ratified this Constitution, the United States in  
7 Congress assembled should fix a Day on which Electors should be appointed by the States which have ratified the same, and  
8 a Day on which the Electors should assemble to vote for the President, and the Time and Place for commencing Proceedings  
9 under this Constitution. That after such Publication the Electors should be appointed, and the Senators and Representatives  
10 elected: That the Electors should meet on the Day fixed for the Election of the President, and should transmit their Votes  
11 certified, signed, sealed and directed, as the Constitution requires, to the Secretary of the United States in Congress assembled,  
12 that the Senators and Representatives should convene at the Time and Place assigned; that the Senators should appoint a  
13 President of the Senate, for the sole purpose of receiving, opening and counting the Votes for President; and, that after he  
14 shall be chosen, the Congress, together with the President, should, without Delay, proceed to execute this Constitution.

15 By the Unanimous Order of the Convention  
16 Go. WASHINGTON-President.  
17 W. JACKSON Secretary.

1 **12 Chapter 12: The Bill of Rights**

2 The Bill of Rights

3 Congress of the United States begun and held at the City of New-York, on Wednesday the Fourth of March, one thousand  
4 seven hundred and eighty nine.

5 THE Conventions of a number of the States having at the time of their adopting the Constitution, expressed a desire, in order  
6 to prevent misconstruction or abuse of its powers, that further declaratory and restrictive clauses should be added: And as  
7 extending the ground of public confidence in the Government, will best insure the beneficent ends of its institution.

8 RESOLVED by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America, in Congress assembled, two thirds  
9 of both Houses concurring, that the following Articles be proposed to the Legislatures of the several States, as Amendments  
10 to the *Constitution of the United States*, all or any of which Articles, when ratified by three fourths of the said Legislatures,  
11 to be valid to all intents and purposes, as part of the said Constitution; viz.:

12 ARTICLES in addition to, and Amendment of the *Constitution of the United States of America*, proposed by Congress, and  
13 ratified by the Legislatures of the several States, pursuant to the fifth Article of the original Constitution.

14 **12.1 Amendment I**

15 Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or abridging  
16 the freedom of speech, or of the press; or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for  
17 a redress of grievances.

18 **12.2 Amendment II**

19 A well regulated Militia, being necessary to the security of a free State, the right of the people to keep and bear Arms, shall  
20 not be infringed.

21 **12.3 Amendment III**

22 No Soldier shall, in time of peace be quartered in any house, without the consent of the Owner, nor in time of war, but in a  
23 manner to be prescribed by law.

24 **12.4 Amendment IV**

25 The right of the people to be secure in their persons, houses, papers, and effects, against unreasonable searches and seizures,  
26 shall not be violated, and no Warrants shall issue, but upon probable cause, supported by Oath or affirmation, and particularly  
27 describing the place to be searched, and the persons or things to be seized.

28 **12.5 Amendment V**

29 No person shall be held to answer for a capital, or otherwise infamous crime, unless on a presentment or indictment of a  
30 Grand Jury, except in cases arising in the land or naval forces, or in the Militia, when in actual service in time of War or  
31 public danger; nor shall any person be subject for the same offence to be twice put in jeopardy of life or limb; nor shall be  
32 compelled in any criminal case to be a witness against himself, nor be deprived of life, liberty, or property, without due  
33 process of law; nor shall private property be taken for public use, without just compensation.

34 **12.6 Amendment VI**

35 In all criminal prosecutions, the accused shall enjoy the right to a speedy and public trial, by an impartial jury of the State  
36 and district wherein the crime shall have been committed, which district shall have been previously ascertained by law, and

1 to be informed of the nature and cause of the accusation; to be confronted with the witnesses against him; to have compulsory  
2 process for obtaining witnesses in his favor, and to have the Assistance of Counsel for his defence.

3 **12.7 Amendment VII**

4 In Suits at common law, where the value in controversy shall exceed twenty dollars, the right of trial by jury shall be  
5 preserved, and no fact tried by a jury, shall be otherwise re-examined in any Court of the United States, than according to the  
6 rules of the common law.

7 **12.8 Amendment VIII**

8 Excessive bail shall not be required, nor excessive fines imposed, nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted.

9 **12.9 Amendment IX**

10 The enumeration in the Constitution, of certain rights, shall not be construed to deny or disparage others retained by the  
11 people.

12 **12.10 Amendment X**

13 The powers not delegated to the United States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States  
14 respectively, or to the people.

15 ATTEST: Frederick Augustus Muhlenberg, Speaker of the House of Representatives

## 13 Chapter 13: "Welfare"... Theft of a Nation

"Welfare"... Theft of a Nation

By Christopher Holloman Hansen

This is not a story about the abuses of Aid to Dependent Children, Medicare, Medicaid, Social Security, Food Stamps, unemployment compensation; federally subsidized housing or any of the other federal "Welfare" projects. This is a story about a most diabolical yet ingenious plan. It is about a conspiracy to steal an entire form of republican government based on liberty and individual responsibility and changes it into a socialistic oligarchy. It is about the theft of Christian duty through love and charity by a Satanic plan of forced redistribution of wealth.

It is a story about "Verbicide" and the cold-blooded murder of the English tongue.

This is also a story about the violation of the real "wall of separation between church and state." It is socialism and hereditary bondage clothed in the guise of charity. It is a filthy satanic counterfeit of Christian duty. It is government-enforced slavery and theft sold to Americans at a time of government created desperation and depression that changed sovereign Americans into federal beneficiaries and therefore slaves.

We will herein discuss the history of how liberty was sacrificed on the Satanic alter of false security. How the word "welfare" gave foundation to a bloodless coup and this metamorphosis that has turned our God given Constitution into a worthless scrap of paper. This was done by simple verbicide and intentional usurpation of limited authority.

### 13.1 Verbicide

Verbicide is a relatively new English word. It means the murder of a word or its intentional misuse. It was first coined by the famous English author and Oxford professor C. S. Lewis, but its dangers have been recognized for millennia. Confucius circa 500 B.C. is reported to have said:

*"When words lose their meaning, people will lose their liberty."*

The foundation of this conspiracy is based on the verbicide of the phrase "general welfare" that the authors of the *anti-federalist papers* warned us about and that Plubius, (James Madison, *Federalist Papers*) said could not be misinterpreted. Madison said the anti-federalist arguments could "have no other effect than to confound and mislead" and that their warnings were an "absurdity." The United States Supreme Court in 1937 in *Helvering v. Davis*, 301 U.S. 619 embraced this "absurdity" by completely rejecting Madison's (the father of the Constitution) argument and turned a Constitution clearly establishing a limited Federal government into an oligarchical tyranny limited only by congressional interpretation of what was "necessary and proper" for the establishment of the "general welfare" and congressional rejection of the "**ancient phraseology**" replacing them with "**modern**" definitions.

Senator Sam Ervin, of Watergate hearing fame, understood this verbicide and its possible effects on law and the *Constitution*. He said:

*"[J]udicial verbicide is calculated to convert the Constitution into a worthless scrap of paper and to replace our government of laws with a judicial oligarchy."*

The presidential, congressional and judicial verbicide was so complete that not even the anti-federalists could have predicted the specific bastardization of the term. We believe that the changes were so subtle, so invidious, and spread out over such a long period of time that its only author could have been none other than Satan himself.

Oliver Wendell Holmes, Sr. understood the dangers of verbicide. He said:

*"Life and language are alike sacred. Homicide and verbicide-that is, violent treatment of a word with fatal results to its legitimate meaning, which is its life-are alike forbidden."*

1 How can the simple misuse of a word honestly be compared to homicide, a mortal sin? And what does this have to do with  
2 welfare and liberty? Men of legal understanding have long understood that the meaning of words in the law must be  
3 interpreted, as the authors of the law understood the words.

4 In a letter to Henry Lee, James Madison wrote:

5 *"I entirely concur in the propriety of resorting to the sense in which the Constitution was accepted and*  
6 *ratified by the nation. In that sense alone it is the legitimate Constitution... What a metamorphosis*  
7 *would be produced in the code of law if all its ancient phraseology were to be taken in the modern*  
8 *sense."*

9 In a letter to William Johnson, Thomas Jefferson echoed Madison's sentiments:

10 *"On every question of construction (of the Constitution) let us carry ourselves back to the time when*  
11 *the Constitution was adopted, recollect the spirit manifested in the debates, and instead of trying what*  
12 *meaning may be squeezed out of the text, or intended against it, conform to the probable one in which*  
13 *it was passed."*

14 The Founding Fathers understood the importance of language. Single words, their placement within the Constitution and  
15 even punctuation were debated. They also understood that the meanings of words could change or be maliciously and  
16 intentionally misinterpreted.

17 When modern Americans hear the word "welfare" most think of, "relating to, or concerned with welfare and esp. with  
18 improvement of the welfare of disadvantaged social groups" And "receiving public welfare benefits." (Merriam-Webster's  
19 10th Collegiate Dictionary)

## 20 **13.2 Definition of "welfare"**

21 That definition of "welfare" would have been unknown in 1776. Welfare was, in truth, the exact opposite of poor relief. If  
22 you have "welfare" today you would be on the government dole. If you had "welfare " in 1787 you had health, wealth and  
23 happiness. Such a system of government aid would only have been known as "poor relief" and a law requiring a tax to support  
24 "poor relief" would have been called a "poor law."

25 "Poor laws" were first enacted in England following the Reformation, and because of the loss of church property the  
26 government established the Elizabethan Poor Law of 1601. The Speenhamland System of 1785, continued on with the poor  
27 laws. It was a system of out-door relief contrived by the Berkshire Justices of the Peace meeting at Speenhamland. The  
28 Elizabethan Poor Laws provided the pattern for the poor laws in the American Colonies, and the original thirteen states.

29 There were other "poor laws" and poor reliefs of the time. None were ever called "welfare." Two of them were known as  
30 "*The Poor Law Amendment Act of 1834*," and the "*Formation of Dunganvan Poor Law Union - In 1838*"

31 Now let's take a look at the meaning of "welfare" and "general welfare" as the Founding Fathers understood them and their  
32 metamorphosis and verbicide.

33 "Welfare" is defined in Noah Webster's original 1828 Dictionary as:

34 *WEL'FARE, noun [well and fare, a good going; German wohlfahrt; Dutch welvaart; Swedish valfart;*  
35 *Danish velfoerd.]*  
36 *1. Exemption from misfortune, sickness, calamity or evil; the enjoyment of health and the common*  
37 *blessings of life; prosperity; happiness; applied to persons.*  
38 *2. Exemption from any unusual evil or calamity; the enjoyment of peace and prosperity, or the*  
39 *ordinary blessings of society and civil government; applied to states.*

40 Webster's Unabridged Dictionary comprised of the 1864, 1879 and 1884 issues updated and revised and published in 1904  
41 and the Revised 1913 edition defines "welfare" with no obvious substantial change in its meaning except that the distinction  
42 between "*applied to persons*" and "*applied to states*" has been removed. This is an important distinction as both of the

1 Constitution's "general Welfare" clauses are only "*applied to states*" and not "*persons*." The definitions of welfare is as  
2 follows:

3 1904 edition:

4 *Welfare, n. [Well + fare to go, to proceed, to happen.] Well-doing or well being in any respect; the*  
5 *enjoyment of health and the common blessings of life; exemption from any evil or calamity; prosperity;*  
6 *happiness.*

7 Webster's 1913 Revised Unabridged Dictionary:

8 *Wel"fare`, n. [Well + fare to go, to proceed, to happen.] Well-doing or well being in any respect; the*  
9 *enjoyment of health and the common blessings of life; exemption from any evil or calamity; prosperity;*  
10 *happiness.*

11 Government does such, as Social Security and Food Stamps were not even a part of the "welfare" definition. The term  
12 "Welfare work" is reported as first being mentioned in 1903 in Review of Reviews, stating:

13 *"The term 'industrial betterment', or 'welfare work,' is used in a wider sense to include all of those*  
14 *services which an employer may render to his work people over and above the payment of wages. It has*  
15 *even been used to include the provisions of homes for employees, kindergartens, schoolhouses [etc.]"*

16 Even this definition was not about government dole but private employment benefits.

### 17 **13.3 1904 Century Magazine**

18 Then in 1904 *Century Magazine* said:

19 *"The Welfare worker of a large retail establishment."*

20 This *Century Magazine* quote is recognized in Webster's 9th and 10th Collegiate Dictionaries.

21 *Welfare adj. (1904)*

22 *1: Of, relating to, or concerned with welfare and esp. with improvement of the welfare of*  
23 *disadvantaged social groups {~ legislation}*  
24 *2: Receiving public welfare benefits {~ mothers}*

25 And in Webster's 10th Collegiate Dictionary:

26 *welfare adj. (1904) 1:of, relating to, or concerned with welfare and esp. with improvement of the*  
27 *welfare of disadvantaged social groups {~legislation}.*  
28 *2: receiving public welfare benefits {~families}.*

29 Note again the subtle change from just mother's to families. The lie just grows and grows but only in very small almost  
30 imperceptible steps. It is also interesting to note that "welfare" has become an adjective. It had historically been a noun.

### 31 **13.4 Roosevelt's usurpation**

32 Franklin D. Roosevelt understood all of the above. He was a master of politics. He said:

33 *"In politics, nothing happens by accident. If it happens, it was planned that way."*

34 It was Roosevelt who, more than any other man in American history, used this verbicide so effectively to bypass the  
35 *Constitution* (he was sworn to uphold) and usurp authority by increasing federal power without properly amending the

1 *Constitution*. President Washington warned us in his *Farewell Address* that such usurpation is the customary weapon to  
2 destroy free governments:

3 "If in the opinion of the people the distribution or modification of the constitutional powers be in any particular wrong, let it  
4 be corrected by an amendment in the way which the *Constitution* designates. But let there be no change by usurpation; for  
5 though this in one instance may be the instrument of good, it is the customary weapon by which free governments are  
6 destroyed."

7 Let us look into the very act of usurpation as seen in *Helvering v. Davis*, 301 U.S. 619 USSC (1937).

8 The crash of 1929 was an intentionally created depression following the alleged adoption of the income tax and the anti-  
9 constitutional Federal Reserve. This is a demonstration of a manipulated power grab. First they claim there is a Constitutional  
10 question. Then they take unemployment from an individual problem and made it "general." Then they recognized that since  
11 this same problem, which now became general, is similar to the problems of old age and disability that Congress has the right  
12 to tax one segment to the population and give it to another because this will benefit the "general welfare." And just like that  
13 America became a Socialist State. Hereditary bondage was imposed. The *Constitution* became a "worthless scrap of paper"  
14 and Liberty was essentially lost because the World War II generation, unlike the Founding Fathers, were more concerned  
15 with their own temporary security than with the liberty of future generations.

16 Here is what the court said:

17 *"The purge of nation-wide calamity that began in 1929 has taught us many lessons. Not the least is the*  
18 *solidarity of interests that may once have seemed to be divided. ...Spreading from state to state,*  
19 *unemployment is an ill not particular but general, which may be checked, if Congress so determines,*  
20 *by the resources of the nation. If this can have been doubtful until now, our ruling today in the case of*  
21 *the Steward Machine Co., supra, has set the doubt at rest. But the ill is all one or at least not greatly*  
22 *different whether men are thrown out of work because there is no longer work to do or because the*  
23 *disabilities of age make them incapable of doing it. Rescue becomes necessary irrespective of the*  
24 *cause. The hope behind this statute is to save men and women from the rigors of the poor house as well*  
25 *as from the haunting fear that such a lot awaits them when journey's end is near.*

26 *"When money is spent to promote the general welfare, the concept of welfare or the opposite is shaped*  
27 *by Congress, not the states. So the concept be not arbitrary, the locality must yield."*

### 28 **13.5 Concept of welfare**

29 They changed the original meaning of welfare and established, what would have been unimaginable to the Founding  
30 Fathers, a Welfare State, and then encroached on State's rights all in two short rulings on the same day. (USSC May 24,  
31 1937: *Steward Machine Co., supra* and *Helvering v. Davis*)

32 The following Court stated clearly what the Congress; the usurper President Franklin D. Roosevelt and a traitorous  
33 Supreme Court did concerning welfare:

34 *State vs. Sutton*, 63 Minn. 147, 65 NW 262, 30 L.R.A. 630 Am. St. 459: "When any court violates the clean and  
35 unambiguous language of the Constitution, a fraud is perpetrated and no one is bound to obey it." (See 16 Ma. Jur. 2d 177,  
36 178)

### 37 **13.6 "absurdity"**

38 The Supreme Court rejected the words of Jefferson, Madison, Noah Webster, Adams and other Founding Fathers in creating  
39 the "absurdity" (see Madison) and a fraud of the Welfare State. President Washington also warned us of such innovations:

40 *"Toward the preservation of your government and the permanency of your present happy state, it is*  
41 *requisite not only that you steadily discountenance irregular oppositions to its acknowledged authority,*  
42 *but also that you resist with care the spirit of innovation upon its principles, however specious the*  
43 *pretexts."*

1 Abraham Lincoln also understood what could happen if the court became tyrannical:

2 *"If the policy of the Government upon vital questions affecting the whole people is to be irrevocably*  
3 *fixed by the decisions of the Supreme Court... the people have ceased to be their own rulers, having to*  
4 *that extent practically resigned their Government into the hands of that eminent tribunal."*

5 Since the passage of the "Welfare laws" the Federal Government has been in constant violation of the First Amendment to  
6 the Constitution because they have encroached upon a responsibility and jurisdiction of religion and family-Charity.

7 Today we often hear about how religion must stay out of government and that the separation of church and state must be  
8 absolute and that Christianity has no place in American Government. The lie of that accusation becomes obvious with even  
9 a cursory reading of the first four presidents' inaugural addresses. The restriction was never upon the involvement of religious  
10 people, nor the abandonment of morality and virtue but was to keep the government from forming a national religion.

11 In fact, the federal government has spawned its own secular humanist religion by substituting the theory of evolution; and  
12 using taxed financed government school buildings as churches; and paying its clergy, the government school teachers, to  
13 preach this dogma: The federal government has clearly violated the separation of church and state. Only the doctrines of the  
14 Statist Religion, such as "Environmentalism," "Peace through War," Freudian physiology, Keynesian economics, condom  
15 based sex indoctrination, ad nauseum, are preached in the Government Church indoctrination centers euphemistically  
16 verbicided as "public schools." Christian prayers, Christmas and Easter celebrations, the Ten Commandments, Christian  
17 morality and virtue have been expatriated from the secular humanist "education" rites. The name of Jesus Christ and the Holy  
18 Bible are religiously excluded from the government schools.

19 When we consider that voluntary "Charity" is one of the major doctrines of Christianity we must examine what would happen  
20 if the federal government encroched upon other traditionally religious functions.

### 21 **13.7 Education, a function of Christianity**

22 Education was one major function of Christianity. Harvard and Yale were originally divinity schools. Morality and religion  
23 were to be taught in schools. Can you imagine what would happen if those doctrines were taught in government schools  
24 today? Yet Article III. of the Northwest Ordinance says:

25 *"Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind,*  
26 *schools and the means of education shall forever be encouraged..."*

27 Free government schools along with the redistribution of wealth are required in the *Communist Manifesto*.

28 Government has now infringed upon two of the most important historical duties of Christian Churches... charity and  
29 education. What screams of terror would we hear from America's far left if Christian Churches were placed in charge of any  
30 two of the major functions of the Federal government or even just shared that jurisdiction? How about establishing Post  
31 Offices and post Roads; and to coin Money, regulate the Value thereof, and of foreign Coin, and fix the Standard of Weights  
32 and Measures. Do you think that the Supreme Court would allow such an action? Of course not. The Churches have their  
33 duties and the governments have their duties, and if either entity encroaches upon the others duties then the First Amendment  
34 has been violated. Congress has violated the separation doctrine by stealing the domain and duty of the Christian Churches.

### 35 **13.8 Christianity is perfectly republican**

36 Christianity is the religion of the United States of America. Without it, America will lose its liberty and its republican  
37 government. Noah Webster said it unequivocally:

38 *"If there is a possibility of founding a perfectly free government, and giving it permanent duration, it*  
39 *must be raised upon the **pure maxims**, and supported by the undecaying practice, of that religion, which*  
40 *breathes "peace on earth, and good will to men." **That religion is perfectly republican... The universal***  
41 ***prevalence of that religion**, in its true spirit, would banish tyranny from the earth. Yet this religion has*  
42 *been perverted, and in many countries, made the basis of a system of ecclesiastical domination, which*  
43 *has enslaved the minds of men, as political power had before enslaved their bodies. To correct these*

1           *evils, a set of fanatical reformers, called philosophers, charging that oppression to the religion itself,*  
2           *which sprung only from its abuses, have boldly denied the sacred origin of Christianity, and attempted*  
3           *to extirpate its doctrines and institutions. Strange, indeed, that the zealous advocates of a republican*  
4           *government, should wage an inveterate war against the only system of religious principles, compatible*  
5           *with rational freedom, and calculated to maintain a republican Constitution! . . ."*

6           The care of the poor and needy is the obligation of churches and families; for it must be a voluntary act or it becomes tyranny.  
7           Satan is the master of lies and establishes his counterfeit plans to imitate those of Christ. Even when they appear to be built  
8           upon principles that appear at first glance to be "specious," if they contain forced charity their author is Satan and must be  
9           avoided at all cost. If they are embraced, they will prove the downfall of both the individual and the nation.

10          Christ is the author of liberty, and Satan is the author of slavery. Choose you this day whom ye will serve!

## 14 Chapter 14: Declaration of Religious Duty

Declaration of Religious Duty

By Christopher Holloman Hansen

The following is a religious statement of beliefs by The First Christian Fellowship Of Eternal Sovereignty concerning **withholding taxes, Social Security Numbers** (AKA Mark of the Beast), Christians' salvation and Christians' **firstfruits** and what a Christian's duty is concerning all of the above in order to exercise Christian religious freedom and in doing so attain a Christian salvation.

### 14.1 Firstfruits

The Old Testament, in the text below states that we are to give the Lord our **firstfruits** as tithing. Webster's Ninth Collegiate Dictionary defines **firstfruits** as: "1: the **earliest** gathered fruits offered to the **Deity** in acknowledgement of the gift of fruitfulness 2 : the **earliest** products or results of an endeavor."

We believe that we are REQUIRED to give our "**firstfruits**" equaling ten percent, unto the Lord. We cannot fulfill this part of our Christian religion if the government forces an employer to withhold these **firstfruits** from a Christian's paycheck. If we give unto the Lord of that which remains of our pay following their **first** removal then we give the dregs of our pay which is less than that which we are required to give our **Deity**. We believe that this adversely affects our salvation.

### 14.2 Mark of the Beast

The system that was devised by men under the guidance of Lucifer, to create this abomination and rebellion against the Law of Christ includes but is not limited to the Social Security Administration and its enforcement and collection arm, the Internal Revenue Service, for the devil believes it is his due. These federal agencies fulfill what Satan fought for in the war in Heaven, the slavery of mankind. It is appropriate to state here that both these agencies use the Social Security **number** to **mark** those that voluntarily choose to become a part of Satan's plan.

John the Revelator foresaw fierce looking beasts which represent tyrannical earthly governments controlled by Satan (Rev. 13:16 & 17):

*And he (the Beast) causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.*

The Social Security number marks us just as certainly as if it was in our right hand or in our foreheads. The federal government attempted to pass a law that would have created a national identification system for the year 2000 without which a person could not travel, get medical attention, get a job, **buy or sell**. This fits the prophecy too close to just ignore. We must not accept it in our lives. Please note that the scripture says "in" and not on. A brand, tattoo or a ring would be considered on our hand not "in" our hand yet when we hold something it is referred to as being "in" your hand. Who does not have to show their Social Security card and hold it "in" their hand when applying for a job or to get a bank account? And who does not know their number by memory having it metaphorically "in" their "forehead" so they may quote it upon demand by the government and their agents.

Many people also assume that the number must be 666 and that is not their Social Security Number so they fail to recognize it as the "**Mark of the Beast**". The scripture says, "...and his (the Beast's) number is six hundred three score and six (666)." The scripture does not even say that the mark that we must carry is 666 for that is the number of HIS name. We will be marked by a "mark" OR "the name of the beast" OR "the number of his name." The true identifying quality of the "Mark" is that it must restrict buying and selling or in other words the ability to earn a living (selling our products or our labor) or to obtain that which we need (buying) in order to survive without the Beast receiving his portion.

1 Any requirement, therefore, by any government that would **mark** us, especially numerically, is so unconditionally repugnant  
2 to those whose names are "...written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world." (Rev 13:8) as to  
3 make it impossible to practice their chosen religion. "If any man have ear, let him hear." (Rev. 13:9)

### 4 **14.3 Burden of proof**

5 The Religious Freedom Restoration Act was correctly struck down by the United States Supreme Court concerning its  
6 applicability to the States but it was not struck down in relation to and limitations upon the Federal Government. It was merely  
7 an attempt by Congress to restore the First Amendment to its original meaning when written by the founders and bastardized  
8 by the judiciary. In the words of Thomas Jefferson, 1821:

9 *"...the Federal Judiciary; an irresponsible body (for impeachment is scarcely a scare-crow), working*  
10 *like gravity by night and by day, gaining a little to-day and a little to-morrow, and advancing it's*  
11 *noiseless step like a thief, over the field of jurisdiction, until all shall be usurped from the States, and*  
12 *the government of all be consolidated into one. ...when all government... in little as in great things, shall*  
13 *be drawn to Washington as the centre of all power, it will render powerless the checks provided of one*  
14 *government on another and will become as venal and oppressive as the government from which we*  
15 *separated."*

16 The RFRA did not weaken the First Amendment, for it could not; but it does help us to understand the restrictions placed  
17 upon the Federal government. It must be used and read with caution and never used as a replacement for the Constitutional  
18 restrictions of the First, Ninth, and Tenth Amendments; for even the Congress did not truly express the original intent of the  
19 Founders as this may have weakened their usurped power. The RFRA states in part:

#### 20 *SEC. 3. FREE EXERCISE OF RELIGION PROTECTED.*

21 *(a) IN GENERAL. - Government shall not substantially burden a person's exercise of religion **even if***  
22 ***the burden results from a rule of general applicability**, except as provided in subsection (b).*

23 *(b) EXCEPTION. - Government may burden a person's exercise of religion **only if it demonstrates that***  
24 *application of the burden to the person*

25 *(1) furthers a compelling governmental interest; and*

26 *(2) is the least restrictive means of furthering that compelling governmental interest.*

27 Before the Federal Government can require an employer to withhold taxes from a non-volunteering Christian's pay "**it**" (the  
28 Federal Government) must "**demonstrate**" that it is the least restrictive means. **That means the burden of proof is not**  
29 **upon us but upon the Federal Government to "demonstrate"** that it is using the least restrictive means of collecting taxes.

30 Since the IRS does not require withholding on self-employed people on the "**results of an endeavor**" in which they may be  
31 involved; there is already in place an available option for both the employer and the government that would be "**the least**  
32 **restrictive means of furthering that compelling government interest**" **assuming one exists** (which we have been unable  
33 to prove). The 1099 form offers the employer and the Christian the ability to worship God according to the dictates of their  
34 own conscience and to make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof. To  
35 require withholding from a Christian against their will would then be a violation of law by the government and a civil rights  
36 violation by the employer.

37 We already know of the abandonment of Information Systems Consulting by the IRS in Texas when a law suit was brought  
38 against this company by the EEOC concerning the lack of a Social Security number **requirement** and civil rights violations  
39 caused by the dismissal of a Christian concerning this issue. The IRS knows that they can force no Christian that does not  
40 seek Federal Government Satanic benefits to have a Social Security Number or any Federal Government issued identification  
41 number.

42 *"To compel a man to furnish funds for the propagation of ideas he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and*  
43 *tyrannical." Thomas Jefferson*

## 14.4 Render to Caesar

Please remember the Tax Requirement placed upon all Christians by Jesus Christ has two provisions not just the most quoted front section. We find in Mark.12:17

*"And Jesus answering said unto them, Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's, and to God the things that are God's. And they marvelled at him."*

If you interpret this scripture to mean we are required to pay taxes to the Federal government then please remember that it requires us **to only** pay those taxes to which Caesar is entitled. It does not say render unto Caesar that which is NOT Caesar's. But we believe that this thinking has no real place in the United States of America. Remember that in America the government is our servant and we are the Caesars of this nation. If this scripture is interpreted for our nation, then we are required to render unto ourselves that which is our own. We believe it calls for us to jealously guard our property from all those who would steal, or usurp, or abuse it. For if we do not, then God will hold us personally responsible for improper stewardship of that property He put into our charge. If we let our property be used to enslave others, kill babies, restrict liberty and promote ungodliness then we will be less than the unwise, wicked and slothful servant that buried his talent in the ground. This servant returned to the master all that had been given him but had failed to increase upon that amount. The slothful servant received his reward as found in Matt. 25:30:

*"And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."*

How more just will our condemnation be if we not only fail to increase our master's (Christ's) abundance but will have allowed His property to be used against God's will by our servants, the Federal Government.

The second half of this scripture also condemns us if we do not render unto God the things which are God's. He expects increase and wise use of His gifts to us and demands only our firstfruits. The Social Security tax and the Income tax both ask us to "voluntarily" violate both halves of this scripture. And what will be our eternal reward if we continue to violate His commandments? He has answered that question for us. We will be cast, as unprofitable servants, into outer darkness: there we shall be weeping and gnashing our teeth.

Our entire law; Constitutional, Statutory, Common; our unalienable rights and our culture are based upon the fact that God and His will must come before government.

## 14.5 A Defence of Liberty Against Tyrants

The book *A Defence of Liberty Against Tyrants* written circa 1579 was highly influential in the thinking of the Founding Fathers. In fact John Adams held it to be one of the most influential books in America on the eve of the Revolution. This treasured book, on the very first page, embraces the very heart of the revolutionary thinking imbedded in our Constitution and *Declaration of Independence* stating:

*"Otherways wherefore should the apostles have answered, that God must rather be obeyed than men, and also seeing that the only will of God is always just, and that of men may be, and is, oftentimes unjust, who can doubt but that we must always obey God's commandments without any exception, and men's ever with limitations."*

## 14.6 The Father of the United States Constitution

Justice O'Connor and Justice Breyer confirmed this Christian thinking while writing about the importance of freedom of religion in *City of Boerne, Petitioner v. P. F. Flores, Archbishop Of San Antonio, and United States* said this about the Father of the *United States Constitution*, the *Father of the Declaration of Independence*, the Father of our Country and other founders:

*"The 'Memorial and Remonstrance' begins with the recognition that '[t]he Religion... of every man must be left to the conviction and conscience of every man; and it is the right of every man to exercise it as these may dictate.'*  
*[2 Writings of James Madison 184 (G. Hunt ed. 1901)]*

1 By its very nature, Madison wrote, the right to free exercise is 'unalienable,' both because a person's opinion 'cannot follow  
2 the dictates of other[s],' and because it entails 'a duty toward the Creator.' Ibid. Madison continued:

3 *"This duty [owed the Creator] is precedent both in order of time and degree of obligation, to the claims*  
4 *of Civil Society.... [E]very man who becomes a member of any Civil Society, [must] do it with a saving*  
5 *of his allegiance to the Universal Sovereign. We maintain therefore that in matters of Religion, no man's*  
6 *right is abridged by the institution of Civil Society, and that Religion is wholly exempt from its*  
7 *cognizance." Id., at 184-185.*

## 8 **14.7 Duties to God**

9 *"To Madison, then, duties to God were superior to duties to civil authorities-the ultimate loyalty was*  
10 *owed to God above all. Madison did not say that duties to the Creator are precedent only to those laws*  
11 *specifically directed at religion, nor did he strive simply to prevent deliberate acts of persecution or*  
12 *discrimination. The idea that civil obligations are subordinate to religious duty is consonant with the*  
13 *notion that government must accommodate, where possible, those religious practices that conflict with*  
14 *civil law.*

15 *"Other early leaders expressed similar views regarding religious liberty. Thomas Jefferson, the drafter*  
16 *of Virginia's Bill for Establishing Religious Freedom, wrote in that document that civil government*  
17 *could interfere in religious exercise only 'when principles break out into overt acts against peace and*  
18 *good order.' In 1808, he indicated that he considered 'the government of the United States as interdicted*  
19 *by the Constitution from intermeddling with religious institutions, their doctrines, discipline, or*  
20 *exercises.' 11 The Writings of Thomas Jefferson 428-429 (A. Lipscomb ed. 1904) (quoted in Office of*  
21 *Legal Policy, U. S. Dept. of Justice, Report to the Attorney General, Religious Liberty under the Free*  
22 *Exercise Clause 7 (1986)). Moreover, Jefferson believed that '[e]very religious society has a right to*  
23 *determine for itself the time of these exercises, and the objects proper for them, according to their own*  
24 *particular tenets; and this right can never be safer than in their own hands, where the Constitution has*  
25 *deposited it." Ibid.*

26 *"George Washington, writing in a letter to a group of Quakers, expressly stated that he believed that*  
27 *government should do its utmost to accommodate religious scruples:*

28 *"[I]n my opinion the conscientious scruples of all men should be treated with great delicacy and*  
29 *tenderness; and it is my wish and desire, that the laws may always be as extensively accommodated to*  
30 *them, as a due regard to the protection and essential interests of the nation may justify and permit.'*  
31 *Letter from George Washington to the Religious Society Called Quakers (Oct. 1789), in George*  
32 *Washington on Religious Liberty and Mutual Understanding 11 (E. Humphrey ed. 1932).*

33 *"Oliver Ellsworth, a Framer of the First Amendment and later Chief Justice of the United States,*  
34 *expressed the similar view that government could interfere in religious matters only when necessary 'to*  
35 *prohibit and punish gross immoralities and impieties; because the open practice of these is of evil*  
36 *example and detriment.' Oliver Ellsworth, Landholder, No. 7 (Dec. 17, 1787), reprinted in 4 Founders'*  
37 *Constitution, 640. Isaac Backus, a Baptist minister who was a delegate to the Massachusetts ratifying*  
38 *convention of 1788, declared that 'every person has an unalienable right to act in all religious affairs*  
39 *according to the full persuasion of his own mind, where others are not injured thereby.' Backus, A*  
40 *Declaration of Rights, of the Inhabitants of the State of Massachusetts Bay, in Isaac Backus on Church,*  
41 *State, and Calvinism 487 (W. McLoughlin ed. 1968).*

42 *"These are but a few examples of various perspectives regarding the proper relationship between*  
43 *church and government that existed during the time the First Amendment was drafted and ratified.*  
44 *Obviously, since these thinkers approached the issue of religious freedom somewhat differently, see*  
45 *Adams & Emmerich 21-31- it is not possible to distill their thoughts into one tidy formula. Nevertheless,*  
46 *a few general principles may be discerned. Foremost, these early leaders accorded religious exercise*  
47 *a special constitutional status. The right to free exercise was a substantive guarantee of individual*  
48 *liberty, no less important than the right to free speech or the right to just compensation for the taking*  
49 *of property. See P. Kauper, Religion and the Constitution 17 (1964) ('[O]ur whole constitutional history*

1 ...supports the conclusion that religious liberty is an independent liberty, that its recognition may either  
2 require or permit preferential treatment on religious grounds in some instances...'). As Madison put it  
3 in the concluding argument of his 'Memorial and Remonstrance':

4 "[T]he equal right of every citizen to the free exercise of his Religion according to the dictates of [his]  
5 conscience' is held by the same tenure with all our other rights.... [I]t is equally the gift of nature;... it  
6 cannot be less dear to us;... it is enumerated with equal solemnity, or rather studied emphasis.' 2  
7 Writings of James Madison, at 191.

8 "Second, all agreed that government interference in religious practice was not to be lightly  
9 countenanced. Adams & Emmerich at 31. Finally, all shared the conviction that 'true religion and good  
10 morals are the only solid foundation of public liberty and happiness.' Curry, *The First Freedoms*, at  
11 219 (quoting Continental Congress); see Adams & Emmerich at 72 ('The Founders... acknowledged  
12 that the republic rested largely on moral principles derived from religion'). To give meaning to these  
13 ideas-particularly in a society characterized by religious pluralism and pervasive regulation-there will  
14 be times when the Constitution requires government to accommodate the needs of those citizens whose  
15 religious practices conflict with generally applicable law.

16 "The Religion Clauses of the Constitution represent a profound commitment to religious liberty. Our  
17 Nation's Founders conceived of a Republic receptive to voluntary religious expression, not of a secular  
18 society in which religious expression is tolerated only when it does not conflict with a generally  
19 applicable law. As the historical sources discussed above show, the Free Exercise Clause is properly  
20 understood as an affirmative guarantee of the right to participate in religious activities without  
21 impermissible governmental interference, even where a believer's conduct is in tension with a law of  
22 general application. Certainly, it is in no way anomalous to accord heightened protection to a right  
23 identified in the text of the First Amendment. For example, it has long been the Court's position that  
24 freedom of speech-a right enumerated only a few words after the right to free exercise-has special  
25 constitutional status. Given the centrality of freedom of speech and religion to the American concept of  
26 personal liberty, it is altogether reasonable to conclude that both should be treated with the highest  
27 degree of respect." {End of the justices' statement used here.}

## 28 **14.8 Abuse of power**

29 *The Declaration of Independence* confronted the abuse of power by a man, King George, and established the necessity of  
30 governments to secure Unalienable God given rights. Our founders knew King George was not following God's laws so they  
31 rebelled and took away his divine right to govern, and the sovereignty devolved to the people through obvious divine  
32 intervention.

33 *The Constitution* is an acknowledgement of the frailties and wickedness inherent in man. It grants very limited power to the  
34 Federal Government tying it down with metaphoric chains.

35 The founders were so afraid men would seek to gain power and not follow the limits already found in the *Constitution*, that  
36 they would not even ratify the *Constitution* until assurances were granted that a *Bill of Rights* would be adopted that would  
37 further limit government.

38 Every Christian knows that the first unalienable right mentioned and secured was religion. Freedom of religion is the Keystone  
39 of this Nation. The Social Security Number and the associated withholding taxes **not only substantially burden a person's**  
40 **exercise of religion**, but in addition, where Christian beliefs are concerned, it completely eliminates a Christian's exercise of  
41 religion and forces us to become children of Hell. As we are instructed in John 8: 34: 'Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I  
42 say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin.' So to have the Mark of the Beast and to pay **Satan's** tithing is  
43 to make us servants of Satan and removes our name from the 'book of life of the Lamb' subjecting us to eternal damnation. It  
44 is written: Moses said, "Consecrate yourselves today to the Lord, ...that He may bestow upon you a blessing this day... Moses  
45 said unto the people, Ye have sinned a great sin:... and Moses returned unto the Lord and said, O, this people have sinned a  
46 great sin, and have made them gods of gold.... And the Lord said unto Moses, Whosoever hath sinned against me, **him will I**  
47 **block out of my book.**" (Ex 32:29-33)

1 To force us to have a government identification number or to pay firstfruits withholding tax is to condemn us to hell. So God  
2 asks: Will our government rob God? Yet they have robbed me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In tithes and  
3 offerings. And because of this God informs us thus: Ye are cursed with a curse; for ye have robbed me, even this whole  
4 nation.

5 Our nation has become more humanistic and less Christian in the last sixty years, and this increase in evil is in direct  
6 correlation to the Social Security Number's voluntary acceptance and IRS withholding taxes. We have indeed robbed God of  
7 His demanded **firstfruits**. Thus, as a nation we have been cursed, i.e.: Increased violence; crime; a spiraling divorce rate; the  
8 heavy massive, even incomprehensible, debt; ad nauseam, while Christian morals and law and our Christ given Constitution  
9 are ridiculed to scorn. The fact that God has "cursed us (our nation) with a curse" for embracing the plan of hell, socialism,  
10 is plain to all who have eyes to see and ears to hear. We must bow before God and His son, Jesus Christ, or we shall lose our  
11 liberty and in doing so lose our salvation.

12 *"There is no law requiring a person to apply for a Social Security number, and there is no section of*  
13 *title 18, United States Code, making it a crime to not have a social security number."*  
14 *[Dorcas R. Hardy, former Commissioner of Social Security]*

## 15 **14.9 Scripture reference**

16 The following scriptures are from the King James Version of the Bible and concern God's law of **tithing** and of the necessity  
17 of them being our **firstfruits**. As can be plainly seen, these Biblical quotations are not isolated aberrations, but form a  
18 consistent train of unambiguous doctrine and commandments to mark the path and clearly show the way to temporal and  
19 eternal liberty and salvation.

20 *Mal. 3:8-10 Will a man rob God? Yet ye have robbed me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed thee? In*  
21 ***tithes** and offerings. Ye are cursed with a curse; for ye have robbed me, even this whole nation. Bring*  
22 *ye all the **tithes** into the storehouse, that there may be meat in mine house, and prove me now herewith,*  
23 *saith the LORD of hosts, if I will not open you the windows of heaven, and pour you out a blessing, that*  
24 *there shall not be room enough to receive it.*

25 *Prov. 3:9 Honour the LORD with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase:*

26 *Ezek. 20:40 For in mine holy mountain, in the mountain of the height of Israel, saith the Lord GOD,*  
27 *there shall all the house of Israel, all of them in the land, serve me: there will I accept them, and there*  
28 *will I **require** your offerings, and the **firstfruits** of your oblations, with all your holy things.*

29 *Exod. 23:19 The **first** of the **firstfruits** of thy land thou shalt bring into the house of the LORD thy God...*

30 *Exod. 34:26 The **first** of the **firstfruits** of thy land thou shalt bring unto the house of the LORD thy*  
31 *God...*

32 *Lev. 2:12 As for the oblation of the **firstfruits**, ye shall offer them unto the LORD: but they shall not be*  
33 *burnt on the altar for a sweet savour.*

34 *Num. 18:12 All the best of the oil, and all the best of the wine, and of the wheat, the **firstfruits** of them*  
35 *which they shall offer unto the LORD, them have I given thee.*

36 *Deut. 18:4 The **firstfruit** also of thy corn, of thy wine, and of thine oil, and the first of the fleece of thy*  
37 *sheep, shalt thou give him.*

38 *Deut. 26:10 And now, behold, I have brought the **firstfruits** of the land, which thou, O LORD, hast*  
39 *given me. And thou shalt set it before the LORD thy God, and worship before the LORD thy God:*

40 *II Chr. 31:5 And as soon as the commandment came abroad, the children of Israel brought in*  
41 *abundance the **firstfruits** of corn, wine, and oil, and honey, and of all the increase of the fields; and the*  
42 *tithe of all things brought they in abundantly.*

1 *Neh. 10:35 and 37*

2 *35. And to bring the **firstfruits** of our ground, and the **firstfruits** of all fruit of all trees, year by year,*  
3 *unto the house of the LORD:*

4 *37. And that we should bring the **firstfruits** of our dough, and our offerings, and the fruit of all*  
5 *manner of trees, of wine and of oil, unto the priests, to the chambers of the house of our God; and the*  
6 ***tithes** of our ground unto the Levites, that the same Levites might have the **tithes** in all the cities of our*  
7 *tillage.*

8 *Neh. 13:31 And for the wood offering, at times appointed, and for the **firstfruits**. Remember me, O my*  
9 *God, for good.*

10 *Jer. 2:3 Israel was holiness unto the LORD, and the **firstfruits** of his increase: all that devour him shall*  
11 *offend; evil shall come upon them, saith the LORD.*

12 *Ezek. 44:30 **And the first of all the firstfruits of all things**, and every oblation of all, of every sort of*  
13 *your oblations, shall be the priest's: ye shall also give unto the priest the first of your dough, that he*  
14 *may cause the blessing to rest in thine house.*

15 *Ezek. 48:14 And they shall not sell of it, neither exchange, nor alienate the **firstfruits** of the land: for it*  
16 *is holy unto the LORD.*

17 *Deut. 14:22-23 Thou shalt truly **tithe** all the increase of thy seed, that the field bringeth forth year by*  
18 *year. And thou shalt eat before the LORD thy God, in the place which he shall choose to place his name*  
19 *there, the **tithe** of thy corn, of thy wine, and of thine oil, and the **firstlings** of thy herds and of thy flocks;*  
20 *that thou mayest learn to **fear the LORD thy God always**.*

21 We are further informed by Jesus Christ that we must not sit upon the fence. We must choose between good and evil and  
22 make our lives fruitful in righteousness. If we choose evil God will curse us. If we choose righteousness we will be blessed  
23 (see below, the following: Luke 11, John 7, Lev. 26, Deut. 11, II Chr. 34, Prov. 8, Gal. 6) And if we sit idly by our lot is also  
24 made crystal clear in: Rev.3 Verses 15 to 22:

25 *I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. **So then because***  
26 ***thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth**. Because thou sayest,*  
27 *I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched,*  
28 *and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that*  
29 *thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness*  
30 *do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see. As many as I love, I rebuke*  
31 *and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear*  
32 *my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. To him that*  
33 *overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my*  
34 *Father in his throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches.*

35 \_\_\_\_\_  
36 *Luke. 11:28. But he said, Yea rather, blessed are they that hear the word of God, and keep it.*

37 *John. 7:49 But this people who knoweth not the law are cursed.*

38 *Lev. 26:14-38 But if ye will not hearken unto me, and will not do all these commandments; And if ye*  
39 *shall despise my statutes, or if your soul abhor my judgments, so that ye will not do all my*  
40 *commandments, but that ye break my covenant: I also will do this unto you; I will even appoint over*  
41 *you terror, consumption, and the burning ague, that shall consume the eyes, and cause sorrow of heart:*  
42 *and ye shall sow your seed in vain, for your enemies shall eat it. And I will set my face against you, and*  
43 *ye shall be slain before your enemies: they that hate you shall reign over you; and ye shall flee when*  
44 *none pursueth you. And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times*  
45 *more for your sins. And I will break the pride of your power; and I will make your heaven as iron, and*  
46 *your earth as brass: And your strength shall be spent in vain: for your land shall not yield her increase,*

1 *neither shall the trees of the land yield their fruits. And if ye walk contrary unto me, and will not hearken*  
2 *unto me; I will bring seven times more plagues upon you according to your sins. I will also send wild*  
3 *beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children, and destroy your cattle, and make you few in*  
4 *number; and your highways shall be desolate. And if ye will not be reformed by me by these things, but*  
5 *will walk contrary unto me; Then will I also walk contrary unto you, and will punish you yet seven times*  
6 *for your sins. And I will bring a sword upon you, that shall avenge the quarrel of my covenant: and*  
7 *when ye are gathered together within your cities, I will send the pestilence among you; and ye shall be*  
8 *delivered into the hand of the enemy. And when I have broken the staff of your bread, ten women shall*  
9 *bake your bread in one oven, and they shall deliver you your bread again by weight: and ye shall eat,*  
10 *and not be satisfied. And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me; Then I*  
11 *will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins. And*  
12 *ye shall eat the flesh of your sons, and the flesh of your daughters shall ye eat. And I will destroy your*  
13 *high places, and cut down your images, and cast your carcasses upon the carcasses of your idols, and my*  
14 *soul shall abhor you. And I will make your cities waste, and bring your sanctuaries unto desolation,*  
15 *and I will not smell the savour of your sweet odours. And I will bring the land into desolation: and your*  
16 *enemies which dwell therein shall be astonished at it. And I will scatter you among the heathen, and*  
17 *will draw out a sword after you: and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste. Then shall the*  
18 *land enjoy her sabbaths, as long as it lieth desolate, and ye be in your enemies' land; even then shall*  
19 *the land rest, and enjoy her sabbaths. As long as it lieth desolate it shall rest; because it did not rest in*  
20 *your sabbaths, when ye dwelt upon it. And upon them that are left alive of you I will send a faintness*  
21 *into their hearts in the lands of their enemies; and the sound of a shaken leaf shall chase them; and they*  
22 *shall flee, as fleeing from a sword; and they shall fall when none pursueth. And they shall fall one upon*  
23 *another, as it were before a sword, when none pursueth: and ye shall have no power to stand before*  
24 *your enemies. And ye shall perish among the heathen, and the land of your enemies shall eat you up.*

25 *Deut. 11:26-28 Behold, I set before you this day a blessing and a curse; A blessing, if ye obey the*  
26 *commandments of the LORD your God, which I command you this day: And a curse, if ye will not obey*  
27 *the commandments of the LORD your God, but turn aside out of the way which I command you this*  
28 *day, to go after other gods, which ye have not known.*

29 *II Chr. 34:17-21 And they have gathered together the money that was found in the house of the LORD,*  
30 *and have delivered it into the hand of the overseers, and to the hand of the workmen... And it came to*  
31 *pass, when the king had heard the words of the law, that he rent his clothes. And the king...saying, Go,*  
32 *inquire of the LORD for me,...: for great is the wrath of the LORD that is poured out upon us, because*  
33 *our fathers have not kept the word of the LORD, to do after all that is written in this book.*

34 *Prov. 8:32-36 Now therefore hearken unto me, O ye children: for blessed are they that keep my ways.*  
35 *Hear instruction, and be wise, and refuse it not. Blessed is the man that heareth me, watching daily at*  
36 *my gates, waiting at the posts of my doors. For whoso findeth me findeth life, and shall obtain favour*  
37 *of the LORD. But he that sinneth against me wrongeth his own soul: all they that hate me love death.*

38 *Jer. 11:1-3 The word that came to Jeremiah from the LORD, saying, Hear ye the words of this covenant,*  
39 *and speak ... And say thou unto them, Thus saith the LORD God of Israel; Cursed be the man that*  
40 *obeyeth not the words of this covenant,*

41 *Gal. 6:7, 9-10 Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also*  
42 *reap. And let us not be weary in well doing: for in due season we shall reap, if we faint not. As we have*  
43 *therefore opportunity, let us do good unto all men, especially unto them who are of the household of*  
44 *faith.*

45 As all can clearly see Christians have no choice in these matters if we wish to continue to be in the Book of the Lamb. Our  
46 salvation is at stake. We shall not allow ourselves to be cursed just because an earthly government demands that we do so in  
47 violation of their own constitution and laws which in America include the laws of God.

48 We must do all we can for God and deny ourselves of all ungodliness. Then as a great prophet said: "Yea, come unto Christ,  
49 and be perfected in him, and **deny yourselves of all ungodliness**; and if ye shall deny yourselves of all ungodliness and love

- 1 God with all your might, mind and strength, **then** is His grace sufficient for you, that by His grace ye may be perfect in Christ;
- 2 and if by the grace of God ye are perfect in Christ, ye can in nowise deny the power of God."
- 3 We are saved by Grace after all we can do.

## 15 Chapter 15: Conspiracy Against Personal Sovereignty

The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty will have the words from history speak concerning this issue.

WEBSTER'S 1828 DICTIONARY:

*CONSPIR'ACY, noun [Latin conspiratio, from conspiro. See Conspire.]*

*1. A combination of men for an evil purpose; an agreement between two or more persons, to commit some crime in concert; particularly, a combination to commit treason, or excite sedition or insurrection against the government of a state; a plot; as a conspiracy against the life of a king; a conspiracy against the government.*

*More than forty had made this conspiracy. Acts 23.*

*2. In law, an agreement between two or more persons, falsely and maliciously to indict, or procure to be indicted, an innocent person of felony. Blackstone.*

### 15.1 Federal Reserve Bank

*This Federal Reserve Act establishes the most gigantic trust on earth. When the President (Wilson) signs this bill the invisible government of the Monetary Power will be legalized.  
[Hon. Charles A. Lindbergh, Sr., Dec. 23, 1913]*

*We have come to be one of the worst ruled, one of the most completely controlled and dominated governments in the civilized world. We are no longer a government by free opinion, no longer a government by conviction and the vote of the majority, but a government by the opinion and duress of a small group of dominate men. I have unwittingly betrayed my country.  
[President Woodrow Wilson, 1916]*

*In March, 1915, the J.P. Morgan interests, the steel, shipbuilding, and powder interest, and their subsidiary organizations, got together 12 men high up in the newspaper world and employed them to select the most influential newspapers in the United States and sufficient number of them to control generally the policy of the daily press... They found it was only necessary to purchase the control of 25 of the greatest papers... An agreement was reached; the policy of the papers was bought, to be paid for by the month; an editor was furnished for each paper to properly supervise and edit information regarding the questions of preparedness, militarism, financial policies, and other things of national and international nature considered vital to the interests of the purchasers.  
[U.S. Congressman Oscar Callaway, 1917]*

### 15.2 I care not who makes the law

*Permit me to issue and control the money of the nation and I care not who makes its laws.  
[Mayer Amsched Rothchild, a prominent European banker in the eighteenth century]*

*If the American people ever allow the banks to control issuance of their currency, first by inflation and then by deflation, the banks and corporations that grow up around them will deprive the people of all property until their children will wake up homeless on the continent their fathers occupied.  
[Thomas Jefferson]*

*I believe that banking institutions are more dangerous to our liberties than standing armies.  
[Thomas Jefferson]*

*The One World Government leaders and their ever close bankers have now acquired full control of the money and credit machinery of the U.S. via the creation of the **privately owned Federal Reserve Bank**.  
[Curtis Dall (Franklin D. Roosevelt's son-in-law), My Exploited Father-in-Law]*

1 *Since I entered politics, I have chiefly had men's views confided to me privately. Some of the biggest*  
2 *men in the United States, in the Field of commerce and manufacture, are afraid of something. They*  
3 *know that there is a power somewhere so organized, so subtle, so watchful, so interlocked, so complete,*  
4 *so pervasive, that they better not speak above their breath when they speak in condemnation of it.*  
5 *[President Woodrow Wilson, 1913]*

### 6 **15.3 Invisible government**

7 *The real menace of our republic is this invisible government which like a giant octopus sprawls its slimy*  
8 *length over city, state and nation. Like the octopus of real life, it operates under cover of a self created*  
9 *screen... At the head of this octopus are the Rockefeller Standard Oil interests and a small group of*  
10 *powerful banking houses generally referred to as international bankers. The little coterie of powerful*  
11 *international bankers virtually run the United States government for their own selfish purposes. They*  
12 *practically control both political parties.*

13 *[New York City Mayor John F. Hylan, 1922]*

14 *From the days of Spartacus, Wieskhopf, Karl Marx, Trotsky, Rosa Luxemburg, and Emma Goldman,*  
15 *this world conspiracy has been steadily growing. This conspiracy played a definite recognizable role*  
16 *in the tragedy of the French revolution. It has been the mainspring of every subversive movement during*  
17 *the 19th century. And now at last this band of extraordinary personalities from the underworld of the*  
18 *great cities of Europe and America have gripped the Russian people by the hair of their head and have*  
19 *become the undisputed masters of that enormous empire.*

20 *[Winston Churchill, 1922]*

21 *We are at present working discreetly with all our might to wrest this mysterious force called sovereignty*  
22 *out of the clutches of the local nation states of the world.*

23 *[Professor Arnold Toynbee, 1931 Institute for the Study of International Affairs]*

24 For a long time I felt that FDR had developed many thoughts and ideas that were his own to benefit this country, the United  
25 States. But, he didn't. Most of his thoughts, his political ammunition, as it were, were carefully manufactured for him in  
26 advanced by the Council on Foreign Relations One World Money group. Brilliantly, with great gusto, like a fine piece of  
27 artillery, he exploded that prepared "ammunition" in the middle of an unsuspecting target, the American people, and thus  
28 paid off and returned his internationalist political support...

29 *The UN is but a long range, international banking apparatus nearly set up for financial and economic*  
30 *profit by a small group of powerful One World Revolutionaries, hungry for profit and power... The*  
31 *depression was the calculated 'shearing' of the public by the World Money powers, triggered by the*  
32 *planned sudden shortage of supply of call money in the New York money market... The One World*  
33 *Government leaders and their ever close bankers have now acquired full control of the money and*  
34 *credit machinery of the U.S. via the creation of the privately owned Federal Reserve Bank.*

35 *[Curtis Dall, from My Exploited Father-in-Law]*

### 36 **15.4 Colonel House**

37 *The real truth of the matter is, as you and I know, that a financial element in the larger centers has*  
38 *owned the Government ever since the days of Andrew Jackson.*

39 *[Letter to Colonel House by Franklin D. Roosevelt, November 21st, 1933]*

### 40 **15.5 Quotes**

41 *Fifty men have run America, and that's a high figure."*

42 *[Joseph Kennedy, July 26th, 1936 New York Times]*

43 *We shall have world government whether or not you like it by conquest or consent.*

44 *[James Warburg member Council on Foreign Relations speaking before Senate Foreign Relations*  
45 *Committee on February 17th, 1950]*

1 *The real rulers in Washington are invisible, and exercise power from behind the scenes.*  
2 *[Supreme Court Justice Felix Frankfurter, 1952]*

3 *Today the path of total dictatorship in the United States can be laid by strictly legal means, unseen and*  
4 *unheard by the Congress, the President, or the people. Outwardly we have a Constitutional government.*  
5 *We have operating within our government and political system, another body representing another form*  
6 *of government a bureaucratic elite.*  
7 *[Senator William Jenner, 1954]*

8 *The most powerful clique in these (CFR) groups have one objective in common they want to bring about*  
9 *the surrender of the sovereignty and the national independence of the U.S. They want to end national*  
10 *boundaries and racial and ethnic loyalties supposedly to increase business and ensure world peace.*  
11 *What they strive for would inevitably lead to dictatorship and loss of freedoms by the people. The C.F.R.*  
12 *was founded for “the purpose of promoting disarmament and submergence of U.S. sovereignty and*  
13 *national independence into an all powerful one world government.”*  
14 *[Harpers Magazine, 1958]*

15 *The case for government by elites is irrefutable.*  
16 *[Senator William Fulbright, Former chairman of the U.S. Senate Foreign Relations Committee, 1963]*

17 *The Trilateral Commission is intended to be the vehicle for multinational consolidation of the*  
18 *commercial and banking interests by seizing control of the political government of the United States.*  
19 *The Trilateral Commission represents a skillful, coordinated effort to seize control and consolidate the*  
20 *four centers of power political, monetary, intellectual and ecclesiastical. What the Trilateral*  
21 *Commission intends is to create a worldwide economic power superior to the political governments of*  
22 *the nation states involved. As managers and creators of the system they will rule the future.*  
23 *[Senator Barry Goldwater 1964 from his book: With No Apologies]*

24 *The powers of financial capitalism had another far reaching aim, nothing less than to create a world*  
25 *system of financial control in private hands able to dominate the political system of each country and*  
26 *the economy of the world as a whole. This system was to be controlled in a feudalist fashion by the*  
27 *central banks of the world acting in concert, by secret agreements, arrived at in frequent private*  
28 *meetings and conferences. The apex of the system was the Bank for International Settlements in Basle,*  
29 *Switzerland; a private bank owned and controlled by the worlds’ central banks, which were themselves,*  
30 *private corporations. The growth of financial capitalism made possible a centralization of world*  
31 *economic control and use of this power for the direct benefit of financiers and the indirect injury of all*  
32 *other economic groups.*  
33 *[Tragedy and Hope: A History of The World in Our Time 1966, Professor Carroll Quigley, Georgetown*  
34 *University]*

35 *The Council on Foreign Relations is “the establishment.” Not only does it have influence and power in*  
36 *key decision making positions at the highest levels of government to apply pressure from above, but it*  
37 *also announces and uses individuals and groups to bring pressure from below, to justify the high level*  
38 *decisions for converting the U.S. from a sovereign Constitutional Republic into a servile member state*  
39 *of a one world dictatorship.*  
40 *[Congressman John Rarick 1971]*

41 *The New World Order will have to be built from the bottom up rather than from the top down... but in*  
42 *the end run around national sovereignty, eroding it piece by piece will accomplish much more than the*  
43 *old fashioned frontal assault.*  
44 *[Council on Foreign Relations member Richard Gardner, 1974]*

45 *The drive of the Rockefellers and their allies is to create a one-world government combining super*  
46 *capitalism and Communism under the same tent; all under their control... Do I mean conspiracy? Yes*  
47 *I do. I am convinced there is such a plot, international in scope, generations old in planning, and*  
48 *incredibly evil in intent.*  
49 *[Congressman Larry P. McDonald, 1976]*

1 *I never thought the Federal Reserve System would prove such a failure. The country is in a state of*  
2 *irretrievable bankruptcy.*

3 *[Senator Carter Glass 1983]*

4 *We are grateful to The Washington Post, The New York Times, Time Magazine and other great*  
5 *publications whose directors have attended our meetings and respected their promises of discretion for*  
6 *almost forty years. It would have been impossible for us to develop our plan for the world if we had*  
7 *been subject to the bright lights of publicity during those years. But, the work is now much more*  
8 *sophisticated and prepared to march towards a world government. The supranational sovereignty of*  
9 *an intellectual elite and world bankers is surely preferable to the national auto-determination practiced*  
10 *in past centuries.*

11 *[David Rockefeller, founder of the Trilateral Commission, address to The Trilateral Commission, June,*  
12 *1991]*

13 *In the next century, nations as we know it will be obsolete; all states will recognize a single, global*  
14 *authority. National sovereignty wasn't such a great idea after all.*

15 *[Strobe Talbott, Clinton's Deputy Secretary of State, Time Magazine, July 20th, 1992]*

16 **Robert B. Reich, former Secretary of the Treasury in the Clinton Administration, made these statements as reported in USA**  
17 **Today, January 7, 1999:**

18 *The dirty little secret is that both houses of Congress have become increasingly irrelevant... In case you*  
19 *hadn't noticed, America's domestic policy is now being run by Alan Greenspan and the Federal Reserve*  
20 *Board. Their decisions about interest rates are determining how many of us have jobs and how many*  
21 *of us get a raise.*

22 *When the Fed's Open Market Committee decides to lower the rates, unemployment drops and wages*  
23 *rise. When they raise rates, it's just the opposite. When they decide to hold rates steady, as they did last*  
24 *week, the economy continues to move in whatever direction it was already going...*

25 *Congress is out of the loop...*

26 *America's foreign policy, mean while, is now being run by the International Monetary Fund (IMF),*  
27 *with some coaching from the Treasury Department...*

28 *Here, too, Congress has become irrelevant. Some senators and House members fussed a bit when the*  
29 *administration asked for tens of billions of additional dollars for the IMF. But in the end, the elected*  
30 *representatives came through...*

31 *And when the president decides to go to war, he no longer needs a declaration of war from Congress.*  
32 *He just calls up a few generals, phones Tony Blair in Britain and sends in the bombers.*

33 *Have you seen a single congressional hearing or congressional debate on the U.S.-Iraqi war?*

34 **If the above quotes do not convince you of your awful situation just take a look at the very notes you carry in your pockets.**

35 **On the series 1928 Federal Reserve Note it said that the note was: Redeemable in gold on demand at the United States**  
36 **Treasury or in gold or lawful money at any Federal Reserve Bank.**

37 **On the series 1934 Federal Reserve Note it said: This note is legal tender for all debts public and private and is redeemable**  
38 **in lawful money at the United States Treasury or at any Federal Reserve Bank.**

39 **On the series 1963 Federal Reserve Note and through to today it says: This note is legal tender for all debts, public and**  
40 **private.**

41 *Freedom—is the absence of the awareness of restraint. — David Rockefeller*

1        *No one's safe when freedom fails,*  
2        *and good men rot in filthy jails,*  
3        *and those who cried appease, appease,*  
4        *are hung by those they tried to please.*

5        *—Author unknown*

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40  
41

## **16 Chapter 16: Blood Money**

### **16.1 A brick of gold or a canteen of water**

By Daniel McGavin Hansen

What is more valuable... a brick of gold or a canteen of water? Well, it depends on supply and demand. A brick of gold could even have a negative value as a burdensome weight in the backpack of a weary and thirsty traveler in the middle of a scorching desert.

All value is relative to SUPPLY AND DEMAND. Article I section 8 of the Constitution specifies that Congress shall have the power... to coin Money, regulate the value thereof, and of foreign coin... How is value regulated? By controlling the supply. Regarding the power of Congress to create MONEY no restrictions are mentioned or specified such as using gold or silver or paper. Congress is: "To provide for the Punishment of counterfeiting the securities and coin of the United States." Congress could not regulate the quantity and hence the value of money if it could not stop counterfeiting

The ultimate authority on the value of money is the market place. It is like a giant auction measuring and determining the value of the medium of exchange in relation to the goods available.

Congress has the responsibility to issue sufficient currency, to create a convenient and stable medium of exchange that will be uniform throughout the Union in order to facilitate the transfers of commerce, which promote the General Welfare.

If, for example, the market is 100 Apples and Congress wants to establish and maintain a value of one dollar per Apple, Congress must create and distribute \$100.00 to the market. The market is always fluctuating, therefore, if we have a bumper crop and produce 200 Apples in a growing and healthy economy, Congress must issue one hundred more dollars into circulation in order to maintain the relative value of \$1.00 per apple. If the money supply remained at \$100.00 per 200 Apples each dollar would buy and hence be worth 2 apples. That would be deflation.

If in the following season the economy produced only 150 Apples, Congress would have to withdraw from circulation via taxation \$50.00 in order to retain the Dollar per Apple ratio and hence fulfill the Constitutional mandate to regulate the value thereof. If Congress failed to withdraw \$50 inflation would be the rule, as each apple would now cost \$1.334.

### **16.2 What is money?**

What is money? Money is anything that serves as a medium of exchange. If there is no money direct barter is mandated. A cow can serve as money... indeed the word pecuniary (of or involving money) is derived from the Latin word "pecus" meaning cow. Cow money has many disadvantages including instability, maintenance, exchange problems and perishability. Never mind that it would be the ultimate in "stinking money."

Money Orders, travelers checks, personal checks, IOUs, grocery coupons, food stamps, green or blue stamps, gold, silver, copper or base metal coins all serve as mediums of exchange.

As a young college student I managed a flophouse in Reno, Nevada and often collected rent in casino tokens from Harold's Club and various other gambling establishments. I could exchange the tokens for a haircut, pay a cab fare, buy groceries or even deposit the tokens at the bank as I would a personal or company check... because, the Casino tokens were redeemable in fair exchange or finally converted to dollars and cents or legal tender. Legal tender provides stability and uniformity to all subspecies of currency. The Feds moved in to stop this free exchange of goods and services, I believe, because it exposed the nature of the Federal Reserve's monopolistic money making power. Now, casinos cannot allow gaming tokens to be even exchanged within the confines of their own establishment for meals at their restaurants or rooms in their hotel.

The value of money cannot be determined by the measure of grams in a silver coin or the measure of ounces in gold or even the denomination printed on paper notes. Grams, ounces and numbers help identify the medium of exchange but the value of money is only determined by its relationship to the market i.e. the money supply in relation to the Gross National Product.

1 As money, a cow has numerous disadvantages but at least it's almost impossible to counterfeit. Gold like cows is harder to  
2 counterfeit, but it also has many disadvantages. Gold is a commodity that changes constantly in value with constant changes  
3 in supply and demand. In an expanding economy gold based currency has often suffered from under supply. Gold can also  
4 be cumbersome and difficult to exchange...for that reason gold is generally converted to paper bills and Fractional Reserve  
5 banking in which only a small amount of actual gold was reserved to back the paper currency.

6 Hyrum J. Amundsen Jr. author of the book *How to Cure Inflation* wrote:

7 *Since bankers pretty much had a corner on the gold they were in a position to control the economics of*  
8 *the different nations either up or down, i.e., if the gold was to be the reserve of the money in circulation.*  
9 *To induce a money panic and therefore, a depression as they did in 1929-33, all they had to do was to*  
10 *remove a substantial amount of gold which was backing the money and there would be required a*  
11 *proportionate reduction of the money supply in order to comply with the fractional reserve requirement.*  
12 *In this manner the international bankers exercised control of the government instead of the government*  
13 *exercising control of the bankers.*

14 When Cortez and other Europeans plundered America and shipped the gold booty back to Europe... inflation resulted because  
15 the supply of gold currency increased in relation to goods and services.

16 In the 1860's when the mines of Virginia City, Nevada were in peak operation the gold and silver backed currencies of Europe  
17 were destabilized because of the huge and rapid increase in the supply of these metals internationally.

18 Franklin Roosevelt also inflated the money supply by manipulating the value of gold and decreasing the value of the dollar.  
19 Before **Fraudlin Deficit Russiavel** instituted his money manipulations \$20.00 would purchase an ounce of gold... after  
20 F.D.R. it required \$35.00 to buy an ounce of gold. **Fraudlin** went so far as to deprive sovereign Americans the right to own  
21 gold.

22 Gold is not God. It is subject to manipulation and fluctuations and will not buy redemption from dereliction of duty, fraud,  
23 conspiracy or stupidity. Scripture reminds us, "When the wicked rule, the people mourn." The cost of Liberty is eternal  
24 vigilance. Congress has the power to create and regulate the value of money and Sovereign americans have the duty to see  
25 that wise and honest men are elected to Congress.

26 When tyrants are in control it is our Christian duty to throw the Rascals out as did our Founding Fathers.

27 The following FAMOUS QUOTES on MONEY courtesy of American Covenant Church, Medford Oregon... reveals the  
28 BEAST and his antagonists at war over MONEY.

### 29 **16.3 Quotes on money**

#### 30 **Famous Quotes on Money**

#### 31 **The Bible Condemns Usury Banking:**

32 *Deuteronomy 23:19 Thou shalt not lend upon usury to thy brother; usury of money, usury of victuals,*  
33 *usury of any thing that is lent upon usury.*

34 *Leviticus 25:36-37 Take thou no usury of him, or increase; but fear thy God; that thy brother may live*  
35 *with thee. Thou shalt not give him thy money upon usury, nor lend him thy victuals for increase.*

36 *When the Babylonian civilization collapsed, three percent of the people owned all the wealth. When old*  
37 *Persia went down to destruction two percent of the people owned all the wealth. When ancient Greece*  
38 *went down to ruin one-half of one percent of the people owned all the wealth. When the Roman empire*  
39 *fell by the wayside, two thousand people owned the wealth of the civilized world...It is said at this time*  
40 *less than two percent (2%) of the people control ninety percent of the wealth of America.*  
41 *[Lincoln Money Martyred]*

1 **Aristotle on Usury in 350 B.C. wrote:**

2 *The most hated sort of money-making, and with the greatest reason, is usury, which makes a gain out*  
3 *of money itself and not from the natural use of it—for money was intended merely for exchange, not for*  
4 *increase at interest. And this term interest, which implies the birth of money from money, is applied to*  
5 *the breeding of money, because the offspring resembles the parent. Wherefore of all modes of money-*  
6 *making, this is the most unnatural.*

7 *[The Church and Usury, by Rev. P. Cleary]*

8 **Saint Thomas Aquinas:**

9 *He who takes usury for a loan of money acts unjustly for he sells what does not exist. It is wrong in*  
10 *itself to take a price (usury) for the use of money lent, and as in the case of other offences against justice,*  
11 *one is bound to make restitution of his unjustly acquired money.*

12 *[The Church and Usury, by Rev. P. Cleary]*

13 **Benjamin Franklin:**

14 While visiting England in 1763, Benjamin Franklin was asked how he accounted for the prosperous condition of the Colonies.  
15 His reply was:

16 *That is simple. It is only because in the Colonies we issue our own money. It is called “Colonial Scrip”*  
17 *— and we issue it in the proper proportion to the demands of trade and industry.*

18 Soon that information was brought to the Rothschild’s bank which coerced the English Parliament to pass a Bill providing  
19 that no Colony could issue its own money. Franklin said:

20 *Within one year from that date the streets of the Colonies were filled with the unemployed.*

21 Franklin later said that this was the original cause of the Revolutionary War. In his own language:

22 *The Colonies would gladly have borne the little tax on tea and other matters had it not been that*  
23 *England took away from the Colonies their money, which created unemployment and dissatisfaction.*  
24 *[Lightning Over The Treasury Building, J.R. Elsom]*

25 **John Adams 1787:**

26 *All the perplexities, confusion and distress in America arise, not from defects in their Constitution or*  
27 *Confederation, not from want of honor or virtue, so much as from the downright ignorance of the nature*  
28 *of coin, credit and circulation.*

29 *[Money - Questions & Answers, C. Coughlin]*

30 **In 1790 Mayer Amschel Rothschild said:**

31 *Permit me to issue and control the money of a nation and I care not who makes its laws.*

32 **Thomas Jefferson said:**

33 *I believe that banking institutions are more dangerous to our liberties than standing armies. Already*  
34 *they have raised up a money aristocracy that has set the government at defiance. The issuing power (of*  
35 *money) should be taken from the banks, and restored to the people to whom it belongs.*

36 *[Lincoln Money Martyred]*

1 *If the American people ever allow private banks to control the issue of their currency, first by inflation*  
2 *and then by deflation, the banks and corporations that will grow up around them will deprive the people*  
3 *of all property until their children will wake up homeless on the continent their fathers conquered.*

4 *I hope we shall crush in its birth the aristocracy of the moneyed corporations, which dare already to*  
5 *challenge our Government to trial of strength and bid defiance to the laws of our country.*  
6 *[Money - Questions & Answers, C. Coughlin]*

7 **Lord Acton, Lord Chief Justice of England in 1875 stated:**

8 *The issue which has swept down the centuries and which will have to be fought sooner or later is the*  
9 *People vs. the Banks.*  
10 *[I Want The Earth—Plus 5 Percent]*

11 **President Andrew Jackson to the bankers who approached him in the drawing room of the White**  
12 **House:**

13 *Gentlemen, I have had men watching you for a long time and I am convinced that you have used the*  
14 *funds of the bank to speculate in the breadstuffs of the country. When you won, you divided the profits*  
15 *amongst you, and when you lost, you charged it to the bank. You tell me that if I take the deposits from*  
16 *the bank and annul its charter I shall ruin ten thousand families. That may be true, gentlemen, but that*  
17 *is your sin! Should I let you go on you will ruin fifty thousand families, and that would be my sin! You*  
18 *are a den of vipers and thieves. I have determined to rout you out, and by the Eternal God, I will rout*  
19 *you out!*  
20 *[Money - Questions & Answers, C. Coughlin]*

21 **Abraham Lincoln:**

22 *The money power preys upon the nation in times of peace and conspires against it in times of adversity.*  
23 *It is more despotic than monarchy, more insolent than autocracy, more selfish than bureaucracy. It*  
24 *denounces, as public enemies, all who question its methods or throw light upon its crimes.*  
25 *[Famous Quotations on Money, by Sheldon Emry]*

26 **Editorial in the London Times after “Lincoln Greenbacks” were issued:**

27 If this mischievous financial policy, which has its origin in the North American Republic, shall become endured down to a  
28 fixture, then that Government will furnish its own money without cost. It will pay off its debts and be without debt. It will  
29 have all the money necessary to carry on its commerce. It will become prosperous without precedent in the history of the  
30 world. The brains and the wealth of all countries will go to North America. That government must be destroyed or it will  
31 destroy every monarchy on the globe.

32 **The Hazard Circular - published by London bankers, 1863:**

33 The great debt that the Capitalists will see to it is made out of the war must be used to control the value of money. To  
34 accomplish this government bonds must be used as a banking basis. We are now waiting for the Secretary of the Treasury of  
35 the United States to make that recommendation.

36 It will not do to allow greenbacks, as they are called, to circulate as money for any length of time as we cannot control them.  
37 But we can control the bonds and through them the banking issues.

38 **Salmon P. Chase in referring to the National Bank Act of 1862 said:**

39 *My agency in promoting the passage of the National Bank Act was the greatest financial mistake of my*  
40 *life. It has built up a monopoly, which affects every interest in the country. It should be repealed, but*  
41 *before that can be accomplished, the people will be arrayed on one side and the banks on the other, in*  
42 *a contest such as we have never before seen in this country.*

1 [Famous Quotations on Money, by Sheldon Emry]

2 **Letter to: Messieurs. Iklheimer, Morton and Vandergould, No. 3 Wall St., New York, U.S.A.:**

3 Dear Sirs: A Mr. John Sherman has written us from a town in Ohio, U.S.A., as to the profits that may  
4 be made in the National Banking business under a recent act of your Congress (**National Bank Act of**  
5 **1863**), a copy of which act accompanied his letter. Apparently this act has been drawn upon the plan  
6 formulated here last summer by the British Bankers Association and by that Association recommended  
7 to our American friends as one that if enacted into law, would prove highly profitable to the banking  
8 fraternity throughout the world.

9 Mr. Sherman declares that there has never before been such an opportunity for capitalists to  
10 accumulate money, as that presented by this act and that the old plan, of State Banks is so unpopular,  
11 that the new scheme will, by contrast, be most favorably regarded, notwithstanding the fact that it gives  
12 the National Banks an almost absolute control of the National finance. 'The few who can understand  
13 the system,' he says 'will either be so interested in its profits, or so dependent on its favors, that there  
14 will be no opposition from that class, while on the other hand, the great body of people, mentally  
15 incapable of comprehending the tremendous advantages that capital derives from the system, will bear  
16 its burdens without complaint and perhaps without even suspecting that the system is inimical (adverse)  
17 to their interests.' Please advise us fully as to this matter and also state whether or not you will be of  
18 assistance to us, if we conclude to establish a National Bank in the City of New York... Awaiting your  
19 reply, we are.

20 Your respectful servants.  
21 Rothschild Brothers.  
22 London, June 25, 1863

23 [Lightning Over The Treasury Building, J.R. Elsom]

24 **Henry Ford said:**

25 The function of money is not to make money but to move goods. Money is only one part of our  
26 transportation system. It moves goods from man to man. A dollar bill is like a postage stamp: it is no  
27 good unless it will move commodities between persons. If a postage stamp will not carry a letter, or  
28 money will not move goods, it is just the same as an engine that will not run. Someone will have to get  
29 out and fix it.

30 [Money - Questions & Answers, C. Coughlin]

31 **Hon. Charles A. Lindbergh, Sr., on December 23, 1913 stated:**

32 This Federal Reserve Act establishes the most gigantic trust on earth. When the President (Wilson)  
33 signs this bill the invisible government of the Monetary Power will be legalized.

34 [Famous Quotations on Money, by Sheldon Emry]

35 **Concerning government bonds issued for a construction project Thomas Edison said:**

36 People who will not turn a shovel full of dirt on the project, nor contribute a pound of material, will collect more money from  
37 the United States than will the people who supply all the material and do all the work. This is the terrible thing about interest.

38 In all great bond issues the interest is always greater than the principal. All the great public works cost more than twice as  
39 much on that account. Under the present system of doing business we simply add from 120% to 150% to the stated cost.

40 But here is the point: If our nation can issue a dollar bond, it is capable of issuing a dollar bill. The element that makes the  
41 bond good makes the bill good also. The difference between the bond and the bill is that the bond lets the money broker  
42 collect twice the amount of the bond and an additional 20%. Whereas the currency, the honest sort provided by the  
43 Constitution, pays nobody but those who contribute in some useful way. It is absurd to say our country can issue bonds and  
44 cannot issue currency. Both are promises to pay but one fattens the user and the other helps the people.

1 *If the currency issued by the people were no good, then the bonds would be no good either. It is a*  
2 *terrible situation when the Government, to insure the National wealth, must go in debt and submit to*  
3 *ruinous interest charges at the hands of men who control the fictitious value of gold. Interest is the*  
4 *invention of Satan.*

5 *[Lightning Over The Treasury Building, J.R. Elsom]*

6 **Sir Josiah Stamp, President of the Bank of England, in an informal talk to 150 University of Texas**  
7 **students in the 1920's said:**

8 *Banking was conceived in iniquity and born in sin...Bankers own the world. Take it away from them,*  
9 *but leave them the power to create money...and with the flick of a pen, they will create enough money*  
10 *to buy it back again...Take this great power away from bankers, and all great fortunes like mine will*  
11 *disappear, and they ought to disappear, because this would then be a better and happier world to live*  
12 *in...But if you want to continue to be the slaves of bankers, and pay the cost of your own slavery, let*  
13 *them continue to create (your) money.*

14 *["Bankonomics" in One Easy Lesson, by Peter Cook]*

15 **In 1933 Congressman Louis T. McFadden wrote:**

16 *Every effort has been made by the Federal Reserve Board (FED) to conceal its powers, but the truth is-*  
17 *the FED has usurped the government. It controls everything here (in Congress) and it controls all our*  
18 *foreign relations. It makes and breaks governments at will.*

19 *[Billions for the Bankers, by Sheldon Emry]*

20 **Robert Hemphill, for 8 years credit manager of the Federal Reserve Bank of Atlanta said:**

21 *If all bank loans were paid, no one would have a bank deposit, and there would not be a dollar of*  
22 *currency in circulation. This is a staggering thought. We are completely dependent on the commercial*  
23 *banks. Someone has to borrow every dollar we have in circulation, cash or credit. If the banks create*  
24 *ample synthetic money, we are prosperous; if not, we starve. We are absolutely without a permanent*  
25 *monetary system. When one gets a complete grasp upon the picture, the tragic absurdity of our hopeless*  
26 *position is almost incredible-but there it is. It (the banking problem) is the most important subject*  
27 *intelligent persons can investigate and reflect upon. It is so important that our present civilization may*  
28 *collapse unless it is widely understood and the defects remedied very soon.*

29 *[Famous Quotations on Money, by Sheldon Emry]*

30 **Emanuel Josephson stated in the Rockefeller Internationalist:**

31 *They [the Rockefellers] control most of the important newspapers, magazines, and book publishing*  
32 *houses in the country, including the Curtis Publications, the Hearst Publications, Time, the New York*  
33 *Times, the Associated Press and many others.*

34 *[The Elements of Economics, J.L. Carmichael]*

35 **John Moody wrote:**

36 *Seven men on Wall Street now control a great share of the fundamental industry and resources of the*  
37 *United States. Three of the seven men, J.P. Morgan, James J. Hill, George F. Baker, head of the First*  
38 *National Bank of New York belong to the so-called Morgan group; four of them, John D. and William*  
39 *Rockefeller, James Stillman, head of the National City Bank, and Jacob H. Schiff on the private banking*  
40 *firm of Kuhn, Loeb Company, to the so-called Standard Oil City Bank group...the central machine of*  
41 *capital extends its control over the United States...The process is not only economically logical; it is*  
42 *now practically automatic.*

43 *[Secrets of the Federal Reserve, by Eustace Mullins]*

44 **The Banker's Manifest, 1934:**

1 Capital must protect itself in every way, through combination and through legislation. Debts must be collected and loans and  
2 mortgages foreclosed as soon as possible. When through a process of law the common people have lost their homes, they  
3 will be more tractable and more easily governed by the strong arm of the law, applied by the central power of wealth, under  
4 control of leading financiers. People without homes will not quarrel with their leaders. This is well known among our principal  
5 men now engaged in forming an imperialism of capital to govern the world. By dividing the people we can get them to expend  
6 their energies in fighting over questions of no importance to us except as teachers of the common herd...

### 7 **Nobel Prize Winner Frederick Soddy:**

8 The whole profit of the issuance of money has provided the capital of the great banking business as it exists today. Starting  
9 with nothing whatever of their own, they have got the whole world into their debt irredeemably, by a trick.

10 This money comes into existence every time the banks “lend” and disappears every time the debt is repaid to them. So that if  
11 industry tries to repay, the money of the nation disappears. This is what makes prosperity so “dangerous” as it destroys money  
12 just when it is most needed, and precipitates a slump.

13 There is nothing left now for us but to ever get deeper and deeper into debt to the banking system in order to provide the  
14 increasing amounts of money the nation requires for its expansion and growth.

15 *An honest money system is the only alternative.*  
16 *[Lightning Over The Treasury Building, J.R. Elsom]*

### 17 **Andrae Nordskog:**

18 In February, 1850, our State of California issued bonds in the sum of \$943.40 to pay for a granite slab to be placed at the 120  
19 foot level inside of Washington’s Monument on the grounds of our National Capitol.

20 Our Golden State issued short term bonds bearing interest at the rate of 36% annually. In 1873 new bonds, in the amount of  
21 \$2,277,500.00 were issued to retire the original bonds. Since that time the State has paid over \$10,000,000 in interest but not  
22 one cent on the principal. — *We Bankers, by Andrae Nordskog*

### 23 **John R. Elsom, 1941:**

24 *Since the people have either lost the heart to borrow from the Banks, or their collateral has already*  
25 *been taken over by the Banks - the latter being primarily the case - and therefore can no longer borrow,*  
26 *in order to get money into circulation the Government must do the borrowing in lieu of the people.*  
27 *[Lightning Over The Treasury Building, J.R. Elsom]*

### 28 **Summer H. Slichter (Professor Business Economics at Harvard):**

29 *The principal way in which dollars are created is by borrowing. This means that the number of dollars*  
30 *in existence at any particular time depends upon the ability and willingness of the banks to lend. The*  
31 *volume of purchasing power fluctuates with the state of men’s minds; the growth of pessimism may*  
32 *suddenly throw millions of men out of work (because of the lack of currency), or the growth of*  
33 *confidence may create thousands of job overnight (because of sufficient currency).*  
34 *[Lightning Over The Treasury Building, J.R. Elsom]*

## 35 **16.4 Assassinations**

36 The Committee to Restore the Constitution in their November 1991 BULLETIN reported on Presidential Assassinations.  
37 Following are excerpted quotes:

### 38 **Attempt on President Andrew Jackson**

39 In 1811—Hamilton’s bank charter expired and the international bankers precipitated the war of 1812. By 1816 another  
40 privately-owned U.S. bank was started up... When the 1816 charter expired in 1836 — President Andrew Jackson VETOED

1 IT! It was at this time that Jackson made his three famous statements. First, Jackson told Van Buren according to the National  
2 Geographic Society: “The Bank is trying to kill me — but I will kill it.” Second he said, “If the American people only  
3 understood the rank injustice of our money and banking system — there would be a revolution before morning...”; Third,  
4 “You are a den of vipers. I intend to rout you out and by the eternal God — I will rout you out...” ... For his courageous words  
5 and action — there was an assassination attempt on President Jackson — but by the grace of God — both pistols, only inches  
6 from his chest, misfired!

### 7 **President Abraham Lincoln**

8 President Lincoln needed money to pay for the Civil War, he asked Congress to pass a law authorizing the printing of full  
9 legal tender Treasury notes. Lincoln said at that time: “We gave the people of this Republic the greatest blessing they ever  
10 had — their own paper money to pay their own debts...” These Treasury notes were printed with green ink on the back so the  
11 people called them “greenbacks” — debt-free and interest free and paid the soldiers, U.S. government employees — and  
12 bought supplies for the war... this vexed the international bankers who had wanted Lincoln to borrow the money from them  
13 so the American people would owe endless interest on the loan... Lincoln was assassinated after the war by an individual  
14 history shows had ties to the secret societies of Europe — John Wilkes Booth. After Lincoln’s assassination the government  
15 was induced to revoke the debt-free, interest-free greenbacks.

### 16 **President James A. Garfield**

17 James A. Garfield was elected the 20th president of the United States... “In 1862 he was elected to the U.S. House of  
18 Representatives where he served until 1880. Chairman of the House Committee on Appropriations, he became expert in fiscal  
19 matters, advocating a high protective tariff...”

20 Shortly before his election to presidency Garfield is reported to have said: “whoever controls the volume of money in any  
21 country is absolute master of all industry and commerce.”

22 On July 2nd, 1881 after only four months in office, Garfield was shot at the railroad station in Washington D.C. by Charles  
23 J. Guiteau “a disappointed office seeker.”

### 24 **President William McKinley**

25 In 1900 William McKinley was elected by a large majority to a second term... as a champion of protective tariffs... he opposed  
26 the renewal of the bank charter... shortly after his re-election the Encyclopedia Britannica tells us: “he was fatally shot on  
27 September 6, 1901, by Leon Czolgosz, an anarchist” ... another president who happened to oppose international bankers, shot  
28 reportedly by a “lone nut”.

### 29 **President John F. Kennedy**

30 President Kennedy’s Executive Order of June 4, 1963 11.110 called for the issuance of \$4,292,893.00 in United States Notes...  
31 some of these notes were printed and circulated. After Kennedy’s assassination these “Kennedy Bills” were quickly  
32 withdrawn from circulation. (End of Bulletin excerpts.)

## 33 **16.5 Den of thieves**

34 St. Mark reported (Chap. 11 vs 15 & 17): “...and Jesus went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold and bought  
35 in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the money changers...saying unto them, Is it not written, My house shall be called  
36 of all nations the house of prayer? But ye have made it a den of thieves.”

37 History will disclose that the most influential man of the Twentieth century is Edward Mandell House. According to his  
38 biographer Charles Seymour, Sterling Professor of History, Yale University; House was “The unseen guardian angel” of the  
39 Federal Reserve Act. Writes Seymour...

40 *“House disdained fame and achieved it...the circle widened that recognized him a powerful factor in*  
41 *national and international politics, and yet few could answer the simplest question about him...Puzzled*  
42 *but untroubled they accepted him finally as “the President’s advisor.”*

1 This secretive little man was a powerful enemy of the *U.S. Constitution* and chief architect of the modern Corporate (Fascist)  
2 State. Anonymously, House authored “Philip Dru: Administrator” in 1912. The collectivist plot as revealed in Philip Dru has  
3 been directing America’s political agenda since then and continues through the Clinton administration’s New World Order  
4 fomentation.

5 So powerful was manipulator E. M. House that President Woodrow Wilson stated,

6 *“Mr. House is my second personality. He is my independent self. His thoughts and mine are one...”*

7 Writing in July 1937, Thomas W. Phelps, then Washington Bureau Chief for the *Wall Street Journal*, wrote the following  
8 assessment:

9 *“As Congress puts the finishing touches on the legislative program of the first four years of the*  
10 *Roosevelt Administration, Col. E. M. House, confidant of President Roosevelt emerges as the prophet,*  
11 *if not the real brain trust of the New Deal...”*

12 The secret combinations of conspirator House inflicted revolutionary programs and events upon the unsuspecting American  
13 people and upon the world that included the: Federal Reserve System; Sixteenth Amendment; Seventeenth Amendment;  
14 America’s involvement in World Wars beginning with WWI and continuing into the Twenty-first century; League of Nations;  
15 Council on Foreign Relations; Social Security System; United Nations; New World Order.

16 The American People know next to nothing about Edward Mandell House and possibly even less about the Federal Reserve  
17 Notes that control their daily lives.

18 Thomas Jefferson stated, “If a nation expects to be ignorant and free, it expects what never was and never will be.” Let us  
19 continue our education:

20 The only way money gets into circulation in the United States is through the creation of debt. The Treasury issues bonds of  
21 credit to the private Federal Reserve Bank which then prints the Federal Reserve Notes and lends these debt certificates back  
22 to the United States Government at usury interest to be circulated as “money.” If the debt were ever paid off in full, there  
23 would be no money in circulation. With debt money, the only way to increase the money supply needed for an expanding  
24 economy is to amass ever larger and larger debts. Eventually, the debt bubble must burst.

25 Mayer Amschel Rothschild of Germany (1743-1812) the father of our present-day International Banking System stated,  
26 “Permit me to issue and control the money of a nation and I care not who makes its laws.”

27 The “Federal Reserve System” is a perfect example of a private money monopoly.

28 It is self evident that whoever controls the money of a nation can and does have the power to take over political parties and  
29 governments and can manipulate people with propaganda, controlled news, controlled education, staged wars, debt, inflation  
30 and/or deflation, unemployment, depressions and even covert or overt revolutions.

## 31 **16.6 Resolution**

32 Proverbs 22 vs 7 reminds us that “The borrower is servant to the lender.” No individual, no nation can be free and in debt.  
33 We are a nation of debtors. With unfunded liabilities such as Social Security the Federal Government is over  
34 \$25,000,000,000,000 in debt. The once most free and richest nation on earth is now like the Prodigal Son, a servant of sin  
35 and debt. We have become a nation of tax slaves and have surrendered our Sovereignty for a mess of pottage. We are like the  
36 children of Israel under the harsh yoke of bondage to the Pharaoh.

37 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty is like a voice crying in the wilderness proclaiming, “Prepare ye the  
38 way of the Lord” and with ringing testimony invites all to resound with the message of the LIBERTY BELL to:

39 *Proclaim Liberty throughout all the Land unto all the Inhabitants thereof.*

40 Conscious of our individual and national sins we with contrition and hope remember:

1 II Chronicles 7:14:

2 *If My people which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek My face, and*  
3 *turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from Heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their*  
4 *land.*

5 Moses, the great Emancipator importuned before Pharaoh to “Let my people go.” We Sovereigns must similarly seek redress  
6 of our grievances by seeking Executive, Legislative and Judicial remedy at the State and Federal institutions of government.  
7 We must arm ourselves first with the knowledge of the proper role of government and the understanding of money.

8 Pictured below is a 1963 issue of a United States Note (Not a Federal Reserve Note):



9

10 Abraham Lincoln said:

11 *The Government should create, issue, and circulate all the currency and credit needed to satisfy the*  
12 *spending power of the government and the buying power of the consumers. The privilege of creating*  
13 *and issuing of money is not only the supreme prerogative of Government, but it is the Government's*  
14 *greatest creative opportunity.*

15 *By the adoption of these principles, the long-felt want for a uniform medium will be satisfied. The*  
16 *taxpayers will be saved immense sums of interest. The financing of all public enterprises, the*  
17 *maintenance of stable government and ordered progress, and the conduct of the Treasury will become*  
18 *matters of practical administration. Money will cease to be master and become the servant of humanity.*

19 President Abraham Lincoln issued \$449,338,902 debt-free U.S. Notes into circulation. He clearly understood the importance  
20 of debt-free government financing and the imperative need to spend money into circulation rather than to borrow it into  
21 circulation.

22 These “Lincoln Greenbacks” remained in circulation debt-free stimulating the economy and general welfare of we the people  
23 for over 100 years. In fact as a young paperboy in the 1950’s I collected many \$5.00 greenbacks. These were quite valuable  
24 then as one \$5.00 bill could be exchanged for one hundred 5-cent candy bars.

## 25 **16.7 United States Note**

26 These United States Notes were backed by the taxing power of the government, which meant all of the resources of the nation,  
27 not just certain commodities, but the entire economy of the nation guaranteed the exchange value of this money.

1 The Founders in order to establish a more perfect union established the taxing power in the *Constitution* correcting the  
2 inadequacy of the Articles of Confederation. They also established, in this document of separation and balance of powers; in  
3 Article I Section 10. “No State shall...coin Money; emit Bills of Credit; make any thing but gold and silver Coin a Tender in  
4 Payment of Debts;” No such limitation was placed on the Congress which was given unlimited power “To coin Money and  
5 regulate the value thereof,...” This creative power given exclusively to Congress was illegally transferred to the privately  
6 owned Federal Reserve System which is neither Federal nor does it have any reserves, but is sustained by debt bondage and  
7 usury. Sufficient concern manifest by an informed and alarmed citizenry can still provoke a responsive Congress to correct  
8 this fraudulent abuse.

9 Individual States could also provide remedy by exercising their Constitutional power to make gold and silver coin a tender  
10 in payment of debt.

11 A State could simply mandate that all taxes are to be paid in silver and gold coin of private, national or foreign mint. These  
12 taxes could then be deposited in State Banks, not in Federal Banks that drain the State of Capital. The State could then issue  
13 coin or tender such as gold and silver certificates in payment to State employees and for goods and services rendered to the  
14 State. This tender would circulate like gaming chips once did in Nevada; however, they would be backed by the Sovereign  
15 State and would be as good as gold. The State Bank would become a reservoir of capital that would enhance local economic  
16 growth. Profits derived from the bank would provide the local government with a non-tax source of income further  
17 emancipating the local citizenry and providing for the general welfare of the people.

18 By repairing to God Inspired Law articulated in the *Constitution of the United States* the Sovereign americans can provide  
19 remedy to the calamity that is upon us, make money and government our servants as intended by God and emancipate  
20 ourselves and our posterity from the clutches of the Money Changers.

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40  
41  
42

## **17 Chapter 17: Deception: Religion of the Beast**

### **17.1 This man's religion is vain**

By Christopher Holloman Hansen

Deception, the Religion of the Beast is defined in the Bible:

*If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but **deceiveth** his own heart, this man's religion is vain.  
[James 1:26]*

You see, “deception“, or darkness, is the Religion of Satan, the Religion of the “false prophet”, the Religion of the Beast. The scripture does not say that a man that is deceived does not have religion, it says his “religion is vain.”

Satan’s religion is an antithesis to Christianity and must be consistently evil. It cannot do a good thing or Satan’s kingdom will fail.

*And if a house be divided against itself, that house cannot stand. And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.  
[Mark 3:25 & 26]*

If Satan’s Religion has the appearance of righteousness or seems “to be religious“ it is, and only can be, a deception that leadeth away unto darkness and darkness is of evil for it leads unto deception.

*Then Jesus said unto them, Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while ye have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness knoweth not whither he goeth.  
[John 12:35]*

It is also clear that there can be no middle ground for the Christian in these last days. We must choose between the Darkness of personal deception and our personal relationship with the light, Jesus Christ.

*I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of my mouth.  
[Rev. 3:15]*

The precepts of the Religion of Satan and those of Christianity are very clearly defined in a single chapter of the Bible that speaks succinctly concerning these two opposing governments in these last days. Most of the Satanic Religious philosophies are self evident in relation to the government of the United States since the New Deal of Satan’s prophet FDR; but the editor could not resist a few comments which are found in parentheses.

*This know also, that in the **last days** perilous times shall come. For men shall be lovers of their own selves, (secular humanism) covetous (Social Security), boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, without natural affection, (homosexual agenda) trucebreakers, false accusers, incontinent, fierce, despisers of those that are good (pro-abortionist legislators), **traitors**, (this word is of particular interest as “traitor” is strictly a political term) heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, (socialism, communism, fascism, are all put forward as a replacements for Christianity and all involve forced charity) but denying the power thereof: from such turn away. (We are commanded to turn away from these deceptions) For of this sort are they which creep into houses, and lead captive silly women laden with sins, led away with divers lusts, (the internet pornography industry) ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth (Have you ever seen a better description of the ungodly government school system). Now as Jannes and Jambres (magicians of Pharaoh acting for the government of Egypt) withstood Moses, so do these also resist the truth: men of corrupt minds, reprobate concerning the faith. (The United States Supreme*

1 *Court among other government leaders) But they shall proceed no further: for their folly shall be*  
2 *manifest unto all men, as theirs also was. But thou hast fully known my doctrine, manner of life, purpose,*  
3 *faith, longsuffering, charity, patience, persecutions, afflictions, which came unto me at Antioch, at*  
4 *Iconium, at Lystra; what persecutions I endured: but out of them all the Lord delivered me. **Yea, and***  
5 ***all that will live godly in Christ Jesus shall suffer persecution.** But evil men and seducers shall wax*  
6 *worse and worse, **deceiving, and being deceived.** (Does this not describe Presidents Nixon and Clinton*  
7 *and their cabinets and their scandals?) But continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and*  
8 *hast been assured of, knowing of whom thou hast learned them; and that from a child thou hast known*  
9 *the holy scriptures, which are able to make thee wise unto salvation through faith which is in Christ*  
10 *Jesus. All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for*  
11 *correction, for instruction in righteousness that the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished*  
12 *unto all good works. (The scriptures are our guide against “despisers of those that are good, **traitors,***  
13 *heady, highminded, lovers of pleasures more than lovers of God; having a form of godliness, but*  
14 *denying the power thereof”)*  
15 *[II Timothy, Chapter 3]*

16 The warning continues in II Tim. Chapter 4:3 & 4:

17 *For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they*  
18 *heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; and they shall turn away their ears from the truth,*  
19 *and shall be turned unto fables.*

20 This Satanic religion is later confirmed in Revelation 12:9 and 19:19-20:

21 *And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which **deceiveth** the*  
22 *whole world: (The Social Security system is now recognized in over 125 countries world wide) he was*  
23 *cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I saw the **beast, and the kings of the***  
24 ***earth,** and their armies, gathered together to make war against him that sat on the horse, and against*  
25 *his army. And the **beast was taken, and with him the false prophet** that wrought miracles before him,*  
26 *with which he **deceived** them that had received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his*  
27 *image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.*

28 Please note that the “**kings of the earth**” (governments) have become confederate with the “**false prophet**” of Satan’s diverse  
29 Religion of Deception.

30 Satan is diverse in his wickedness and temptations. Many temptations are small and intended for the individual but many are  
31 on a larger scale with world domination in mind. It is recorded Biblically that Satan believes the entire world is his to  
32 command and give unto his servants. This is made clear in his temptation of our very Christ as recorded in Matt. 4:8 & 9:

33 *Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and shew-eth him all the kingdoms of*  
34 *the world, and the glory of them; and saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall*  
35 *down and worship me.*

36 Please note that Satan uses the religious term “worship” and that he (Satan) will give Christ the “kingdoms of the world” a  
37 secular term.

38 We all know that the Satanic religion is in direct opposition to Christianity but we read in Isaiah 9:6 and 7 that this opposition  
39 is on all levels including who is in charge of governments.

40 *For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: **and the government shall be upon his shoulder:***  
41 *and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The*  
42 *Prince of Peace. **Of the increase of his government** and peace there shall be no end, **upon the throne***  
43 ***of David,** and **upon his kingdom,** to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from*  
44 *henceforth even for ever.*

1 As you can clearly see there is no wall of separation of church and state in either religions government of Christ or Satan.  
2 Just as that term is never found in either the *Declaration of Independence* nor the *Constitution of the United States* of America.

### 3 **17.2 Deceiving and being deceived**

4 The fact that Satan will use governments to “deceive“ mankind and fight against God and those that follow Christ is well  
5 documented in Eph. 6:12:

6 *For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers*  
7 *of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places.*

8 And also in Rev. 19:19 & 20:

9 *And I saw the **beast, and the kings of the earth**, and their armies, gathered **together** to make war against*  
10 *him that sat on the horse, and against his army. And the beast was taken, and with him the **false prophet***  
11 *that wrought miracles before him, with which he **deceived** them that had received the **mark of the beast**,*  
12 *and them that **worshipped** his image.*

### 13 **17.3 There cannot be a separation of church and state**

14 The war between Christ’s army of Christian Soldiers and Satan’s army of Darkness and Deception was confirmed on  
15 November 12, 1999 by Taslima Nasreen who took the floor during Commission V of the United Nation’s UNESCO’s General  
16 Conference, as a delegate of the NGO “International Humanist and Ethical Union. This following statement is taken from Ms  
17 Nasreen’s declaration:

18 *[T]he state has to be secular, the religious laws have to be abolished to create uniform civil code in*  
19 *which women get equalities. Education, of course secular education, is important for women to get the*  
20 *knowledge about their rights. Religious education and politics based on religion must be banned to*  
21 *save mankind. It is impossible to have coexistence of religion and freedom of expression.*

22 History does repeat itself. What is happening to the United States today is very similar to happened to Israel of old as recorded  
23 in Jer. 2:19 & 20:

24 *Thine own wickedness shall correct thee, and thy backslidings shall reprove thee: know therefore and*  
25 *see that it is an evil thing and bitter, that thou hast forsaken the LORD thy God, and that my fear is not*  
26 *in thee, saith the Lord GOD of hosts. For of old time I have broken thy yoke, and burst thy bands; and*  
27 *thou saidst, I will not transgress; when upon every high hill and under every green tree thou wanderest,*  
28 *playing the harlot.*

29 Three versions of Satan’s religion of deception through the kings of the earth will hereafter be detailed. The religions of  
30 Witchcraft, Socialism and Neo-Darwinism. Naturally, these are only three of the countless false religions established by the  
31 father of lies, Satan, Lucifer, that old serpent, the Dragon.

32 Politics and Religion are not, have not and cannot be separated. Christ doesn’t. Satan doesn’t. This is the truth but Satan does  
33 not tell the truth. To believe that can be done is to be deceived and thereby embrace the Religion of the Beast and deceiveth  
34 your own heart.

### 35 **17.4 Politics of Witchcraft**

36 By Tupper Saussy

37 The Good Book warns us that “If a ruler hearken to lies, all his servants are wicked” (Proverbs 29:12).

38 Lying is deadly and highly contagious. The man who receives his information from a liar will spew out lies when he passes  
39 the information on. When you have liars trained in the demonic arts controlling the highest seats of governmental authority,  
40 you will have liars controlling the information channels. When their lies fill the printed pages, loudspeakers, and TV screens,

1 you will have liars administering the work places, market places, schools, churches, and homes. Without realizing it, your  
2 nation becomes possessed by demons. Your nation practices the politics of witchcraft.

3 A liar's fortunes are very cleverly established on his pretenses of virtue, otherwise well-meaning people would have nothing  
4 to do with him. He will not think twice about murdering to protect his good reputation, just as a woman cursed with a fetus  
5 from a lie-marriage will murder the baby to keep demands on her time and finances at a minimum.

6 In a lying society, murder is an acceptable alternative to radically changing one's views. In lying societies, the virtues are  
7 brutishness, deceit, sodomy, theft, debt, suicide, art. He who is most menacing and monstrous is most popular. The powerful  
8 liar rules. The Oscars and Emmys and political elections go to the best impersonators while the Grammys and centerfolds go  
9 to the best seducers.

10 Though powerful in appearance, liars are in reality extremely fragile. There is no protection for a liar except darkness or the  
11 mercy of a more powerful liar. This is why lying societies crave dimness of room and of mind. It is why they seek bondage  
12 to human, rather than Godly, authority. Other humans can be deceived; God cannot. Now the bondage won't always manifest  
13 itself through the familiar symbols of slavery. Not all American lie-families keep on hand whips and chains like those found  
14 in eminently respectable CIA agent Clay Shaw's home by investigators searching out Shaw's supervisory involvement in  
15 President Kennedy's assassination.

## 16 **17.5 Demonic arts controlling the highest seats of government**

17 In demonic political systems, the bondage is assumed through adhesion contracts extended by liars to lie-believers...When  
18 founding father Elbridge Gerry condemned 'the fury of excess democracy,' not one framer of the *Constitution* took issue  
19 with him. They all knew that "democracy" was government by mob, by demons, by wicked servants, and this is why they  
20 put the U.S. Senate beyond the reach of the people. National senators were elected only by state legislators until May 31,  
21 1913, when the 17th Amendment opened the Senate to the fury of democracy.

22 "1913 was also the year the Federal Reserve was created by Congress to burden the people with usury and debt. It was the  
23 year, too, of the creation of what has become the Internal Revenue Service.

24 *"Whether it (the 16th Amendment) ever was lawfully ratified or not - and now I don't believe that it was*  
25 *- what difference does it make if they have caused everyone to believe that it was? "If a ruler hearkens*  
26 *to lies, all his servants are wicked." We live in a deceitful society. The beneficiaries of the greatest*  
27 *political experiment in the history of the world sold themselves down the river in the 1930's. The spirit*  
28 *of free enterprise was dimmed by a contrived Federal Reserve catastrophe, which sent millions of*  
29 *Americans praying to Washington, D.C. for salvation. They got the best democracy could come up with,*  
30 *the ancient "devils pact." "We will protect you socially in exchange for a lifetime of tribute."*

31 What was not revealed was that the security depended upon a uniform social bondage, and he who attempted to revolt, reform  
32 or break free would be condemned. All claims to Constitutional rights were waived upon signing the contract. That contract  
33 might also be the social security application, an IRS 1040 form, or even a driver's license. Each, as well as many others,  
34 causes a person to relinquish a right in order to receive a government privilege. As the signpost at the gate of hell says,  
35 "Abandon all hope ye who enter here."

36 Giving power to a liar by contract is suicidal. When you later come to your senses and point out his fraud, he exercises the  
37 power you gave him and declares your complaint "frivolous..."

38 Lying is so much a part of the utter fabric of American life that whole generations are now addicted to lies. The same schools  
39 that stimulate children to sexual awareness before puberty offer suicide as a viable alternative to a miserable life and teach  
40 that the State is sovereign...

41 \* as recorded by J. Patrick Shannon *I Rode with Tupper*, published by: Founders Publishing Co., Eustis, Florida.

## 42 **17.6 The Religion of Socialism**

1 By Christopher Holloman Hansen

## 2 **17.7 The two places only where socialism will work**

3 Winston Churchill said, “There are two places only where socialism will work; in heaven where it is not needed, and in hell  
4 where they already have it.”

5 It is not particularly surprising that Winston Churchill used these religious eternal destinations when speaking about the  
6 political philosophy of socialism. Several of Churchill’s contemporaries also understood, but unlike Churchill, advocated this  
7 Religion of Socialism. It was and is well understood that socialism is the very antithesis of Christianity.

## 8 **17.8 Heinrich Himmler**

9 Hitler was an aggressive proponent and even assigned his henchman Heinrich Himmler to found the Religion of Socialism.

10 And Heinrich Himmler, who had started to draw up the new **National Socialist religion**, followed the command of his  
11 Fuehrer.

12 *The Fuehrer was satisfied and he held out a prospect of a reward which would tie him to the*  
13 *accomplishment of the task: it would be him and his SS which, once the Fuehrer had passed away,*  
14 *should take care of the most important relic of his religion, the foundation myth itself—in the shape of*  
15 *the mortal remains of Hitler himself.*

16 *[From Holocaust History Project Chapter 48: The Guardian of Paradise]*

17 But this socialist religion was not just the dream of Hitler but merely an altered version of the “god-builders,” a group of  
18 failed Marxists that advocated the founding of a new “socialist” religion with the aim of reconciling Marxism with religion.  
19 This group included Maxim Gorky, A. V. Lunacharsky, V. Bazarov. (see: *MATERIALISM AND EMPIRIO-CRITICISM* [Part  
20 I] from FOREIGN LANGUAGES PRESS PEKING 1972)

## 21 **17.9 Socialist ideology is loftier than Christianity**

22 The establishment of this Socialist Religion was not just to offer an alternative to Christianity but is intended as its complete  
23 replacement.

24 Martin Bormann stated in a secret decree of the Party Chancellery signed by him and distributed to all Gauleiters on June 7,  
25 1941:

26 *Our National Socialist ideology is far loftier than the concepts of Christianity, which in their essential*  
27 *points have been taken over from Jewry. A differentiation between the various Christian confessions is*  
28 *not to be made here the Evangelical Church is just as inimical to us as the Catholic Church. All*  
29 *influences, which might impair or damage the leadership of the people exercised by the Fuehrer with*  
30 *the help of the NSDAP must be eliminated. More and more the people must be separated from the*  
31 *churches and their organs the pastors. Just as the deleterious influences of astrologers, seers and other*  
32 *fakers are eliminated and suppressed by the State, so must the possibility of church influence also be*  
33 *totally removed. Not until this has happened, does the state leadership have influence on the individual*  
34 *citizens. Not until then are the people and Reich secure in their existence for all time."*

35 *[Nazi Conspiracy & Aggression, Volume I]*

36 The book continued to add to the evidence: Regierungsrat Roth, in a lecture September 22, 1941, to a group of Security  
37 Police, in the Reich Main Security Office (RSHA) concluded his address on Security Police measures for combating **church**  
38 **politics** and sects with the following remarks:

39 *The immediate aim: the church must not regain one inch of the ground it has lost. The ultimate aim:*  
40 *Destruction of the Confessional Churches to be brought about by the collection of all material*  
41 *obtained through the intelligence service (Nachrichtendienst) activities which will at a given time be*  
42 *produced as evidence for the charge of treasonable activities during the German fight for existence.*

1 But that was Germany under Hitler you say. This is America and we have freedom of religion here. Strong Christians have  
2 nothing to fear from our Federal Government. Compare the similarities made by the Nazi collaborators with this statement  
3 from Janet Reno, Attorney General of the United States, during an Interview on CBS *60 Minutes* on June 26, 1994. The  
4 attitude of the government toward those who do not conform and do not place their children into the indoctrination mills of  
5 free government schools is made crystal clear. They are dangerous!

6 A cultist is one who has a strong belief in the Bible and the Second Coming of Christ; who frequently attends Bible studies;  
7 who has a high level of financial giving to a Christian cause; who home schools their children; who has accumulated survival  
8 foods and has a strong belief in the Second Amendment; and who distrusts big government. **Any of these may qualify a  
9 person as a cultist but certainly more than one of these would cause us to look at this person as a threat and his family  
10 as being in a risk situation that qualifies for government interference.** (The authenticity of this quote is disputed and this  
11 wasn't known until after the book was published.)

## 12 **17.10 A useless pile of sects**

13 Hans Kerrl, Reich Minister for Church Affairs, in a letter dated September 6, 1939 to a Herr Stapel, which indicated that it  
14 would be brought to the attention of the Confidential Council and of the defendant Hess, made the following statements:

15 *The Fuehrer considers his efforts to bring the Evangelical Church to reason, unsuccessful and the*  
16 *Evangelical Church with respect to its condition rightfully a **useless pile of sects**. As you emphasize*  
17 *the Party has previously carried on not only a fight against the political element of the Christianity of*  
18 *the Church, but also a fight against membership of Party Members in a Christian confession.*

19 Let us now take a close look at the last statement:

20 *[A] fight against the political element of the Christianity of the Church, but also a fight against*  
21 *membership of Party Members in a Christian confession.*

22 Here is where the similarity between Hitler's "religion" and the American FDR version of the "Religion of Socialism" become  
23 frighteningly obvious. Most churches in America today have applied for and received a "benefit" from the Socialist State  
24 known as 501(c)3 tax exempt status. In order to maintain this "benefit," the tax-exempt churches', "political element" has  
25 been effectively neutralized. If they speak out politically they may be effectively taxed out of existence or their property can  
26 be seized without judicial due process. The paradox of this is by not speaking out they are being replaced by the same plan  
27 that Hitler proposed in the 1940's:

28 In a secret decree of the Party Chancellery, signed by Bormann, and distributed to all Gauleiters on June 7, 1941, the following  
29 statement concerning religious education was made:

30 *No human being would know anything of Christianity if it had not been drilled into him in his childhood*  
31 *by pastors. The so-called dear God in no wise gives knowledge of his existence to young people in*  
32 *advance, but in an astonishing manner in spite of his omnipotence leaves this to the efforts of the*  
33 *pastors. If therefore in the future our youth learns nothing more of this **Christianity, whose doctrines***  
34 *are far below ours, Christianity will disappear by itself.*  
35 *[The Nizkor Project]*

36 Harassment of Christian churches and clergymen that criticize the constant march toward the Religion of Socialism by the  
37 IRS are well documented. In these attacks on Christianity, both the Democrat and Republican administrations have used the  
38 IRS against churches that spoke against their Religious Socialist policies in a manner reminiscent of Hitler's constraint.

39 *In Austria the methods of suppression of churches followed in Austria by the occupying power began*  
40 *with measures to exclude the Church from public activities, such as processions, printing of newspapers*  
41 *and Reviews which could spread Christian doctrines; from forming Youth organizations, such as Boy*  
42 *Scouts; from directing educational or charitable activities; and even from extending help in the form of*  
43 *food to foreigners. Unable in conscience to obey the public prescription, ministers of religions were*  
44 *arrested and sent to concentration camps, and some were executed. Churches were closed, convents*

1 *and monasteries suppressed, and educational property confiscated. The total number of confiscations,*  
2 *suppressions, or alienations of religious institutions exceeded 100 cases in one diocese alone.*  
3 *[Report on fighting of National Socialism in Apostolic Administration of Innsbruck-Feldkirch of Tyrol*  
4 *and Vorarlberg by Bishop Paulus Rusch, June 27, 1945]*

### 5 **17.11 Ecology: the new secular religion**

6 Hitler understood that the Christian religion of liberty and morality must be displaced if his tyranny was to be established for  
7 a thousand years. Peter Staudenmaier in his article: Nature in National Socialist Ideology stated:

8 The National Socialist “**religion of nature**,” as one historian has described it, was a volatile admixture of primeval Teutonic  
9 nature mysticism, pseudo-scientific ecology, irrationalist anti-humanism, and a mythology of racial salvation through a return  
10 to the land. Its predominant themes were “natural order,” organicist holism and denigration of humanity: “Throughout the  
11 writings, not only of Hitler, but of most Nazi ideologues, one can discern a fundamental deprecation of humans vis-Àf -vis  
12 nature, and, as a logical corollary to this, an attack upon human efforts to master nature.”

13 George Washington took the opposite view and understood the necessity of the Christian religion if freedom was to be  
14 maintained. The Father of our country in his Farewell Address said:

15 Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality are **indispensable supports**.

16 But how is this destruction of religion and morality to be accomplished in modern America. For that let us look at the history  
17 and the documented past of the Religion of Socialism and just one tentacle of the Beast and how it means to conquer:

18 The education of youth can only be carried out by those who have rescued Germany from disaster. It is therefore impossible  
19 to demand one Fuehrer, one Reich and one firmly united people as long as education is carried out by forces which are  
20 mutually exclusive to each other. (Rosenberg quoted in *The Nizkor Project*)

21 In a speech at Fulda, on November 27, 1937 Reich Minister for Church affairs Hans Kerrl stated:

22 We cannot recognize that the Church has a right to insure that the individual should be educated in all respects in the way in  
23 which it holds to be right; **but we must leave it to the National Socialist State to educate the child in the way it regards**  
24 **as right.** (*The Nizkor Project*)

### 25 **17.12 Roosevelt's Socialist Religion**

26 In America attendance in government schools has become mandatory in order to promote Roosevelt’s Socialist Religion.  
27 Private and religious schools are discouraged through taxation. Home schoolers are labeled as radical and dangerous by the  
28 United States Attorney General and child murderer, Janet Reno. Prayer in Schools has been abolished. Christian programs  
29 and songs are ostracized and condemned. Neo-Darwinism has replaced Creationism (No Creator—No unalienable rights).  
30 Homosexuals are allowed in the military and are called to be ambassadors of our nation. Sexual immorality is promoted in  
31 Sex Education classes and encouraged by actions in the oval office. BC and AD of Christianity have been replaced with BCE  
32 (before current era) and CE (current era) on our calendars. In the year of our Lord, once widely used on the dates of  
33 government documents, is now considered politically incorrect. Christmas and Easter vacations have become Winter and  
34 Spring breaks. We can celebrate Earth day but Christ’s resurrection is never celebrated or even mentioned at Easter. On  
35 Halloween we sing of Witches and Warlocks but at Christmas Silent Night has truly become silent. Student sponsored Bible  
36 reading and Christian groups have been attacked by law suits and court orders and Christianity has become a curse and a by  
37 word in a nation that was created by Jesus Christ and His followers.

38 These attacks do not happen by accident. This Socialist Religion has many followers. The Freedom From Religion Foundation  
39 is a good example. Here are a few statements from their web site ([ffrf@mailbag.com](mailto:ffrf@mailbag.com) - [www.ffrf.org](http://www.ffrf.org)):

40 *Our Foundation is a membership organization for freethinkers - atheists, agnostics, secularists,*  
41 *humanists, rationalists. (In 1999 the Foundation had more than 4,200 members and subscribers.) We*

1 are an umbrella for those free from religion, and we are committed to the treasured principle of  
2 separation of state and church.

3 *What is the Foundation's Purpose?*

4 *The Freedom From Religion Foundation, Inc. is an educational group working for separation of state*  
5 *and church. Its purpose, as stated in its bylaws, is to promote the constitutional principle of separation*  
6 *of state and church, and to educate the public on matters relating to nontheistic beliefs. Membership is*  
7 *open to anyone who supports the Foundation's purpose. Contributions to the Foundation are tax*  
8 *deductible.*

9 *Recognized by the Internal Revenue Service since 1978, the Foundation is a non-profit, tax-exempt*  
10 *organization under the Internal Revenue Code 501(c)(3). All dues and contributions are deductible for*  
11 *members and donors for income tax purposes.*

12 *What Does the Foundation accomplish?*

13 *[They] Produced two half-hour documentaries for television and group showings:*

- 14 • *A Second Look at Religion is a myth-dispelling look at the bible, featuring interviews with author Ruth Green*  
15 *and other freethinkers.*
- 16 • *Champions of the First Amendment: presents three freethinkers who won historic U.S. Supreme Court*  
17 *lawsuits, buttressing the wall of separation between church and state. Their interviews make landmark*  
18 *constitutional lawsuits come alive. Litigates state/church entanglement issues. Ended a variety of religious*  
19 *observances in the public schools and public places. Removed Wisconsin's state observance of "Good*  
20 *Friday."*
- 21 • *The Foundation keeps several challenges in the courts at all times.*

22 This is not an isolated group, as the **Religion of Socialism** is promoted in the United States and also still in Europe.

23 From, "Ecology" and the Modernization of Fascism in the German Ultra-right by Janet Biehl we find:

24 *Today's leading (National Revolutionaries) NR ideologist, Henning Eichberg,... regards Judeo-*  
25 *Christianity as the ultimate root of all present evils, since it is overly intellectual and alienates humanity*  
26 *both from itself and from the divine; it neglects the emotions and the body. Tied in as it is with the logic*  
27 *of productivism, Christianity, Eichberg writes, is the "religion of growth" that must be fought at all*  
28 *costs. To help cultivate "national identity," he proposes instead a new religion that mixes together*  
29 *neopagan Germanic, Celtic, and Indian religions with old völkisch-nationalistic ideas. It is to be based*  
30 *on "the sensuality-physicality of dance and ritual, ceremony and taboo, meditation, prayer, and*  
31 *ecstasy. In essence, [this religion] constitutes itself as a form of praxis against the "religion of growth"*  
32 *since its "sensuous counter-experiences" can restore humanity to closer contact with nature. Sounding*  
33 *like many New Agers in the United States, Eichberg calls for a return to pristine nature, to the alleged*  
34 *primordial sources of people's lives, psyches, and authentic cultures, and for people to heal themselves*  
35 *within as part of healing the ecological crisis, overcoming their own alienation, and rediscovering*  
36 *themselves.*

### 37 **17.13 Marked by sexual indiscretion**

38 This Religion of Socialism is marked by sexual indiscretion, nature worship, idol worship and government sanctioned theft  
39 through "voluntary self assessed" taxes enforced without the due process nor jury trial guarantees of the *Bill of Rights*  
40 expressly for the redistribution of wealth to "Worthy" and compliant accomplices (see U.S. Supreme Court *Bowen v. Roy*,  
41 476 U.S. 693 (1986)) and adherents to the Religion of Socialism that proudly produce their Social Security Numbers so that  
42 they may claim the "benefits" of their chosen savior, the Federal ESTABLISHMENT of the Religion of Socialism. Here is  
43 an incomplete list of the "benefits" of the Religion of Socialism that are paid for completely or in part by the theft through  
44 "voluntary" taxes collected by the kinder gentler IRS: Medicare, Medicaid, Social Security retirement welfare, Corporate  
45 Welfare, Social Security Disability welfare, Aid to Dependent Children, Food Stamps, and Free government schools.

1 These benefits have been withheld from Christians that refuse to apply for or use a Social Security number: Driver's licenses  
2 (SSN required), business licenses (SSN required), hunting and fishing licenses (SSN required), professional licenses (SSN  
3 required) Credit Cards (SSN required), health insurance (SSN required), bank accounts (SSN required) buying and selling  
4 (SSN required), voting (SSN required), etc., etc.

5 The modern Religion of Socialism has gone back to its roots and re-embraced nature worship, proselytized by socialist  
6 missionaries like Gore and Sagan (remember Hitler was a vegetarian).

7 Brendan Trainor defined this new religion and its ecclesiastical habiliments with uninhibited acumen when he said:

8 *Ecology is very much the new secular religion. It comes complete with original sin (the industrial*  
9 *revolution), Satan (capitalism), eschatology (the end of the world by global warming), the virgin*  
10 *goddess (fragile Mother Earth), churches ("the great cathedrals of our National Parks"), and a Savior*  
11 *(the EPA). Perhaps we would do better to remember the words of the Father of American*  
12 *Environmentalism, the libertarian Henry David Thoreau: "He governs best who governs not at all."*

13 When we combine Social Security and other socialist government welfare programs that create hereditary bondage upon our  
14 intentionally uneducated and indoctrinated posterity in direct violation of the goals our Founding Fathers fought and died for,  
15 with the Gestapo tactics of the IRS (the enforcement arm of Religious Socialism) we can clearly see that not only the free  
16 exercise clause of the First Amendment has been violated but also that the inviolable clause of separation of church and state  
17 fame, the establishment clause, has been completely annihilated while the **State Religion of Socialism** is not only encouraged  
18 but **forced upon us**; line upon line, precept upon precept, here a little and there a little; by the Federal Judiciary, the Blacked  
19 Robed Clergy of Hitler's chosen theology, aided by the executive branch that does not abide by the oath of office and a  
20 legislative branch that has abandoned its constituents and its duty. This assault on Christianity has, like the fire beneath  
21 Pavlov's frogs in a pot of cool water, been almost unnoticeable to America's Christian churches and Citizens. Just like the  
22 citizens of Germany were tempted by the prosperity offered by Adolf Hitler, our 501(c)3 churches and AARP generation  
23 promote their own destruction and the slavery of the very posterity they were duty bound to keep free of debt bondage.

24 Our government has embraced a well-defined, historically documented, religion that advocates the destruction of Christianity.

25 *Religion... is the self-consciousness and the self-feeling of the man who has either not yet found himself,*  
26 *or else (having found himself) has lost himself once more. But man is not an abstract being... Man is*  
27 *the world of men, the State, society. This State, this society, produce religion, produce a perverted world*  
28 *consciousness, because they are a perverted world... Religion is the sigh of the oppressed creature, the*  
29 *feelings of a heartless world, just as it is the spirit of unspiritual conditions. It is the opium of the people.*

30 *The people cannot be really happy until it has been deprived of illusory happiness by the abolition of*  
31 *religion. The demand that the people should shake itself free of illusion as to its own condition is the*  
32 *demand that it should abandon a condition which needs illusion.*  
33 *[Karl Marx]*

34 This Socialist Religion comes with a prophesied numerical identifier, the Social Security Number (Mark of the Beast) without  
35 which our ability to buy and sell are extremely limited.

36 We have established a Christian Political Religion to challenge this Satanic Religion of forced Socialism. The old adage that  
37 you must fight fire with fire comes to mind. We have the right to a political religion. After all, the Bible says that the  
38 government shall be upon the shoulder of Jesus Christ (Isaiah 9:6). Our Supreme Court has clearly stated that this is a Christian  
39 Nation. Our Christian religion has been forced from our schools, our government and our courts by the political Religion of  
40 Socialism. The Religion of Socialism has been established and enforced by the Federal government and the only way that a  
41 Citizen of the United States of America may "freely exercise" their chosen Christian religion is to first embrace the doctrines  
42 of "withholding taxes" (a violation of the law of tithing to God) and by "voluntarily" applying for a Social Security number  
43 (the Mark of the Beast). Thus Christianity becomes a subservient religion to the established government religion existing  
44 only if homage is first paid to the Religion of Socialism.

45 When Caesar offered this same type of compromise to the ancient Christians of the Roman Empire they did not accept it  
46 because they could have no other god BEFORE Christ. Neither can modern Christians if they expect to have their names

1 written in the Book of Life. Many of these ancient Christians died in the Circuses of Rome rather than worship the gods of  
2 the Roman State even when allowed to do it in conjunction with Christianity. The United States forces people to pay tribute  
3 to the Religion of Socialism BEFORE they pay tribute to Jesus Christ. Christianity is allowed only if the United States does  
4 not determine that such Christian beliefs interfere with a “compelling governmental interest.” Congress and the courts can  
5 determine a compelling governmental interest. So if they determine that paying tribute to a system that is in direct opposition  
6 to Christianity is a compelling governmental interest your First Amendment rights to religious expression are “legally”  
7 violated. This, of course, is a violation of the establishment clause of that same amendment. This is accomplished by calling  
8 socialism a secular governmental interest, not a religion. But in the words of William Shakespeare, “A rose by any other  
9 name would smell as sweet.” A more modern colloquialism that also calls a spade a spade is, “If it looks like a duck and  
10 walks like a duck: it’s a duck.”

11 Hitler and Himmler called socialism a religion. Modern socialists call it a religion. It is the deeply held religious political  
12 philosophy of Atheism, Secular Humanism and Ethicalism (all defined as religions by the United States Supreme Court), yet  
13 socialism is not officially recognized as a religion by the United States Government. For if it was, their worship of Social  
14 Security and Corporate Welfare as sacred trusts would be blatantly unconstitutional. So since they could not legally enforce  
15 their religion upon us the government just ignored the truthful and well documented definition. That this is a common  
16 occurrence is well known. Senator Sam Ervin, of Watergate hearing fame, understood this verbicide and its possible effects  
17 on law and the *Constitution*. He said:

18 *[J]udicial verbicide is calculated to convert the Constitution into a worthless scrap of paper and to*  
19 *replace our government of laws with a judicial oligarchy.*

20 But it is not a new concept, Confucius circa 500 B.C. is attributed to have said:

21 *“When words lose their meaning, people will lose their liberty.”*

22 Socialism is a religion and must be defined and understood for what it is. We must call it what it is if we are to understand  
23 Socialism’s goals.

24 The First Amendment was adopted to, in part, prevent the establishment of a State religion We must enforce the *Constitution*,  
25 or we will suffer the fate of every nation that allowed the Religion of Socialism or any other Anti-Christ religion to become  
26 the dominant power. The people lost their liberty.

27 We are not attempting to force Christianity upon the Socialist even though it is their publicized declaration that the destruction  
28 of Christianity is their goal. Christianity is liberty through morality and duty. Socialism is theft through taxes then given as a  
29 benefit to worthy slaves. Socialism encourages religious bigotry and intolerance (see Reno’s statement above), and  
30 discourages or destroys through taxes other religions.

31 No King but King Jesus, must once again be our battle cry as we, through Christian Fellowship, reestablish our sovereignty  
32 under that eternal Sovereign of Heaven and Earth: Jesus Christ, our Lord and Savior and thereby allow other faiths to be  
33 afforded asylum, prosperity, and freedom of worship in America.

34 This is my prayer, in the name of Jesus Christ, Amen

35 Christopher Holloman Hansen, Presiding Sovereign for  
36 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

## 37 **17.14 Charles Darwin: The False Prophet of Anti-Science**

38 By Joshua Joel Holloman Hansen

39 It has been said that the greatest lie the devil ever told was convincing mankind that he did not exist. Darwinism is the modern  
40 name of this lie and like all of Satan’s great lies this one is dressed in the guise of truth. Darwinism and the theory of evolution  
41 are not science, to call them such would be to insult the credibility of science and the scientific method. In fact, Lynn Margulis,  
42 a distinguished professor of biology at the University of Massachusetts has stated that history will ultimately judge Neo-  
43 Darwinism as “a minor twentieth century religious sect within the sprawling religious persuasion of Anglo-Saxon biology.”

1 Make no mistake, no matter how much a “scientist” tries to convince you that Darwinism is fact or science, it is a religion, a  
2 cult, a belief built on faith in the words of others. The modern scientific community, particularly among microbiologists, is  
3 taking a lot of second and third looks at this outdated, unsubstantiated cult.

#### 4 **17.15 A minor twentieth century religious sect**

5 Today this religion, this cult, is taught from the government funded pulpits of public schools by evangelists calling themselves  
6 teachers. It is force fed to our children at the earliest of ages instilling them with the well crafted sliver of doubt about creation  
7 planted by the Father of all Lies and without the rebuttal of any other system of beliefs. If the Ten Commandments cannot be  
8 displayed in schools and prayers cannot be given at graduation how then can the dogma and tradition of Darwinism be taught?

9 No lie of Satan is ever manifest in its true form, for if it was it would not be appealing to man. Darwinism is not taught as a  
10 religion, but as an impartial and secular science with no bearing in religion whatsoever. The prophets of Darwinism are called  
11 “scientists”, evangelists and ministers are called “teachers” and “professors”, and chapels are called “classrooms” and  
12 “auditoriums”. Darwinism’s Bible is *The Origin of Species* delivering the words of their Messiah: Charles Darwin, the son  
13 of this cult’s god: “Nature”.

#### 14 **17.16 The goal of Darwinism**

15 When seen through the eyes of the vigilant, guided by the light of Christ, it is more than obvious that this belief is neither  
16 secular nor is it impartial. This can be best understood by viewing the goals and results of this religion. The first and foremost  
17 goal of evolution is to attempt to prove that God does not exist and that the Biblical creation of man through Adam and Eve  
18 is nothing but a myth. It is a belief that is in direct opposition to that of Christianity.

19 Taking those goals a step further is when one can really see its wicked intent. If God does not exist then neither does Satan.  
20 Without God and without Satan we lose the standards of good and evil, morality and immorality, purity and sin. Wickedness  
21 is no longer opposed but rather, it is embraced with open arms as “natural.” The evils of sexual transgression and murder of  
22 children are given new names like “alternative lifestyles” and “the right to choose.” Instead of being viewed as abominations  
23 they become “different points of view.”

24 However, all of these results are second to the most important goal of Darwinism: the complete destruction of unalienable  
25 Rights. As stated in the *Declaration of Independence* “We hold these truths to be self-evident, that all men are created equal,  
26 that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable Rights, that among these are Life, Liberty and the pursuit of  
27 Happiness.” This nation was founded on the belief that rights come from God. If God does not exist then man is no more than  
28 beast and is entitled to no more than beast. All privileges given to animals are dictated at the whim of governments worldwide  
29 and if Darwinism is the accepted theology of governments then man will be treated no differently. Religion, speech, press,  
30 assembly, keeping and bearing of arms, search warrants, public trials by jury, freedom from cruel and unusual punishment,  
31 and every other unalienable right that is given to mankind through their birthright as the sons and daughters of God are no  
32 more.

33 In the United States of America we were founded on the theology of Christianity. This is best stated in the bold declaration  
34 of Patrick Henry: “It cannot be emphasized too strongly or too often that this great nation was founded, not by religionists,  
35 but by Christians; not on religions, but on the Gospel of Jesus Christ. For this very reason peoples of other faiths have been  
36 afforded asylum, prosperity, and freedom of worship here.” Christianity, when practiced as it should be, has always  
37 maintained that we should love our neighbor, and even our enemies, as ourselves. And affording all brothers and sisters the  
38 same right of freethinking and belief.

39 The center of Darwinism’s philosophy is exactly the opposite of Christianity. It is not just the creation of man and all species  
40 through some accident of Nature, but also the advancement of those species through the “survival of the fittest.” If this  
41 philosophy is applied to mankind it means that the strong should rule and the weak deserve and need to be subject unto them.  
42 Whereas it is the philosophy of Christianity that he who is the greatest of all must be the servant of all.

43 Through love, service, and charity to our fellow brothers and sisters we may all attain both temporal and eternal joy. Wealth,  
44 property, health, and happiness are not just allotted to the “fittest”, but to all mankind. No man is greater than any of his

1 brothers or sisters and all mankind is afforded the same unalienable Rights. It is the goal of Darwinism to destroy love and it  
2 is best stated in the words of their own messiah, Charles Darwin:

3 *“[A] scientific man ought to have no wishes, no affections, — a mere heart of stone.”*

4 Not only is it important to see Darwinism for what it is, a religious cult and not science, it is also important to see science for  
5 what it is: a witness of God’s power and knowledge and not as His enemy. Thomas Jefferson was not only a great statesman  
6 but also a man of science. It is interesting to note he included the following phrase in the *Declaration of Independence*: “the  
7 separate and equal station to which the Laws of Nature and of Nature’s God entitle them...” God works His miracles and  
8 wonders through the Laws of Nature that He has set forth and not through some system of arbitrary magic or mysticism. So  
9 long as God is Nature’s master, man will always have a higher law to serve and follow and will always be protected by the  
10 unalienable rights that the higher law entitles them.

### 11 **17.17 Sacred domains called laboratories**

12 Science and Natural Law are the tools and creations of God. Be wary of religions like Darwinism that masquerade as science.  
13 If you ever have doubts that humanism and its creator, Darwinism and “secular science” are anything but religion with Nature  
14 as its god, just look at the words of one of the greatest humanist prophets of modern time, Louis Pasteur:

15 *I beseech you to take interest in these sacred domains so expressively called laboratories. Ask that there*  
16 *be more and that they be adorned for these are the temples of the future, wealth and well-being. It is*  
17 *here that humanity will grow, strengthen and improve. Here, humanity will learn to read progress and*  
18 *individual harmony in the works of nature, while humanity’s own works are all too often those of*  
19 *barbarism, fanaticism and destruction.*

20 God the Father and Jesus Christ are the foundation of liberty, equality, charity, and love. Without them all of these beautiful  
21 ideals of principles have no meaning and no validity. We must march as the sons and daughters of our Heavenly Father and  
22 see that His throne is always respected and never forgotten. For without Him, we have—we are—nothing. Do not let Satan  
23 deceive you. Temporal wealth and power gained by the exploitation of your brothers and sisters is no substitute for the eternal  
24 peace, love, and liberty of our Heavenly Father.

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40  
41  
42

## **18 Chapter 18: A Birthright Sold for Pottage**

By Christopher Holloman Hansen

There is a well known story in the Bible concerning two brothers, Esau and Jacob, the twin sons of Isaac. Esau was the eldest son and had the birthright from his father. He came in from a field and was faint with hunger. His brother, Jacob had cooked red pottage of lentiles but would not give any to Esau saying, “Sell me this day thy birthright.” And Esau said he was at the point of death so what good was the birthright at that moment. Then Jacob did something that was, very interesting he said, “Swear to me this day.” And Esau did swear and sold his birthright to Jacob. (See Gen. Chapter 5.)

There is another loss of a birthright in the Bible. It makes the sale of Esau’s birthright pale in comparison for this was the loss of the birthright of an entire nation. It is documented in First Samuel Chapter 8. Here we find the People of Israel rejecting liberty and demanding slavery. They rejected responsibility and requested subjection. They rejected their God and demanded an earthly master. They rejected their birthright to obtain a little temporary security. They became servants to another instead of masters of themselves. They “Voluntarily” gave up their liberty, their property and the liberty of their children so they could have the “benefits” of being like other nations and so the king could go out before them, and fight their battles.

Could there be anything more foolish than what the Israelites had done?

Our Founding Father’s did just the opposite of the ancient Israelites. Instead of selling their posterity into bondage they took upon themselves personal responsibilities and pledged their lives, fortunes and sacred honor to the establishment of liberty not only for themselves but their posterity. The concern for their posterity was made evident in two major documents of times:

In 1775 the Continental Congress wrote: “Honour, justice, and humanity, forbid us tamely to surrender that freedom which we received from our gallant ancestors, and which our innocent posterity have a right to receive from us. We cannot endure the infamy and guilt of resigning succeeding generations to that wretchedness which inevitably awaits them, if we basely entail hereditary bondage upon them.”

And from the preamble of the Constitution we find: “We the People of the United States, in Order to form a more perfect Union, establish Justice, insure domestic Tranquility, provide for the common defence, promote the general Welfare, and secure the Blessings of Liberty to ourselves and our Posterity, do ordain and establish this Constitution for the United States of America.”

These honorable ideas of the Founders have been abandoned today in favor of the faulty wisdom of the apostate Israelites. We, as a nation, have become more concerned about our own needs and temporary securities, like, Esau than the far reaching sacrifices of George Washington and Samuel Adams. The World War II generation not only did not mind “the infamy and guilt of resigning succeeding generations to that wretchedness which inevitably awaits them, if we basely entail hereditary bondage upon them” but call “hereditary bondage” a sacred trust. This hereditary bondage is said to be the most popular program of the federal government. It is called Social Security.

### **18.1 Esau and Jacob**

All of the blame, however, can not be placed upon a single generation. While our nation, like Israel, sold its birthright for the so-called “benefits” of Social Security; Social Security is also a personal sale of an American’s birthright. It is interesting to note that, like Esau’s sale of his birthright to Jacob was sealed by an oath, the voluntary application for a Social Security number also requires an oath. You sign your application “swearing” that the information you gave is true. Most Americans do not know if the information is true or even what it means to them personally.

Most Americans do not realize that there is no law requiring them to obtain a Social Security number. It is an application. You or your parents must apply. Foreigners must have a number in order to work but that requirement is not placed upon Union State Citizens in the Social Security Act.

## 18.2 Bowen v. Roy, 476 U.S. 693 (1986)

There are however requirements for Social Security numbers if you want to be given a benefit from the federal government. Not even unalienable rights secured by the *Bill of Rights* are protected if you receive a benefit because you “voluntarily” requested the benefit and so you gave up your rights, the government did not take it from you. This was made clear in *Bowen v. Roy, 476 U.S. 693 (1986)* where the U.S. Supreme Court ruled:

*“The question presented is whether the Free Exercise Clause of the First Amendment compels the Government to accommodate a religiously based objection to the statutory requirements that a Social Security number be provided by an applicant seeking to receive certain welfare benefits and that the States use these numbers in administering the benefit programs.”*

*“The importance of the Social Security number to these matching techniques is illustrated by the facts of this case... Appellees may not use the Free Exercise Clause to demand Government benefits, but only on their own terms, particularly where that insistence works a demonstrable disadvantage to the Government in the administration of the programs.”*

The “Appellees” sold their birthright for a government benefit.

1. How has all this happened?
2. Why do Americans believe that Social Security numbers are required?
3. What do you become when you apply for Social Security number?

The answer to the first question is: By a long train of deceptions and misrepresentations by the very government officials that had sworn to protect and uphold the *Constitution of the United States*. Research has shown that treaties created Social Security system with other nations in an attempt to bypass the restriction in the *Constitution*.

The answer to question two is: American’s have been lied to by their government servants that have believed the lies told to them by people above them in the chain of command. (They are “**deceiving, and being deceived,**” See II Tim Chapter 3) Americans, instead of reading the law themselves, have listened to oral traditions created by tyrants that seek to usurp authority and steal your birthright and unalienable rights. Thomas Jefferson warned us of this when he said, “If a nation expects to be ignorant and free, it expects what never was and never will be.”

The answer to question three is two fold. The first part is easy. It is found in the Title 5 United States Code, Chapter 552a:

*(13) the term “Federal personnel” means officers and employees of the Government of the United States, members of the uniformed services (including members of the Reserve Components), individuals entitled to receive immediate or deferred retirement benefits under any retirement program of the Government of the United States (including survivor benefits).*

Did you get that? If you are an individual entitled to receive immediate or deferred retirement benefits under ANY retirement program of the Government of the United States (including survivor benefits) you are “Federal personnel.” Of course in order to be “entitled” you must have a Social Security number. Even a one-day-old child with a Social Security number (applied for by its parents as trustees of their child’s birthright) is “entitled” to “survivor benefits” and is therefore “Federal personnel.” Federal personnel are not necessarily protected by the *Bill of Rights*. A member of the United States military, for instance, does not have the right to remain silent. The Federal Bureau of Investigation is not authorized statutorily to investigate State Citizens but they are authorized to investigate “Federal personnel.”

The answer to the second half of question three arises from a situation not foreseen within the framework of the *Constitution*. Oddly enough it is concerning something that does not really exist “a citizen of the United States.” The truth of this is well described in a California court case from 1855:

*A citizen of any one of the States of the union, is held to be, and called a citizen of the United States, although technically and abstractly there is no such thing. To conceive a citizen of the United States who is not a citizen of some one of the States, is totally foreign to the idea, and inconsistent with the proper construction and common understanding of the expression as used in the Constitution, which*

1           *must be deduced from its various other provisions. The object then to be attained, by the exercise of the*  
2           *power of naturalization, was to make citizens of the respective States.”*  
3           *[Ex Parte Knowles, 5 Cal. 300]*

4 Now that you know what you are and are not, the question is why do you sign documents under oath that say you are a United  
5 States or U. S. citizen when “technically and abstractly there is no such thing”? This is very important because everyone that  
6 lives in areas under the jurisdiction of the United States and not within one of the union states are now called citizens of the  
7 United States by default as their existence was not foreseen or authorized in the *Constitution*. Such land that would not  
8 become States nor sold to the federal government by the States but “owned by congress” was not spoken of directly in the  
9 *Constitution*. Thomas Jefferson even questioned the legitimacy of the Louisiana purchase but decided that it was within the  
10 treaty powers given to the United States Senate as they were the direct representatives of the States before the anti-  
11 constitutional 17th Amendment.

12 Thomas Jefferson understood that this land could only be held by the federal government as territory until it could be adopted  
13 into the union of States.

14 Then came men (servants of Satan) with a plan that found a chink in the armor of the *Constitution* they could abuse. Unlimited  
15 Treaty Powers combined with Section. 3 Clause 2:

16           *The Congress shall have Power to dispose of and make all needful Rules and Regulations respecting*  
17           *the Territory or other Property belonging to the United States; and nothing in this Constitution shall*  
18           *be so construed as to Prejudice any Claims of the United States, or of any particular State.*

19 You see the restrictions of the *Constitution* and the *Bill of Rights* were not mandated within Territories and other Property  
20 belonging to the United States.

### 21 **18.3 Spanish American War**

22 Then came the Spanish American War and its conclusion on December 10, 1898 with the Treaty of Peace Between the United  
23 States and Spain. This treaty ceded the islands of the Philippines, Guam, Porto Rico and others. (An interesting note is that  
24 research has shown that the modern Internal Revenue Service grew out of the Bureau of Internal Revenue, Porto Rico. The  
25 United States Code’s only definition for Revenue agent is a revenue agent of Puerto Rico.) In Article IX of the treaty we read  
26 what RIGHTS these new U.S. citizens were entitled to:

27           *The civil rights and political status of the native inhabitants of the territories hereby ceded to the United*  
28           *States shall be determined by the Congress.*

29 The only right secured by the treaty was found in Article X:

30           *The inhabitants of the territories over which Spain relinquishes or cedes her sovereignty shall be*  
31           *secured in the free exercise of their religion.*

32 Congress could now decide if the native inhabitants had the right to remain silent, could keep and bear arms, had the right to  
33 free speech or assembly and were not restricted by the constitutional clause:

34           *No Capitation, or other direct, Tax shall be laid, unless in Proportion to the Census or Enumeration*  
35           *herein before directed to be taken.*

36 When you combine this with the famous BRUSHABER case in 1916 that said the 16th amendment gave Congress no new  
37 taxing authority you start to see the full picture. If Congress could simply turn Union State Citizens into U.S. territorial  
38 citizens then they would no longer be restricted by the *Constitution* as **U.S. citizens’ rights are to “be determined by the**  
39 **Congress.”**

### 40 **18.4 belonging to the United States but not a part of the United States**

41 The following *Maxim of law* is very enlightening:

1 *No one is obliged to accept a benefit against his consent. But if he does not dissent he will be*  
2 *considered as assenting. Invito beneficium non datur.*  
3 *[This is from an 1856 law dictionary. It was well known to those that would buy your birthright for a*  
4 *benefit.]*

5 When you or your parents swore that you were a U. S. citizen on any government form or document and you also became  
6 Federal personnel, you “**assented**” to this “U. S. congressional subject status” and by not correcting it with the truth, you  
7 sold your birthright of a sovereign without subjects which was your inheritance secured by the Founding Fathers by contracts  
8 known as the *Declaration of Independence* and the *Constitution of the United States* of America. With this in mind consider  
9 also the following Maxims:

10 *Time runs against the slothful and those who neglect their rights. Currit tempus contra desides et sui*  
11 *juris contemptores.*

12 *An error not resisted is approved. Error qui non resistitur, approbatur.*

13 *To be able to know is the same as to know. This maxim is applied to the duty of every one to know the*  
14 *law. Idem est scire aut scire debet aut potuisse.*

15 *In law none is credited unless he is sworn. All the facts must when established, by witnesses, be under*  
16 *oath or affirmation. In judicio non creditur nisi juratis. (Have you ever wondered why you have to sign*  
17 *IRS and SSA forms under oath but the government servants almost never do?)*

18 The following quotes are taken from the very enlightening United States Supreme Court case of *Downes v. Bidwell*, 182 U.S.  
19 244 (1901). The author highly recommends that the reader studies this long and diverse case.

20 *It is sufficient to observe in relation to these three fundamental instruments, that it can nowhere be*  
21 *inferred that the territories were considered a part of the United States.*

22 *The 13th Amendment to the Constitution, prohibiting slavery and involuntary servitude “within the*  
23 *United States, or in any place subject to their jurisdiction,” is also significant as showing that **there***  
24 ***may be places within the jurisdiction of the United States that are no part of the Union.***

25 *Upon the other hand, the 14th Amendment, upon the subject of citizenship, declares only that “all*  
26 *persons born or naturalized in the United States, and subject to the jurisdiction thereof, are citizens of*  
27 *the United States, and of the state wherein they reside.” Here there is a limitation to persons born or*  
28 *naturalized in the United States, which is not extended to persons born in any place “subject to their*  
29 *jurisdiction.”*

30 *As the only judicial power vested in Congress is to create courts whose judges shall hold their offices*  
31 *during good behavior, it necessarily follows that, if **Congress** authorizes the creation of courts and the*  
32 *appointment of judges for a limited time, **it must act independently of the Constitution** and upon*  
33 *territory which is not part of the United States within the meaning of the Constitution.*

34 *The power to make needful rules and regulations would certainly not authorize anything inconsistent*  
35 *with the Constitution if it applied to the territories. Certainly no such court could be created within a*  
36 *state, except under the restrictions of the judicial clause. We are therefore of opinion that the island of*  
37 *Porto Rico is a territory appurtenant and belonging to the United States, **but not a part of the United***  
38 ***States** within the revenue clauses of the Constitution...*

39 *Alaska contained an express provision **excluding from citizenship the uncivilized native tribes**, and it*  
40 *has been nowhere contended that this condition of exclusion was inoperative because of the want of*  
41 *power under the Constitution in the **treaty-making authority** to so provide, which must be the case if*  
42 *the limitation on the treaty- making power, which is here asserted, be well founded. The treaty*  
43 *concerning Alaska, therefore, adds cogency to the conception established by every act of the*  
44 *government from the foundation, that the condition of a treaty, when expressly or implied ratified by*  
45 *Congress, becomes the measure by which the **rights arising from the treaty are to be adjusted.***

1 In conclusion: When you abandon your union State Citizenship by inaction or oath and become a U.S. or United States citizen  
2 you sell your birthright of personal sovereignty for the benefits of Federal citizenship. You reject the security of God for  
3 Social Security. You become a subject of the U.S. congress, subject to their whims and no longer have Constitutionally  
4 secured rights that restrict congress. You lose the right to Article III court and are subjected to territorial courts that need not  
5 follow the *Constitution*. You are no longer a part of We the People that established and maintain the God given *Constitution*  
6 but a native inhabitant restricted by treaty. You reject the God of this nation, Jesus Christ, and place as your master your  
7 former servant, the federal government. In the words of George Washington, "Government... Like fire, it is a dangerous  
8 servant and a fearful master." Is your current master not fearful? Do you not fear the IRS? Is it not time to reject this fraud  
9 and theft of State Citizenship and regain your sovereignty under Christ?

10 You have the right and duty to yourself and posterity to reestablish this birthright of individual responsibility and liberty  
11 under Christ and to reclaim with sacrifice and assertion your unalienable rights given by God which are not subject to any  
12 earthly government or treaty. Honor, justice, and humanity, forbid you tamely to surrender that freedom which you received  
13 from your gallant ancestors, and which your innocent posterity have a right to receive from you. Or can you endure the infamy  
14 and guilt of resigning succeeding generations to that wretchedness which inevitably awaits them, if you basely entail  
15 hereditary bondage upon them?

16 To those of you that can endure the infamy and guilt through your support of or participation in Social Security and socialism  
17 or even your inaction I leave you with the words of Samuel Adams. "If you love wealth better than liberty, the tranquility of  
18 servitude better than the animating contest of freedom, go home from us in peace. We ask not your counsels or arms. Crouch  
19 down and lick the hands which feed you. May your chains set lightly upon you and may posterity forget that ye were our  
20 countrymen."

## 19 Chapter 19: Historical Quotes

*The wisdom of the wise, and the experience of ages, may be preserved by quotations. — Disraeli*

*“This is, first and foremost, what I mean by the narrowness of the new ideas, the limiting effect of the future. Our modern prophetic idealism is narrow because it has undergone a persistent process of elimination. We must ask for new things because we are not allowed to ask for old things. The whole position is based on this idea that we have got all the good that can be got out of the ideas of the past. But we have not got all the good out of them, perhaps at this moment not any of the good out of them. And the need here is a need of complete freedom for restoration as well as revolution.”*  
[G.K. Chesterton (1874-1936)]

### 19.1 Sam, John and John Q. Adams

*“[I]t does not require a majority to prevail, but rather an irate, tireless minority keen to set brush fires in people’s minds.”*  
[Samuel Adams]

*“If you love wealth better than liberty, the tranquility of servitude better than the animating contest of freedom, go home from us in peace. We ask not your counsels or arms. Crouch down and lick the hands which feed you. May your chains set lightly upon you and may posterity forget that ye were our countrymen.”*  
[Samuel Adams, 1776]

*“If men, through fear, fraud, or mistake, should in terms renounce or give up any natural right, the eternal law of reason and the grand end of society would absolutely vacate such renunciation. The right to freedom being a gift of ALMIGHTY GOD, it is not in the power of man to alienate this gift and voluntarily become a slave.”*  
[Samuel Adams, 1772]

*“The Constitution shall never be construed to authorize Congress to prevent the people of the United States, who are peaceable citizens, from keeping their own arms.”*  
[Samuel Adams, Debates & Proceedings in the Convention of the Commonwealth of Massachusetts]

*“[N]either the wisest constitution nor the wisest laws will secure the liberty and happiness of a people whose manners are universally corrupt. He therefore is the truest friend of the liberty of his country who tries most to promote its virtue, and who, so far as his power and influence extend, will not suffer a man to be chosen onto any office of power and trust who is not a wise and virtuous man.”*  
[Samuel Adams]

*“A general dissolution of principles and manners will more surely overthrow the liberties of America than the whole force of the common enemy. While the people are virtuous they cannot be subdued; but when once they lose their virtue they will be ready to surrender their liberties to the first external or internal invader... If virtue and knowledge are diffused among the people, they will never be enslaved. This will be their great security.”*  
[Samuel Adams]

*“You have rights antecedent to all earthly governments; rights that cannot be repealed or restrained by human laws; rights derived from the Great Legislator of the Universe.”*  
[John Adams]

*“Our Constitution was made only for a moral and religious people. It is wholly inadequate to the government of any other.”*  
[John Adams]

1 *“Let them revere nothing but Religion, Morality, and Liberty... Religion and Virtue are the only*  
2 *foundations, not only of republicanism and of all free governments, but of social felicity under all*  
3 *governments and in all the combinations of human society.”*  
4 *[John Adams]*

5 *“Public virtue cannot exist in a nation without private, and public virtue is the only foundation of*  
6 *republics.”*  
7 *[John Adams]*

8 *“Honor is truly sacred, but holds a lower rank in the scale of moral excellence than virtue. Indeed the*  
9 *former is part of the latter, and consequently has not equal pretensions to support a frame of*  
10 *government productive of human happiness.”*  
11 *[John Adams]*

12 *“Always vote for principle, though you may vote alone, and you may cherish the sweetest reflection that*  
13 *your vote is never lost.”*  
14 *[John Quincy Adams]*

15 *“Wherever the standard of freedom and independence has been or shall be unfurled, there will be*  
16 *America’s heart, her benedictions and prayers, but she goes not abroad in search of monsters to*  
17 *destroy. She is the well-wisher to the freedom and independence of all. She is the champion and*  
18 *vindicator of her own.”*  
19 *[John Quincy Adams, 1821.]*

20 *“The highest glory of the American Revolution was this; it connected in one indissoluble bond the*  
21 *principles of civil government with the principles of Christianity. From the day of the Declaration...they*  
22 *(the American people) were bound by the laws of God, which they all, and by the laws of The Gospel,*  
23 *which they nearly all, acknowledge as the rules of their conduct.”*  
24 *[John Quincy Adams, July 4th, 1821]*

25 *“The first and almost the only Book deserving of universal attention is the Bible. In what light soever*  
26 *we regard the Bible, whether with reference to revelation, to history, or to morality, it is an invaluable*  
27 *and inexhaustible mine of knowledge and virtue.”*  
28 *[John Quincy Adams]*

29 *“Posterity will never know how much it has cost my generation to preserve your freedom. I hope you*  
30 *will make good use of it.”*  
31 *[John Quincy Adams]*

## 32 **19.2 Benjamin Franklin**

33 *“Justice will not be served until those who are unaffected are as outraged as those who are.” —*  
34 *Benjamin Franklin*

35 *“The worship of God is a duty... Freedom is not a gift bestowed upon us by other men, but a right that*  
36 *belongs to us by the laws of God and nature... I never doubted the existence of the Deity, that he made*  
37 *the world, and governed it by His Providence...The pleasures of this world are rather from God’s*  
38 *goodness than our own merit... Whoever shall introduce into the public affairs the principles of*  
39 *primitive Christianity will change the face of the world... Rebellion to tyrants is obedience to God.”*  
40 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

41 *“Only a virtuous people are capable of freedom. As nations become more corrupt and vicious, they*  
42 *have more need of masters.”*  
43 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

44 *“Justice will not be served until those who are unaffected are as outraged as those who are.”*  
45 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

1  
2 *In this situation of this assembly, groping, as it were, in the dark to find political truth... How has it*  
3 *happened, sir, that we have not hitherto once thought of humbly applying to the Father of Lights to*  
4 *illuminate our understandings? In the beginning of the contest with Britain, when we were sensible of*  
5 *danger, we had daily prayers in this room for the Divine protection. Our prayers, sir, were heard; they*  
6 *were graciously answered... Have we now forgotten that powerful Friend?*

7 *I have lived, sir, a long time; and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth, that*  
8 *God governs in the affairs of men. And if a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without His notice, is it*  
9 *probable that an empire can rise without His aid? We have been assured, sir, in the sacred writings,*  
10 *that 'except the Lord build the house, they labor in vain that build it.' I firmly believe this; and I also*  
11 *believe, that without His concurring aid, we shall succeed in this political building no better than the*  
12 *builders of Babel; we shall be divided by our little, partial, local interests, our projects will be*  
13 *confounded, and we ourselves shall become a reproach and a byword to future ages.*  
14 *[Benjamin Franklin]*

### 15 **19.3 Patrick Henry**

16 *"Bad men cannot make good citizens. It is when a people forget God then tyrants forge their chains. A*  
17 *vitiating state of morals, a corrupted public conscience, is incompatible with freedom. No free*  
18 *government, or the blessings of liberty, can be preserved to any people but by a firm adherence to*  
19 *justice, moderation, temperance, frugality, and virtue; and by a frequent recurrence to fundamental*  
20 *principles."*  
21 *[Patrick Henry]*

22 *"Guard with jealous attention the public liberty. Suspect everyone who approaches that jewel.*  
23 *Unfortunately, nothing will preserve it but downright force. Whenever you give up that force, you are*  
24 *ruined... The great object is that every man be armed. Everyone who is able might have a gun."*  
25 *[Patrick Henry.]*

26 *"It cannot be emphasized too strongly or too often that this great nation was founded, not by*  
27 *religionists, but by Christians; not on religions, but on the Gospel of Jesus Christ. For this very reason*  
28 *peoples of other faiths have been afforded asylum, prosperity, and freedom of worship here."*  
29 *[Patrick Henry]*

### 30 **19.4 Thomas Jefferson**

31 *"I would rather be exposed to the inconveniences attending too much liberty, than those attending too*  
32 *small a degree of it."*  
33 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

34 *"I have a right to nothing, which another has a right to take away."*  
35 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

36 *"In questions of power, then, let no more be said of confidence in man, but bind him down from mischief*  
37 *by the chains of the Constitution."*  
38 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

39 *"It has long been my opinion, and I have never shrunk from its expression... that the germ of dissolution*  
40 *of our federal government is in the constitution of the federal judiciary; an irresponsible body (for*  
41 *impeachment is scarcely a scarecrow) working like gravity by night and by day, gaining a little today*  
42 *and a little tomorrow, and advancing its noiseless step like a thief, over the field of jurisdiction, until all*  
43 *shall be usurped from the States, and the government of all be consolidated into one. To this I am*  
44 *opposed; because, when all government domestic and foreign, in little as in great things, shall be drawn*  
45 *to Washington as the center of all power, it will render powerless the checks provided of one*

1 government or another, and will become as venal and oppressive as the government from which we  
2 separated.”

3 [Thomas Jefferson]

4 “The remaining revenue on the consumption of foreign articles is paid chiefly by those who can afford  
5 to add foreign luxuries to domestic comforts, being collected on our seaboard and frontiers only, and  
6 incorporated with the transactions of our mercantile citizens, it may be the pleasure and the pride of  
7 an American to ask, What farmer, what mechanic, what laborer ever sees a taxgatherer of the United  
8 States?”

9 [Thomas Jefferson, 2nd Inaugural Address]

10 “Can one generation bind another, and all others, in succession forever? I think not. The Creator has  
11 made the earth for the living, not the dead. Rights and powers can only belong to persons, not to things,  
12 not to mere matter, unendowed with will. The dead are not even things. The particles of matter which  
13 composed their bodies, make part now of the bodies of other animals, vegetables, or minerals, of a  
14 thousand forms. To what then are attached the rights and powers they held while in the form of men?  
15 A generation may bind itself as long as its majority continues in life; when that has disappeared, another  
16 majority is in place, holds all the rights and powers their predecessors once held, and may change their  
17 laws and institution to suit themselves. Nothing then is unchangeable but the inherent and unalienable  
18 rights of man.” — Thomas Jefferson (June 5, 1824)

19 “Indeed, I tremble for my country when I reflect that God is just.”

20 [Thomas Jefferson]

21 “If a nation expects to be ignorant and free, it expects what never was and never will be.”

22 [Thomas Jefferson]

23 “To compel a man to furnish contributions of money for the propagation of opinions which he  
24 disbelieves is sinful and tyrannical.”

25 [Thomas Jefferson]

26 “No free man shall ever be debarred the use of arms.”

27 [Thomas Jefferson, Proposal Virginia Constitution]

28 “Yes, we did produce a near-perfect republic. But will they keep it? Or will they, in the enjoyment of  
29 plenty, lose the memory of freedom? Material abundance without character is the path to destruction.”

30 [Thomas Jefferson.]

31 “The oppressed should rebel, and they will continue to rebel and raise disturbance until their civil  
32 rights are fully restored to them and all partial distinctions, exclusions and incapacitations are  
33 removed.”

34 [Thomas Jefferson: Notes on Religion, 1776. ]

35 “Does the government fear us? Or do we fear the government? When the people fear the government,  
36 tyranny has found victory. The federal government is our servant, not our master!”

37 [Thomas Jefferson]

38 “The legitimate powers of government extend to such acts only as they are injurious to others.”

39 [Thomas Jefferson, Notes on the State of Virginia (1781-1785)]

40 “The suppression of unnecessary offices, of useless establishments and expenses, enabled us to  
41 discontinue our internal taxes. These covering our land with officers and opening our door to their  
42 intrusions, had already begun that process of domiciliary vexation which once entered is scarcely to be  
43 restrained from reaching, successively, every article of property and produce.”

44 [Thomas Jefferson]

45 “Experience hath shewn, that even under the best forms [of government] those entrusted with power  
46 have, in time, and by slow operations, perverted it into tyranny.”

1 [Thomas Jefferson, *Bill for the More General diffusion of Knowledge* (1778)]

2 “On every question of construction (of the Constitution) let us carry ourselves back to the time when  
3 the Constitution was adopted, recollect the spirit manifested in the debates, and instead of trying what  
4 meaning may be squeezed out of the text, or invented against it, conform to the probable one in which  
5 it was passed.”

6 [Thomas Jefferson, letter to William Johnson, June 12, 1823, *The Complete Jefferson*]

7 “The God who gave us life gave us liberty. And can the liberties of a nation be thought secure when we  
8 have removed their only firm basis, a conviction in the minds of the people that these liberties are of  
9 the Gift of God? That they are not to be violated but with His wrath? Indeed, I tremble for my country  
10 when I reflect that God is just; that His justice cannot sleep forever. -Thomas Jefferson

11 “I predict future happiness for Americans if they can prevent the government from wasting the labors  
12 of the people under the pretense of taking care of them.”  
13 [Thomas Jefferson]

14 “Sometimes it is said that man cannot be trusted with the government of himself. Can he, then, be trusted  
15 with the government of others?”  
16 [Thomas Jefferson]

## 17 **19.5 James Madison**

18 “Do not separate text from historical background. If you do, you will have perverted and subverted the  
19 Constitution, which can only end in a distorted, bastardized form of illegitimate government.”  
20 [James Madison]

21  
22 \_\_\_\_\_  
23 *It will be of little avail to the people, that the laws are made by men of their own choice, **if the laws be**  
24 **so voluminous that they cannot be read, or so incoherent that they cannot be understood;** if they be  
25 repealed or revised before they are promulgated, **or undergo such incessant changes that no man,**  
26 **who knows what the law is to-day, can guess what it will be to-morrow.** Law is defined to be a rule of  
action; but how can that be a rule, which is little known, and less fixed?*

27 *Another effect of public instability is the unreasonable advantage it gives to the sagacious, the*  
28 *enterprising, and the moneyed few over the industrious and uniformed mass of the people. Every new*  
29 *regulation concerning commerce or revenue, or in any way affecting the value of the different species*  
30 *of property, presents a new harvest to those who watch the change, and can trace its consequences; a*  
31 *harvest, reared not by themselves, but by the toils and cares of the great body of their fellow-citizens.*  
32 *This is a state of things in which it may be said with some truth that laws are made for the FEW, not for*  
33 *the MANY.*

34 *In another point of view, great injury results from an unstable government. The want of confidence in*  
35 *the public councils damps every useful undertaking, the success and profit of which may depend on a*  
36 *continuance of existing arrangements. What prudent merchant will hazard his fortunes in any new*  
37 *branch of commerce when he knows not but that his plans may be rendered unlawful before they can*  
38 *be executed? What farmer or manufacturer will lay himself out for the encouragement given to any*  
39 *particular cultivation or establishment, when he can have no assurance that his preparatory labors and*  
40 *advances will not render him a victim to an inconstant government? In a word, no great improvement*  
41 *or laudable enterprise can go forward which requires the auspices of a steady system of national policy.*

42 *But the most deplorable effect of all is that diminution of attachment and reverence which steals into*  
43 *the hearts of the people, towards a political system which betrays so many marks of infirmity, and*  
44 *disappoints so many of their flattering hopes. No government, any more than an individual, will long*

1 *be respected without being truly respectable; nor be truly respectable, without possessing a certain*  
2 *portion of order and stability.*

3 *[PUBLIUS. (Madison) Federalist Papers #62]*

4 **Editors note:** Congressman Rob Gramms of Minnesota said recently (1999) in Congress that the code consists of over  
5 7,000,000 words, and has been changed 5,400 times since 1986.

6 *“It is proper to take alarm at the first experiment on our liberties. We hold this prudent jealousy to be*  
7 *the first duty of citizens and one of the noblest characteristics of the late Revolution. The freemen of*  
8 *America did not wait till usurped power had strengthened itself by exercise and entangled the question*  
9 *in precedents. They saw all the consequences in the principle, and they avoided the consequences by*  
10 *denying the principle. We revere this lesson too much... to forget it.”*

11 *[James Madison]*

12 *“I believe there are more instances of abridgement of freedom of the people by gradual and silent*  
13 *encroachments of those in power than by violent and sudden usurpations.”*

14 *[James Madison]*

15 *“The Constitution preserves the advantage of being armed which Americans possess over the people of*  
16 *almost every other nation... (where) the governments are afraid to trust the people with arms.”*

17 *[James Madison]*

18 *“From this view of the subject it may be concluded that a pure democracy... can admit of no cure for*  
19 *the mischiefs of faction. A common passion or interest will, in almost every case, be felt by a majority*  
20 *of the whole; a communication and concert result from the form of government itself; and there is*  
21 *nothing to check the inducements to sacrifice the weaker party or an obnoxious individual. Hence it is*  
22 *that such democracies have ever been spectacles of turbulence and contention; have ever been found*  
23 *incompatible with personal security or the rights of property; and have in general been as short in their*  
24 *lives as they have been violent in their deaths. Theoretic politicians, who have patronized this species*  
25 *of government, have erroneously supposed that by reducing mankind to a perfect equality in their*  
26 *political rights, they would, at the same time, be perfectly equalized and assimilated in their possessions,*  
27 *their opinions, and their passions.”*

28 *[James Madison (Federalist Papers #10)]*

29 *“To suppose that any form of government will secure liberty or happiness without any virtue in the*  
30 *people, is a chimerical idea.”*

31 *[James Madison]*

32 *“The aim of every political Constitution, is or ought to be first to obtain for rulers men who possess*  
33 *most wisdom to discern, and most virtue to pursue, the common good of society; and in the next place,*  
34 *to take the most effectual precautions for keeping them virtuous whilst they continue to hold their public*  
35 *trust.”*

36 *[James Madison]*

37 *“We have staked the whole future of American civilization, not upon the power of government, far from*  
38 *it. We have staked the future of all of our political institutions upon the capacity of each and all of us*  
39 *to govern ourselves, to control ourselves, to sustain ourselves according to the Ten Commandments of*  
40 *God.”*

41 *[James Madison]*

42 *“A popular government without popular information, or the means of acquiring it, is but a prologue to*  
43 *a farce or a tragedy, or perhaps both. Knowledge will forever govern ignorance, and a people who*  
44 *mean to be their own governors must arm themselves with the power which knowledge gives.”*

45 *[President James Madison]*

## 46 **19.6 George Washington**

1       *"Of all the dispositions and habits which lead to political prosperity, religion and morality are*  
2 *indispensable supports. In vain would that man claim the tribute of patriotism who should labor to*  
3 *subvert these great pillars of human happiness—these firmest props of the duties of men and citizens.*  
4 *The mere politician, equally with the pious man, ought to respect and to cherish them. A volume could*  
5 *not trace all their connections with private and public felicity. Let it simply be asked, Where is the*  
6 *security for property, for reputation, for life, if the sense of religious obligation desert the oaths which*  
7 *are the instruments of investigation in courts of justice? And let us with caution indulge the supposition*  
8 *that morality can be maintained without religion."*

9       [George Washington]

10       *"Government is not reason; it is not eloquence; it is force! Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a*  
11 *fearful master."*

12       [George Washington.]

13       *"Can it be that Providence has not connected the permanent felicity of a nation with its virtue?"*

14       [George Washington]

15       *"The time is now near at hand which must probably determine whether Americans are to be freemen*  
16 *or slaves; whether they are to have any property they can call their own; whether their houses and*  
17 *farms are to be pillaged and destroyed, and themselves consigned to a state of wretchedness from which*  
18 *no human efforts will deliver them. The fate of unborn millions will now depend on God, on the courage*  
19 *and conduct of this army. Our cruel and unrelenting enemy leaves us only the choice of brave resistance,*  
20 *or the most abject submission. We have, therefore, to resolve to conquer or die."*

21       [George Washington]

## 22   **19.7 Noah Webster**

23       *"The supreme power in America cannot enforce unjust laws by the sword, because the whole body of*  
24 *the people are armed."*

25       [Noah Webster]

26       *"When you become entitled to exercise the right of voting for public officers, let it be impressed on your*  
27 *mind that God commands you to choose for rulers, "just men who will rule in the fear of God." The*  
28 *preservation of [our] government depends on the faithful discharge of this Duty; if the citizens neglect*  
29 *their Duty and place unprincipled men in office, the government will soon be corrupted; laws will be*  
30 *made, not for the public good so much as for selfish or local purposes; corrupt or incompetent men will*  
31 *be appointed to execute the Laws; the public revenues will be squandered on unworthy men; and the*  
32 *rights of the citizen will be violated or disregarded. If [our] government fails to secure public prosperity*  
33 *and happiness, it must be because the citizens neglect the Divine Commands, and elect bad men to make*  
34 *and administer the Laws."*

35       [History of United States by Noah Webster.]

36       *"If there is a possibility of founding a perfectly free government, and giving it permanent duration,*  
37 *it must be raised upon the pure maxims, and supported by the undecaying practice, of that religion,*  
38 *which breathes 'peace on earth, and good will to men.' That religion is perfectly republican... it is*  
39 *calculated to humble the pride and allay the discontents of men... it restrains the magistrate from*  
40 *oppression, and the subject from revolt... it secures a perfect equality of rights, by enjoining a discharge*  
41 *of all social duties, and a strict subordination to law. The universal prevalence of that religion, in its*  
42 *true spirit, would banish tyranny from the earth. Yet this religion has been perverted, and in many*  
43 *countries, made the basis of a system of ecclesiastical domination, which has enslaved the minds of*  
44 *men, as political power had before enslaved their bodies. To correct these evils, a set of fanatical*  
45 *reformers, called philosophers, charging that oppression to the religion itself, which sprung only from*  
46 *its abuses, have boldly denied the sacred origin of Christianity, and attempted to extirpate its doctrines*  
47 *and institutions. Strange, indeed, that the zealous advocates of a republican government, should wage*  
48 *an inveterate war against the only system of religious principles, compatible with rational freedom, and*  
49 *calculated to maintain a republican constitution!"*

50       [Noah Webster]

1           *“The moral principles and precepts contained in the Scriptures ought to form the basis of all our civil*  
2           *constitutions and laws. All the miseries and evils which men suffer from vice, crime, ambition, injustice,*  
3           *oppression, slavery and war, proceed from their despising or neglecting the precepts contained in the*  
4           *Bible.”*

5           *[Noah Webster]*

## 6   **19.8 Daniel Webster**

7           *“I apprehend no danger to our country from a foreign foe... Our destruction, should it come at all, will*  
8           *be from another quarter. From the inattention of the people to the concerns of their government, from*  
9           *their carelessness and negligence, I must confess that I do apprehend some danger. I fear that they may*  
10          *place too implicit a confidence in their public servants, and fail properly to scrutinize their conduct;*  
11          *that in this way they may be made the dupes of designing men, and become the instruments of their own*  
12          *undoing. Make them intelligent, and they will be vigilant; give them the means of detecting the wrong,*  
13          *and they will apply the remedy.”*

14          *[Daniel Webster, June 1, 1837]*

15           \_\_\_\_\_

16          *Finally, let us not forget the religious character of our origin. Our fathers were brought hither by their*  
17          *high veneration for the Christian religion. They journeyed by its light, and labored in its hope. They*  
18          *sought to incorporate its principles with the elements of their society, and to diffuse its influence through*  
19          *all their institutions, civil, political, or literary*

20          *Let us cherish these sentiments, and extend this influence still more widely; in full conviction that that*  
21          *is the happiest society which partakes in the highest degree of the mild and peaceful spirit of*  
22          *Christianity.*

23          *[Daniel Webster]*

24           \_\_\_\_\_

25          *“[I]f we and our posterity reject religious instruction and authority, violate the rules of eternal justice,*  
26          *trifle with the injunctions of morality, and recklessly destroy the political constitution which holds us*  
27          *together, no man can tell how sudden a catastrophe may overwhelm us, that shall bury all our glory in*  
28          *profound obscurity.”*

29          *[Daniel Webster]*

30          *“God grants liberty only to those who love it, and are always ready to guard and defend it.”*

31          *[Daniel Webster]*

32          *“Hold on, my friends, to the Constitution and to the Republic for which it stands. Miracles do not cluster*  
33          *and what has happened once in 6,000 years, may not happen again. Hold on to the Constitution, for if*  
34          *the American Constitution should fail, there will be anarchy throughout the world.”*

35          *[Daniel Webster]*

36          *“No man can suffer too much, and no man can fall too soon, if he suffer or if he fall in defense of the*  
37          *liberties and Constitution of his country.”*

38          *[Daniel Webster]*

39          *“Liberty exists in proportion to wholesome restraint.”*

40          *[Daniel Webster]*

## 41   **19.9 Virtue and Morality**

42          *Righteousness exalteth a nation: but sin is a reproach to any people.*

43          *[Proverbs 14:34]*

1       *“The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men to do nothing.”*  
2       *[Edmund Burke]*

3       *“Men are qualified for civil liberty in exact proportion to their disposition to put moral chains upon*  
4       *their appetites; in proportion as they are more disposed to listen to the counsels of the wise and good*  
5       *in preference to the flattery of knaves. Society cannot exist unless a controlling power upon will and*  
6       *appetite be placed somewhere, and the less of it there is within, the more there must be without. It is*  
7       *ordained in the eternal constitution of things, that men of intemperate minds cannot be free. Their*  
8       *passions forge their fetters.”*  
9       *[Edmund Burke]*

10       *“Now most modern freedom is at root fear. It is not so much that we are too bold to endure rules; it is*  
11       *rather that we are too timid to endure responsibilities. And Mr. Shaw and such people are especially*  
12       *shrinking from that awful and ancestral responsibility to which our fathers committed us when they*  
13       *took the wild step of becoming men. I mean the responsibility of affirming the truth of our human*  
14       *tradition and handing it on with a voice of authority, an unshaken voice. That is the one eternal*  
15       *education; to be sure enough that something is true that you dare to tell it to a child.”*  
16       *[G.K. Chesterton (1874-1936)]*

17       *“It’s not enough to belong to a religion. You also have to put it into practice. Religion is like medicine.*  
18       *You have to ingest it to combat the illness.”*  
19       *[Dalai Lama]*

20       *“What a sad condition would the world be in without gospel light! All places would be dens of rapine,*  
21       *and mountains of prey. Certainly we owe much of our civil liberty, and outward tranquillity to gospel-*  
22       *light. If a sword, or variance, at any time, follow the gospel, it is but an accidental, not a direct and*  
23       *proper effect of it.”*  
24       *[John Flavel, minister of Dartmouth]*

25       *“Morality, when vigorously alive, sees farther than intellect.” — J. A. Froude*

26       *“The motto of the Rotary Club is ‘Service above self.’ The motto of the Kiwanis Club is ‘we build.’ The*  
27       *motto of the Lions Club is ‘Liberty, intelligence, our nation’s safety.’ All of these ideas originated in*  
28       *Christianity. Lots of the pagan religions never had a service club. All of these organizations are really*  
29       *by-products of Christianity even when some of their members are not Christians. The perfume of Christ*  
30       *is in the fragrance of any and all social service.”*  
31       *[Billy Graham]*

32       *“Let it [the Constitution] be taught in schools, in seminaries, and in colleges. Let it be written in*  
33       *primers, in spelling books, and almanacs. Let it be preached from the pulpit, proclaimed in legislative*  
34       *halls, and enforced in courts of justice. In short, let it become the political religion of the nation.”*  
35       *[Heber J. Grant, former Mayor of Salt Lake City]*

36       *“Liberty cannot be established without morality, nor morality without faith.”*  
37       *[Horace Greely]*

38       *“I have carefully examined the evidences of the Christian religion, and if I was sitting as a juror upon*  
39       *its authenticity I would unhesitatingly give my verdict in its favor. I can prove its truth as clearly as any*  
40       *proposition ever submitted to the mind of man.” — Alexander Hamilton*

41       *“No free government can stand without virtue in the people, and a lofty spirit of patriotism.”*  
42       *[Andrew Jackson]*

43       *“Providence has given our people the choice of their rulers, and it is the duty as well as the privilege*  
44       *and interest of our Christian nation to select and prefer Christians for their rulers.”*  
45       *[John Jay]*

46       *“One who condones evils is just as guilty as the one who perpetrates it.” — Martin Luther King, Jr.*

1           *"The time is always right to do what is right."*  
2           *[Martin Luther King, Jr.]*

3           *"I have always thought the actions of men the best interpreters of their thoughts."*  
4           *[John Locke]*

5           *"Unless virtue guide us our choice must be wrong."*  
6           *[William Penn]*

7           *"Those who will not be governed by God, will be ruled by tyrants."*  
8           *[William Penn]*

9           *"[W]henever the civil government fails to make use of the means offered by the supernatural order, it*  
10          *is unable to check the plague in any way. Nor will civil authority ever be able to prevent other evils as*  
11          *long as it forgets or denies that all authority comes from God. IN such a case the only restraint a*  
12          *government can apply is force; but force can neither be constantly applied nor is it always available. A*  
13          *people suffering from a hidden disease soon becomes displeased with everything. They proclaim the*  
14          *right to act as they please, they stir up rebellions and., trampling on all rights, human and divine, they*  
15          *provoke revolutions within the State. Take away God, and all respect for civil laws and all regard for*  
16          *even the most necessary institutions disappear. Take away God and justice is spurned arid that liberty*  
17          *arising from the natural law is trodden underfoot. Take away God, and men will destroy the very*  
18          *structure of the family, the primary and indispensable foundation of the whole social structure.*  
19          *Consequently it is very difficult during these days so hostile to Christ to apply the powerful remedies*  
20          *for the orderly government of the people with which the Redeemer endows His Church."*  
21          *[Saint Pius X, Lucinda Sane, 12 March, 1904]*

22          *"A thorough knowledge of the Bible is worth more than a college education."*  
23          *[President Theodore Roosevelt]*

24          *"Throughout history, it has been the inaction of those who could have acted; the indifference of those*  
25          *who should have known better; the silence of the voice of justice when it mattered most; that has made*  
26          *it possible for evil to triumph."*  
27          *[Haile Selassie]*

28          *"The average age of the world's greatest civilizations has been two hundred years. These nations have*  
29          *progressed through this sequence: From bondage to spiritual faith; from spiritual faith to great*  
30          *courage; from courage to liberty; from liberty to abundance; from abundance to selfishness; from*  
31          *selfishness to complacency; from complacency to apathy; from apathy to dependence; from dependency*  
32          *back again into bondage."*  
33          *[Fraser Tytler, English historian]*

34          *"I sought for the greatness and the genius of America in her ample rivers-it was not there; in her fertile*  
35          *fields and boundless prairies, and it was not there; in her rich mines and her vast world commerce, and*  
36          *it was not there. Not until I went into the churches of America and heard her pulpits ablaze with*  
37          *righteousness did I meet the secret of her genius and power. America is great because she is good, and*  
38          *if America ever ceases to be good-America will cease to be great."*  
39          *[Alexis de Tocqueville]*

40          *"Full of all diseases as he is, he fancies himself in perfect health. Fast bound in misery and iron, he*  
41          *dreams that he is at liberty. He says, "Peace! Peace!" while the devil, as "a strong, man armed," is in*  
42          *full possession of his soul. he sleeps on still and takes his rest, though hell is moved from beneath to*  
43          *meet him; though the pit from whence there is no return hath opened its mouth to swallow him up. A*  
44          *fire is kindled around him, yet he knoweth it not; yea, it burns him, yet he lays it not to heart."*  
45          *[Charles Wesley, 1742]*

46          *"In your private as well as public capacity; and as you are honored to be the representatives of a now*  
47          *flourishing increasing people: may you be directed in all your ways! May truth, justice, religion, and*  
48          *piety be established amongst you through all generations!"*

1 [George Whitefield, Preached before the Governor, and Council, and the House of Assembly, in  
2 Georgia, on January 28, 1770.]

### 3 **19.10 The Importance of Knowledge to Liberty**

4 “The privileges and immunities clause of the fourteenth Amendment protects very few rights because it  
5 neither incorporates any of the Bill of Rights nor protects all rights of individual citizens...Instead this  
6 provision protects only those rights peculiar to being a citizen of the federal government; it does not  
7 protect those rights which relate to state citizenship...”  
8 [Jones v. Temmer (Aug. 1993) 829 F. Supp. 1226]

9 “A lie would have no sense unless the truth were felt as dangerous.”  
10 [Alfred Alder]

11 “The people never give up their liberties but under some delusion”  
12 [Edmund Burke]

13 “Real knowledge is to know the extent of one’s ignorance.”  
14 [Confucius]

15 “When words lose their meaning, people will lose their liberty.”  
16 [Confucius]

17 “We cannot teach citizenship if we are not citizens; we cannot free others if we have forgotten the  
18 appetite of freedom. Education is only truth in a state of transmission; and how can we pass on truth if  
19 it has never come into our hand? Thus we find that education is of all the cases the clearest for our  
20 general purpose.”  
21 [G.K. Chesterton (1874-1936)]

22 “As nightfall does not come at once, neither does oppression. In both instances there is a twilight when  
23 everything remains seemingly unchanged. And it is in such twilight that we all must be most aware of  
24 change in the air” — however slight - lest we become unwitting victims of the darkness.  
25 [Supreme Court Justice William O. Douglas]

26 “The important thing is not to stop questioning.”  
27 [Albert Einstein]

28 “Only the educated are free.”  
29 [Epictetus]

30 “Those who stand for nothing fall for anything.”  
31 [Alex Hamilton]

32 “What luck for the rulers that men do not think.”  
33 [Adolf Hitler]

34 “Greater than the threat of mighty armies is an idea whose time has come.”  
35 [Victor Hugo]

36 “Where all men think alike, no one thinks very much.”  
37 [Walter Lippmann]

38 “During times of universal deceit, telling the truth becomes a revolutionary act.”  
39 [George Orwell]

40 “Vice is a monster of so frightful mien, As to be hated needs but to be seen; Yet seen too oft, familiar  
41 with her face, We first endure, then pity, then embrace.”  
42 [Alexander Pope]

1 *"[P]eople have not yet discovered they have been disenfranchised. Even lawyers can't stand to admit*  
2 *it. In any nation in which people's rights have been subordinated to the rights of the few, in any*  
3 *totalitarian nation, the first institution to be dismantled is the jury. I was, I am, afraid."*  
4 *[Gerry Spence]*

5 *"War is won in the preparation; the greatest battles won are the ones that were never fought."*  
6 *[Sun Tzu ]*

7 *"A nation which does not remember what it was yesterday, does not know what it is today, nor what it*  
8 *is trying to do. We are trying to do a futile thing if we do not know where we came from or what we*  
9 *have been about."*  
10 *[Woodrow Wilson]*

---

11  
12 *Goethe, one of Germany's distinguished poets and philosophers, wrote: "Whatsoever you have*  
13 *inherited from your fathers, you must earn it in order to possess it."*

14 *"One vital part of the heritage we have received from our fathers that we must earn if we are to possess*  
15 *it is the United States Constitution. President Abraham Lincoln admonished us to teach the principles*  
16 *of the Constitution in the schools, in seminaries, and in college. He urged, 'Let [it] be written in primers,*  
17 *in spelling books and [wherever possible], let it be preached from the pulpit, proclaimed in legislative*  
18 *halls, and enforced in courts of justice. And, in short, let it become the political religion of the nation.'"*  
19 *[Joseph B. Wirthlin, former president of a trade association]*

## 20 **19.11 Keep and Bear Arms**

21 *"Gold, Silver and Lead... Freedom's precious metals." — Anon*

22 *Accidental deaths: Number of physicians in the U.S—700,000. Accidental deaths caused by physicians*  
23 *per year—120,000 Accidental deaths per physician—0.171. Number of gun owners in the U.S—*  
24 *80,000,000. Number of accidental gun deaths per year—1,500. Accidental deaths per gun owner—*  
25 *0.000018. Therefore, doctors are approximately 9,000 times more dangerous than gun owners.*

26 *"The Constitution of the United States shall never be construed to prevent the people of the United*  
27 *States who are peaceable citizens from keeping their own arms."*  
28 *[Samuel Adams]*

29 *"Arms in the hands of individual citizens may be used at individual discretion... in private self-defense."*  
30 *— John Adams*

31 *"The House passage of our bill is a victory for this country! Common sense wins out. I'm just so thrilled*  
32 *and excited. The sale of guns must stop. Halfway measures are not enough."*  
33 *[Sarah Brady, July 1, 1988]*

34 *"Among the many misdeeds of the British rule in India, history will look upon the act of depriving a*  
35 *whole nation of arms, as the blackest."*  
36 *[Mahatma Gandhi]*

37 *"The best we can hope for concerning the people at large is that they be properly armed."*  
38 *[Alexander Hamilton, The Federalist Papers]*

39 *"Common and political criminals prefer unarmed victims."*  
40 *[Daniel McGavin Hansen]*

41 *"The great object is that every man be armed. Everyone who is able may have a gun."*  
42 *[Patrick Henry]*

1       *“The people of the various provinces are strictly forbidden to have in their possession any swords,*  
2       *bows, spears, firearms, or other types of arms. The possession of these elements makes difficult the*  
3       *collection of taxes and dues, and tends to permit uprising. Therefore, the heads of provinces, official*  
4       *agents, and deputies are ordered to collect all the weapons mentioned above and turn them over to the*  
5       *government.”*

6       *[Toyotomi Hideyoshi, Shogun, August 29, 1558, Japan]*

7       *“Germans who wish to use firearms should join the SS or the SA” — ordinary citizens don’t need guns,*  
8       *as their having guns doesn’t serve the State. -Heinrich Himmler*

9       *“The most foolish mistake we could possibly make would be to allow the subjected people to carry*  
10       *arms. History shows that all conquerors who have allowed their subjected peoples to carry arms have*  
11       *prepared their own downfall by so doing. Indeed, I would go so far as to say that the underdog is a sine*  
12       *qua non [“something essential” lit. “without which not”] for the overthrow of any sovereignty. So let’s*  
13       *not have any native militia or police.”*

14       *[Adolf Hitler, Edict of March 18, 1938]*

15       *“No free man shall ever be debarred the use of arms. The strongest reason for the people to retain the*  
16       *right to keep and bear arms is, as a last resort, to protect themselves against tyranny in government.”*  
17       *— Thomas Jefferson, June 1776.*

18       *“To disarm the people (is) the best and most effectual way to enslave them...” — George Mason.*

19       *“On the morrow of each conflict I gave the categorical order to confiscate the largest possible number*  
20       *of weapons of every sort and kind. This confiscation, which continues with the utmost energy, has given*  
21       *satisfactory results.”*

22       *[Prime Minister Benito Mussolini, June 8, 1923]*

23       *“Those who expect to reap the blessings of freedom must, like men, undergo the fatigue of supporting*  
24       *it.” — Thomas Paine*

25       *“The twentieth century has been a tumultuous one. It has seen two world wars and countless regional*  
26       *ones; its has seen a third of the earth’s population enslaved by Communism; and political scientist R.*  
27       *J. Rummel estimated that during the first nine decades of the 20th century, at least 169,000,000 human*  
28       *beings were killed by their own governments.”*

29       *[G. Vance Smith]*

30       *“Before a standing army can rule, the people must be disarmed; as they are in almost every kingdom*  
31       *of Europe. The supreme power in America cannot enforce unjust laws by the sword; because the whole*  
32       *body of the people are armed, and constitute a force superior to any bands of regular troops that can*  
33       *be, on any pretense, raised in the United States.”*

34       *[Noah Webster, 1888]*

35       *“Firearms stand next in importance to the Constitution itself. They are the American people’s liberty,*  
36       *teeth and keystone under independence. The church, the plow, the prairie wagon and citizens’ firearms*  
37       *are indelibly related. From the hour the Pilgrims landed to the present day, events, occurrences and*  
38       *tendencies prove that, to ensure peace, security and happiness, the rifle and pistol are equally*  
39       *indispensable. Every corner of this land knows firearms, and more than 99 and 99-100 percent of them*  
40       *by their silence indicate they are in safe and sane hands. The very atmosphere of firearms anywhere*  
41       *and everywhere restrains evil influence. They deserve a place of honor with all that’s good. When*  
42       *firearms go, all goes. We need them every hour.”*

43       *[George Washington]*

## 44       **19.12 The Cost of Liberty**

45       *“The laws serve the vigilant, not those who sleep upon their rights. Vigilantibus et non dormientibus*  
46       *serviunt leges.”*

1 [Maxim of law]

2 “He who does not prevent what he can, seems to commit the thing. *Qui non obstat quod obstare potest*  
3 *facere videtur.*”

4 [Maxim of law]

5 “He who does not forbid what he can forbid, seems to assent. *Qui non prohibet quod prohibere potest*  
6 *assentire videtur.*”

7 [Maxim of law]

8 “He who does not repel a wrong when he can, induces it. *Qui non propulsat injuriam quando potest,*  
9 *infert.*”

10 [Maxim of law]

11 “He who is silent appears to consent. *Qui tacet consentire videtur.*”

12 [Maxim of law]

13 “You need only reflect that one of the best ways to get yourself a reputation as a dangerous citizen these  
14 days is to go about repeating the very phrases which our Founding Fathers used in the great struggle  
15 for independence.”

16 [Charles Austin Beard, 1874 -1948]

17 “Nobody made a greater mistake than he who did nothing because he could only do a little.”

18 [Edmund Burke]

19 “When bad men combine, the good must associate else they will fall one by one, an unpitied sacrifice  
20 in a contemptible struggle.”

21 [Edmund Burke]

22 “A nation of lemmings and sheep, unwilling to learn what the laws say and mean, deserves the tyranny  
23 it tolerates.”

24 [C.F. Charpentier]

25 “In the beginning of a change, the patriot is a scarce man brave, hated, and scorned. When his cause  
26 succeeds, however, the timid join him, for then it costs nothing to be a patriot.”

27 [Samuel Clemens, author writing under the pen name "Mark Twain"]

28 “The world is a dangerous place to live; not only because of the people who are evil, but because of  
29 the people who don't do anything about it.”

30 [Albert Einstein]

31 \_\_\_\_\_  
32 We must be involved in politics!

33 Now more than ever before, the people are responsible for the character of their Congress. If that body  
34 be ignorant, reckless and corrupt, it is because the people tolerate ignorance, recklessness and  
35 corruption.

36 If it be intelligent, brave and pure, it is because the people demand these high qualities to represent  
37 them in the national legislature... If the next centennial does not find us a great nation... it will be  
38 because those who represent the enterprise, the culture, and morality of the nation do not aid in  
39 controlling the political forces.

40 [James Garfield 1877]

1           *"I am only one. But still, I am one. I cannot do everything, but I can do something. And because I cannot*  
2 *do everything, I will not refuse to do something that I can do."*

3 *[Edward Everett Hale]*

4           *"A politician looks to the next election. A statesman looks to the next generation. The AARP look to the*  
5 *pocketbooks of the next generation and in doing so enslave their own grandchildren."*

6 *[Christopher Holloman Hansen]*

7           *"The best way to kill time is to work it to death."*

8 *[Ryan Oliver Hansen]*

9           *"The high office of President has been used to foment a plot to destroy American's freedom, and before*  
10 *I leave office I must inform the citizen of his plight."*

11 *[John F. Kennedy; Columbia University, 10 days prior to his assassination]*

12           *"The Bill of Rights, in the eyes of its framers, was a catalogue of immunities, not a schedule of claims.*  
13 *It was, in other words, a Bill of Liberties. When civil rights are seen as claims and civil liberties as*  
14 *immunities, the government's differing responsibilities become clear. For the security of rights the*  
15 *energy of government is essential. For the security of liberty restraint is indispensable."*

16 *[John F. Kennedy]*

17           *"A man who won't die for something is not fit to live."*

18 *[Martin Luther King, Jr. ]*

19           *"We the People are the rightful masters of both Congress and the Courts" — not to overthrow the*  
20 *Constitution, but to overthrow the men who pervert the Constitution.*

21 *[Abraham Lincoln]*

22           *"Let it [the Constitution] be taught in schools, in seminaries, and in colleges. Let it be written in*  
23 *primers, in spelling books, and almanacs. Let it be preached from the pulpit, proclaimed in legislative*  
24 *halls, and enforced in courts of justice. In short, let it become the political religion of the nation."*

25 *[David O. McKay, former Commissioner of Education]*

26           *"War is an ugly thing, but not the ugliest of things. The decayed and degraded state of moral and*  
27 *patriotic feeling, which thinks that nothing is worth war, is much worse. The person who has nothing*  
28 *for which he is willing to fight, nothing which is more important than his own personal safety, is a*  
29 *miserable creature and has no chance of being free unless made and kept so by the exertions of better*  
30 *men than himself."*

31 *[John Stuart Mill 1868]*

---

32  
33           *But the Lord in the gospel, and our Founding Fathers as well, were idealistic. They set very high*  
34 *standards for us and they tried to meet them themselves, and they expect us to try to meet them together*  
35 *as well. The Declaration of Independence does say to citizens: Be idealists! Live idealistically! The*  
36 *gospel says to believers: Be idealists! Live idealistically!*

37           *Good laws and programs and agencies are important, but individual citizens will always have to work*  
38 *to make sure those programs and agencies are good, that they stay good, and, if necessary, that they*  
39 *get better. If we follow the example of our Founding Fathers we are committed to service together, to*  
40 *God and neighbor and country, over the long haul, for life.*

41 *[The Most Reverend George Niederauer, Roman Catholic Bishop]*

---

42  
43           *"In Germany they came first for the Communists, and I didn't speak up because I wasn't a Communist.*  
44 *Then they came for the Jews, and I didn't speak up because I wasn't a Jew. Then they came for the*  
45 *trade unionists, and I didn't speak up because I wasn't a trade unionist. Then they came for the*

1 *Catholics, and I didn't speak up because I was a Protestant. Then they came for me, and by that time*  
2 *no one was left to speak up."*

3 *[Rev. Martin Niemoeller]*

4 *"What we obtain too cheaply, we esteem too lightly; it is dearness only that gives everything its value.*  
5 *Heaven knows how to put a price upon its goods, and it would be strange indeed if so celestial an article*  
6 *as freedom should not be highly rated."*

7 *[Thomas Paine, 1776]*

8 *"One of the penalties for refusing to participate in politics is that you end up being governed by your*  
9 *inferiors."*

10 *[Plato]*

11 *"Blandishments will not fascinate us, nor will threats of a "halter" intimidate. For, under God, we are*  
12 *determined that wheresoever, whensoever, or howsoever we shall be called to make our exit, we will*  
13 *die free men."*

14 *[Josiah Quincy, 1774]*

15 *"Constitutional Rights cannot be denied simply because of hostility to their assertions and exercise;*  
16 *vindication of conceded Constitutional Rights cannot be made dependent upon any theory that it is less*  
17 *expensive to deny them than to afford them."*

18 *[Watson v. Memphis, 375 U.S. 526]*

19 *"Who can protest and does not, is an accomplice in the act."*

20 *[The Talmud, Sabbath, 54 b]*

### 21 **19.13 General Interest**

22 *"An error doesn't become a mistake until you refuse to correct it."*

23 *[Orlando A. Battista]*

24 *"Federalism employs mass propaganda and terrorization, reinforced by random victimization, to*  
25 *achieve its ends."*

26 *[Thurston Bell]*

27 *"The true danger is when liberty is nibbled away, for expedience, and by parts."*

28 *[Edmund Burke]*

29 *"Whenever a separation is made between liberty and justice, neither, in my opinion, is safe."*

30 *[Edmund Burke]*

31 *"Let it [the Constitution] be taught in schools, in seminaries, and in colleges. Let it be written in*  
32 *primers, in spelling books, and almanacs. Let it be preached from the pulpit, proclaimed in legislative*  
33 *halls, and enforced in courts of justice. In short, let it become the political religion of the nation."*

34 *[Ezra Taft Benson, Secretary of Agriculture in the Eisenhower Administration]*

35 *"God is going to reveal to us things he never revealed before if we put our hands in His. No books ever*  
36 *go into my laboratory. The thing I am to do and the way of doing it are revealed to me. I never have to*  
37 *grope for methods. The method is revealed to me the moment I am inspired to create something new.*  
38 *Without God to draw aside the curtain I would be helpless."*

39 *[George Washington Carver]*

40 *"There are two places only where socialism will work; in heaven where it is not needed, and in hell*  
41 *where they already have it."*

42 *[Winston Churchill]*

1           *“Not only does the Charter Organization (United Nations) not prevent future wars, but it makes it*  
2 *practically certain that we shall have future wars, and as to such wars it takes from us (the United*  
3 *States) the power to declare them to choose the side on which we shall fight, to determine what forces*  
4 *and military equipment we shall use in war, and to control and command our sons who do the fighting.”*  
5 *[J. Ruben Clark, Jr., former Under-Secretary of State and Ambassador to Mexico, who was widely*  
6 *recognized as one of our nation’s foremost international lawyers, from book entitled The United Nations*  
7 *Today]*

8           *“A nation can survive its fools, and even the ambitious. But it cannot survive treason from within. An*  
9 *enemy at the gates is less formidable, for he is known and carries his banner openly. But the traitor*  
10 *moves amongst those within the gate freely, his sly whispers rustling through all the alleys, heard in the*  
11 *very halls of government itself. For the traitor appears not a traitor; he speaks in accents familiar to*  
12 *his victims, and he wears their face and their arguments, he appeals to the baseness that lies deep in*  
13 *the hearts of all men. He rots the soul of a nation, he works secretly and unknown in the night to*  
14 *undermine the pillars of the city, he infects the body politic so that it can no longer resist. A murderer*  
15 *is less to fear.”*  
16 *[Marcus Tullius Cicero 42 B.C.]*

17           *“Creeds must disagree: it is the whole fun of the thing. If I think the universe is triangular, and you*  
18 *think it is square, there cannot be room for two universes. We may argue politely, we may argue*  
19 *humanely, we may argue with great mutual benefit; but, obviously, we must argue. Modern toleration*  
20 *is really a tyranny. It is a tyranny because it is a silence. To say that I must not deny my opponent’s*  
21 *faith is to say I must not discuss it... It is absurd to have a discussion on Comparative Religions if you*  
22 *don’t compare them.”*  
23 *[G.K. Chesterton (1874-1936)]*

24           *“[J]udicial verbicide is calculated to convert the Constitution into a worthless scrap of paper and to*  
25 *replace our government of laws with a judicial oligarchy.”*  
26 *[Senator Sam Ervin]*

27           *“The heritage of labor unions comes from the church and the mighty Wesleyan revivals of the eighteenth*  
28 *century. Social liberty for the working classes began when a Christian leader, Lord Shaftesbury, in the*  
29 *face of bitter family opposition, led a lifelong crusade for better working conditions, shorter hours,*  
30 *more pay, and fair treatment for the working man.”*  
31 *[Billy Graham]*

32           *“Life is a guided tour through the dismal landscape of our own inadequacies.”*  
33 *[William Norman Grigg]*

34           *“Life is a humiliating experience.”*  
35 *[Daniel McGavin Hansen]*

36           *“The failure of government schools is not caused by a lack of money; it is the consequence of*  
37 *monopoly.”*  
38 *[Patrick Henry]*

39           *“A nation that is afraid to let its people judge truth and falsehood in an open market is a nation that is*  
40 *afraid of its people”*  
41 *[John F. Kennedy]*

42           *“Injustice anywhere is a threat to justice everywhere.”*  
43 *[Martin Luther King, Jr. ]*

44           *“If a man is called to be a streetsweeper, he should sweep streets even as Michelangelo painted, or*  
45 *Shakespeare wrote poetry. He should sweep streets so well that all the hosts of heaven and earth will*  
46 *pause to say, here lived a great streetsweeper who did his job well.”*  
47 *[Martin Luther King, Jr.]*

1       *“Of all tyrannies a tyranny sincerely exercised for the good of its victim may be the most oppressive. It*  
2 *may be better to live under robber barons than under omnipotent moral busybodies. The robber baron’s*  
3 *cruelty may sometimes sleep, his cupidity may at some point be satiated, but those who torment us for*  
4 *our own good will torment us without end for they do so with the approval of their own conscience.”*  
5 *[C. S. Lewis, God in the Dock]*

6       *“Nearly all men can stand adversity, but if you want to test a man’s character, give him power.”*  
7 *[Abraham Lincoln]*

8       *“The people are the masters of both Congress and courts, not to overthrow the Constitution, but to*  
9 *overthrow the men who pervert it!”*  
10 *[Abraham Lincoln]*

11       *“Prohibition goes beyond the bounds of reason in that it attempts to control a man’s appetite by*  
12 *legislation and makes crimes out of things that are not crimes. A prohibition law strikes a blow at the*  
13 *very principles upon which our government was founded.”*  
14 *[Abraham Lincoln]*

15 \_\_\_\_\_  
16       *It does not surprise me that the so-called infidels and atheists should despise and oppose the doctrine*  
17 *of God’s absolute and universal sovereignty, but when I see men and women who claim to believe and*  
18 *receive God’s Word so vehemently hate, deny and oppose this grand doctrine, a teaching which is of*  
19 *the very essence of Godhood, I find it to be both monstrous and blasphemous. Yet the majority of*  
20 *churchgoers in our generation fall into this category. They have a god who is no God at all! Their puny*  
21 *god is like a water faucet which they turn on and off at their pleasure. But it is a truth to be known and*  
22 *declared, that there is no true worship except at the throne of His Sovereign Majesty, the exalted,*  
23 *reigning Christ of God.*

24       *One man said, “The whole tendency of irreligion and of false worship is, by degrees, to bring the minds*  
25 *of men to regard one thing after another as without or beyond the control of the Almighty. Idolaters*  
26 *ascribe the phenomena of rain and lightening and storms to their false gods. The impiety of countries*  
27 *nominally Christian ascribes the same effects to natural causes.” It seems that men will go to any means*  
28 *to escape the inescapable truth of the sovereignty of God!*

29       *Another man says, and truly so, “Any just estimate of the love and grace of God is vastly heightened by*  
30 *the fact that He is infinitely great, and that His condescension is unspeakable. Nor is it possible for us*  
31 *to maintain in purity, either the doctrines or worship of God, if we lose sight of His unsearchable*  
32 *greatness. If men have low conceptions of the glorious nature of God, any semblance of piety they may*  
33 *manifest is deceptive.” I repeat, true worship is only found before Him who sits upon His throne of*  
34 *grace!*  
35 *[Maurice Montgomery, Pastor Bible Baptist Church Madisonville, Kentucky]*

36 \_\_\_\_\_  
37       *“When our actions do not, Our fears do make us traitors.”*  
38 *[Wm. Shakespeare]*

39       *“We are bound to interpret the Constitution in the light of the law as it existed at the time it was*  
40 *adopted.”*  
41 *[Mattox v. U.S., 156 U.S. 237, 243]*

42       *“It is not true that democracy will always safeguard freedom of conscience better than autocracy.*  
43 *Witness the most famous of all trials. Pilate was, from the standpoint of the Jews, certainly the*  
44 *representative of autocracy. Yet he tried to protect freedom. And he yielded to a democracy.”*  
45 *[Joseph A. Schumpeter, 1942]*

1 John Swinton, former chief of staff of The New York Times, called by his peers, “The Dean of his profession”, was asked in  
2 1953 to give a toast before the New York Press Club. He rose and gave this toast.:

3 *There is no such thing, at this date of the world’s history, in America, as an independent press. You*  
4 *know it and I know it. There is not one of you who dares to write your honest opinions, and if you did,*  
5 *you know beforehand that it would never appear in print.*

6 *I am paid weekly for keeping my honest opinions out of the paper I am connected with. Others of you*  
7 *are paid similar salaries for similar things, and any of you who would be so foolish as to write honest*  
8 *opinions would be out on the streets looking for another job. If I allowed my honest opinions to appear*  
9 *in one issue of my paper, before twenty-four hours my occupation would be gone.*

10 *The business of the Journalist is to destroy truth; To lie outright; To pervert; To vilify; To fawn at the*  
11 *feet of mammon, and to sell his country and his race for his daily bread. You know it and I know it and*  
12 *what folly is this toasting an independent press? We are the tools and vassals for rich men behind the*  
13 *scenes. We are the jumping jacks, they pull the strings and we dance. Our talents, our possibilities and*  
14 *our lives are all the property of other men. We are intellectual prostitutes.*

### 15 **19.14 Of Special IRS Interest**

16 *“Compare this (40% to 75% total local, State and Federal tax rate) to the plight of medieval serfs. They*  
17 *only had to give the lord of the manor a third of their output and they were considered slaves. So what*  
18 *does that make us?”*

19 *[Daniel J. Mitchell, economist]*

20 *“In politics, nothing happens by accident. If it happens, it was planned that way.”*

21 *[Franklin D. Roosevelt]*

22 *“The hardest thing in the world to understand is the income tax.”*

23 *[Albert Einstein]*

24 *“[W]e must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt. We must make our election between economy*  
25 *and liberty or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debt, as that we must be taxed in our meat*  
26 *and in our drink, in our necessaries and our comforts, in our labors and our amusements, for our calling*  
27 *and our creeds...we [will] have no time to think, no means of calling our miss-managers to account but*  
28 *be glad to obtain subsistence by hiring ourselves to rivet their chains on the necks of our fellow-*  
29 *sufferers. And this is the tendency of all human governments. A departure from principle in one instance*  
30 *becomes a precedent till the bulk of society is reduced to be mere automatons of misery. And the*  
31 *foreshores of this frightful team is public debt. Taxation follows that, and in its train wretchedness and*  
32 *oppression.”*

33 *[President Thomas Jefferson]*

34 *“Since the Right to receive income or earnings is a Right belonging to every person, this right cannot*  
35 *be taxed as a privilege.”*

36 *[Jack Cole Co. v. MacFarland, 337 S.W. 2d. 453, 455-456 (Tenn. 1960)]*

37 *“In general the art of government consists in taking as much money as possible from one class of*  
38 *citizens to give to the other.”*

39 *[Voltaire]*

40 *“The remaining revenue on the consumption of foreign articles is paid chiefly by those who can afford*  
41 *to add foreign luxuries to domestic comforts, being collected on our seaboard and frontiers only, and*  
42 *incorporated with the transactions of our mercantile citizens, it may be the pleasure and the pride of*  
43 *an American to ask, What farmer, what mechanic, what laborer ever sees a taxgatherer of the United*  
44 *States?”*

45 *[Thomas Jefferson, 2nd Inaugural Address]*

1           *“There is no method of steering clear of this inconvenience, but by authorizing the national government*  
2 *to raise its own revenues in its own way. Imposts, excises, and, in general, all duties upon articles of*  
3 *consumption, may be compared to a fluid, which will, in time, find its level with the means of paying*  
4 *them. **The amount to be contributed by each citizen will in a degree be at his own option, and can be***  
5 *regulated by an attention to his resources. The rich may be extravagant, the poor can be frugal; and*  
6 *private oppression may always be avoided by a judicious selection of **objects proper for such***  
7 *impositions. If inequalities should arise in some States from duties on particular objects, these will, in*  
8 *all probability, be counterbalanced by proportional inequalities in other States, from the duties on other*  
9 *objects. In the course of time and things, an equilibrium, as far as it is attainable in so complicated a*  
10 *subject, will be established everywhere.”*  
11 *[Alexander Hamilton, Federalist Papers 79]*

12           *“In the general course of human nature, a power over a man’s subsistence amounts to a power over*  
13 *his will.”*  
14 *[Alexander Hamilton]*

15           *“A lie would have no sense unless the truth were felt as dangerous.”*  
16 *[Alfred Alder]*

17           *“The more corrupt the state, the more numerous the laws.”*  
18 *[Tacitus, 56-120 A.D.]*

19           *“It is a miserable slavery where the law is vague or uncertain. Misera est servitus, ubi jus est vagum*  
20 *aut incertum.”*  
21 *[Maxim of law (Editors note: Congressman Rob Gramms of Minnesota said recently (1999) in*  
22 *Congress that the code consists of over 7,000,000 words, and has been changed 5,400 times since*  
23 *1986)]*

24           *“The tax system is stacked against the average taxpayer.”*  
25 *[Senator Edward M. Kennedy]*

26           *“No nation ever taxed itself into prosperity.”*  
27 *[President Ronald Reagan]*

28           *“There is no law requiring a person to apply for a Social Security number, and there is no section of*  
29 *title 18, United States Code, making it a crime to not have a social security number.”*  
30 *[Dorcas R. Hardy, former Commissioner of Social Security]*

31           *“The suppression of unnecessary offices, of useless establishments and expenses, enabled us to*  
32 *discontinue our internal taxes. These covering our land with officers and opening our door to their*  
33 *intrusions, had already begun that process of domiciliary vexation which once entered is scarcely to be*  
34 *restrained from reaching, successively, every article of property and produce.”*  
35 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

36           *“The IRS has become morally corrupted by the enormous power which we in Congress have unwisely*  
37 *entrusted to it. Too often it acts like a Gestapo preying upon defenseless citizens.”*  
38 *[Senator Edward V. Long]*

39           *“Apart from constitutional considerations, no-knock laws are bad. If its people are to have a respect*  
40 *for law, a nation must have respectable laws, and no law is respectable if it authorizes officers to act*  
41 *like burglars, and robs the people of the only means they have for determining whether those who seek*  
42 *to invade their habitations violently or by stealth are officers or burglars.”*  
43 *[Senator Sam Ervin]*

44           *“The Privacy Act, if enforced would be a pretty good thing. But the government doesn’t like it.*  
45 *Government has an insatiable appetite for power, and it will not stop usurping power unless it is*  
46 *restrained by laws they cannot repeal or nullify. There are mighty few laws they cannot nullify.”*  
47 *[Senator Sam Ervin, principal sponsor of the Privacy Act of 1974]*

1           *“An internal tax on consumption essentially differs from a tax on visible property because, in the last*  
2 *case, nothing is more requisite than an account of what a man appears to be possessed of, whilst, in the*  
3 *other, it is necessary to know the quantity and quality of the article consumed; and in order to attain*  
4 *that knowledge a severe inquisition must take place... and... extraordinary & dangerous powers must*  
5 *be given to the collectors.”*

6           *[Albert Gallatin, Secretary of the Treasury]*

7           *“It will be of little avail to the people, that the laws are made by men of their own choice, if the laws be*  
8 *so voluminous that they cannot be read, or so incoherent that they cannot be understood; if they be*  
9 *repealed or revised before they are promulgated, or undergo such incessant changes that no man, who*  
10 *knows what the law is to-day, can guess what it will be to-morrow. Law is defined to be a rule of action;*  
11 *but how can that be a rule, which is little known, and less fixed?”*

12           *[Madison, Federalist Papers 62]*

13           *“When plunder becomes a way of life for a group of men living together in society, they create for*  
14 *themselves in the course of time, a legal system that authorizes it and a moral code that glorifies it.”*

15           *[Frederic Bastiat]*

16           *“But, sir, the people themselves have it in their power effectually to resist usurpation, without being*  
17 *driven to an appeal of arms. An act of usurpation is not obligatory; it is not law; and any man may be*  
18 *justified in his resistance. Let him be considered as a criminal by the general government, yet only his*  
19 *fellow-citizens can convict him; they are his jury, and if they pronounce him innocent, not all the powers*  
20 *of Congress can hurt him; and innocent they certainly will pronounce him, if the supposed law he*  
21 *resisted was an act of usurpation.”*

22           *[Theophilus Parsons, Massachusetts Convention for ratification of the U.S. Constitution]*

23           *“He does not appear to have retained his consent, if he have changed anything through the means of a*  
24 *party threatening. Non videtur consensum retinuisse si quis ex praescripto minantis aliquid immutavit.”*

25           *[Maxim of law]*

26           *“Maybe we ought to see that every person who gets a tax return receives a copy of the Communist*  
27 *Manifesto with it so he can see what’s happening to him.”*

28           *[T. Coleman Andrews, Commissioner of IRS, May 25, 1956 in U.S. News & World Report]*

29           *“100% of what is collected is absorbed solely by interest on the Federal Debt... all individual income*  
30 *tax revenues are gone before one nickel is spent on the services taxpayers expect from government.”*

31           *[1984 Grace Commission report submitted to President Ronald Reagan]*

32           *“If no information or return is filed, [the] Internal Revenue Service cannot assess you.”*

33           *[Gary Makovski, Special IRS Agent, testifying under oath in U.S. v. Lloyd]*

34           *“The United States has a system of taxation by confession.”*

35           *[Hugo Black, Supreme Court Justice, in U.S. v. Kahriger]*

36           *“Only the rare taxpayer would be likely to know that he could refuse to produce his records to IRS*  
37 *agents... Who would believe the ironic truth that the cooperative taxpayer fares much worse than the*  
38 *individual who relies upon his constitutional rights.”*

39           *[Judge Cummings, U.S. Federal Judge, in U.S. v. Dickerson (7th Circuit 1969)]*

40           *“All we have to do now is to inform the public that the payment of social security taxes is voluntary and*  
41 *watch the mass exodus.”*

42           *[Walter E. Williams, John M. Olin Distinguished Professor of Economics at George Mason University*  
43 *in Fairfax, Virginia, January 24, 1996]*

44           *“To lay with one hand the power of government on the property of the citizen, and with the other to*  
45 *bestow it on favored individuals... is none the less robbery because it is... called taxation.”*

46           *[United States Supreme Court in Loan Association v. Topeka (1874)]*

1           *"If the representatives of the people betray their constituents, there is then no recourse left but in the*  
2 *exertion of that original right of self defense which is paramount to all positive forms of government..."*  
3 *[Alexander Hamilton, Federalist Papers 28]*

4           *"To compel a man to furnish funds for the propagation of ideas he disbelieves and abhors is sinful and*  
5 *tyrannical."*  
6 *[Thomas Jefferson]*

7           *"The great mass of people... will more easily fall victim to a big lie than to a small one."*  
8 *[Adolf Hitler (1889-1945), Mein Kampf]*

9           *"Anyone who isn't confused really doesn't understand the situation."*  
10 *[Edward R. Murrow]*

11 \_\_\_\_\_  
12           *Eight decades of amendments and accretions to the Code have produced a virtually impenetrable maze.*  
13 *The rules are unintelligible to most citizens—including those who hold advanced degrees and including*  
14 *many who specialize in tax law. The rules are equally mysterious to many government employees who*  
15 *are charged with administering and enforcing the law.*

16           *It is also a known fact that the Internal Revenue Code is a very easily misunderstood area of law, even*  
17 *misunderstood by trained professionals. Judges and lawyers admittedly do not know the tax laws."*  
18 *[Ms. Shirley D. Peterson, former Commissioner of the IRS made in a "Tax Policy Lecture" before*  
19 *Southern Methodist University, on April 14, 1993]*

20 \_\_\_\_\_  
21           *"God has commanded us to preserve our assets to create an inheritance for our children. With the*  
22 *criminal IRS and other government agencies after our assets at all times, it is difficult to make that*  
23 *preservation."*  
24 *[Pastor Everett Sileven, Faith Baptist Church, Louisville, Nebraska]*

25           *"'Income,' as used in the statute should be given the meaning so as not to include everything that comes*  
26 *in. The true function of the words 'gains' and 'profits' is to limit the meaning of the word "income.'"*  
27 *[So. Pacific v. Lowe, 238 F. 847 (1917)]*

28           *"In a recent conversation with an official at the Internal Revenue Service, I was amazed when he told*  
29 *me that 'If the taxpayers of this country ever discover that the IRS operates on 90% bluff the entire*  
30 *system will collapse."*  
31 *[Henry Bellmon, Senator (1969)]*

32           *"The high-handed bureaucratic excesses of the IRS are a national disgrace... riding roughshod over*  
33 *the taxpayers and making a joke out of our rule of laws."*  
34 *[Senator Paul Laxalt]*

35           *"As you know, the Senate Finance Committee held a series of hearings on problems with the complex*  
36 *tax code and the IRS. These hearings brought public many horror stories on the tactics used by the IRS.*  
37 *Additionally, my office received an anonymous fax which indicated that the regional offices of the IRS*  
38 *were maintaining quotas on collection agents; in effect rewarding these agents not for accuracy, but*  
39 *for how much they collected. I immediately contacted the new IRS Director who assured me publicly*  
40 *that practice would end. This practice has long been illegal, and legislation has now been passed that*  
41 *will strengthen the agency responsible for curbing this and other abuses."*  
42 *[Senator Richard Bryan, Nevada: November 9, 1999]*

43           *"If the law does not assure that tax returns filed by Americans will not be turned against them, our*  
44 *system of voluntary compliance with the tax laws faces a doubtful future."*

1 [Senator Frank Church, Chairman, Select Committee to Study Governmental Operations, 94th  
2 Congress, First Session, Volume 3, Internal Revenue Service (October 2, 1975)]

3 “A hand from Washington will be stretched out and placed upon every man’s business; the eye of the  
4 federal inspector will be in every man’s counting house.... The law will of necessity have inquisitorial  
5 features, it will provide penalties, it will create complicated machinery. Under it, men will be hauled  
6 into courts distant from their homes. Heavy fines imposed by distant and unfamiliar tribunals will  
7 constantly menace the taxpayer. An army of federal inspectors, spies, and detectives will descend upon  
8 the state.”

9 [Virginia House Speaker Richard E. Byrd, 1910, predicting what would happen if the federal Congress  
10 were to enact a federal income tax]

11 “Let me point this out now. Your income tax is 100 percent voluntary and your liquor tax is 100 percent  
12 enforced tax. Now the situation is as different as day and night. Consequently, your same rules just will  
13 not apply...”

14 [Dwight E. Avis, Head of ATF, IRS—House Ways and Means Subcommittee Hearings—1953]

15 “The real point of audits is to instill fear, not to extract revenue; the IRS aims at winning through  
16 intimidation and (thereby) getting maximum voluntary compliance.”

17 [Paul Strassel, Former IRS Headquarters Agent “Wall St. Journal”, 1/28/80]

18 “The IRS’s goal is to increase the rate at which taxpayers voluntarily pay their taxes from the current  
19 82.3% to 90% by 2001.”

20 [The Washington Post front page Dec. 2, 1993, IRS Hopes Change]

21 “Each year American taxpayers voluntarily file their tax returns and make a special effort to pay the  
22 taxes they owe.”

23 [Johnie M. Walters IRS Commissioner, 1971 Form 1040 Booklet]

---

24  
25 **From Publication 21/1998 update: Do you have to file a tax return and pay taxes?**

26 **Answer from Pub. 21:** The U. S. income tax system is built on the idea of “voluntary compliance.” This  
27 means that it is left to the taxpayer to keep the necessary records, file a return on time, pay any required  
28 taxes, and meet any other requirements of the tax law. The system is built on trust in the citizens to know  
29 their responsibilities and to do what needs to be done. Taxpayers voluntarily follow the steps the tax  
30 system lays out. Failure to do so can result in penalties.

31 Two aspects of the Federal Income Tax system—voluntary compliance with the law and self-assessment  
32 of tax - make it important for you to understand your rights and responsibilities as a taxpayer.  
33 ‘Voluntary compliance’ places on the taxpayer the responsibility for filing an income tax return. You  
34 must decide whether the law requires you to file a return. If it does, you must file your return by the  
35 date it is due.

36 [IRS Publication 21]

---

37  
38 “You are among the millions of Americans who comply with the tax law voluntarily.”

39 [1992 Form 1040 Tax Instruction Booklet]

40 “Our tax system is based on individual self-assessment and voluntary compliance.”

41 [Mortimer Caplin, IRS Commissioner, 1975 IRS IR Audit Manual]

42 “The mission of the service is to encourage and achieve the highest possible degree of voluntary  
43 compliance.”

44 [Donald C. Alexander, IRS Commissioner, Federal Register, March 1974 ]

1           *“The IRS’s primary task is to collect taxes under a voluntary compliance system.”*  
2           *[Jerome Kurtz IRS Commissioner, 1980 IR Annual Report]*

3           *“We have a voluntary compliance system.”*  
4           *[Fred Goldberg, IRS Commissioner, Nightline with Ted Koppel, Apr.13, 1990]*

5           *“Our system of taxation is based on voluntary assessment and payment, not upon distraint.”*  
6           *[United States v. Flora, 362 U.S. 145 (1958)]*

7           *“When you doubt, do not act. Quod dubitas, ne feceris.”*  
8           *[Maxim of law]*

9           *“Where the law is uncertain, there is no law. Ubi jus incertum, ibi jus nullum.”*  
10          *[Maxim of law]*

11          *“When the law fails to serve as a rule, almost everything ought to be suspected. Ubi non adest norma*  
12          *legis, omnia quasi pro suspectis habenda sunt.”*  
13          *[Maxim of law]*

14          *“Where there is no authority to enforce, there is no authority to obey. Ubi non est condendi auctoritas,*  
15          *ibi non est parendi necessitas.”*  
16          *[Maxim of law]*

17          *“Resignation is the spontaneous relinquishment of one’s own right. Resignatio est juris proprii*  
18          *spontanea refutatio.”*  
19          *[Maxim of law]*

20          *“A wrong is not done to one who knows and wills it. Scientia et voluti non fit injuria.”*  
21          *[Maxim of law]*

## 22    **19.15 Money**

23          *“While boasting of our noble deeds, we are careful to control the ugly fact that by an iniquitous money*  
24          *system, we have nationalized a system of oppression which, though more refined, is not less cruel than*  
25          *the old system of chattel slavery.”*  
26          *[Horace Greely]*

27          *“Whoever controls the volume of money in any country is absolute master of all industry and*  
28          *commerce.”*  
29          *[James Garfield]*

30          *“Those who create and issue money and credit direct the policies of government and hold in the hollow*  
31          *of their hands the destiny of the people.”*  
32          *[Sir Reginald McKenna, former President of the Midland Bank of England]*

33          *“In the first place, then, it is patent that in our days, not wealth alone is accumulated, but immense*  
34          *power and despotic economic domination are concentrated in the hands of the few, who for the most*  
35          *part are not the owners but only the trustees and directors of invested funds, which they administer at*  
36          *their own good pleasure... This domination is most powerfully exercised by those who, because they*  
37          *hold and control money, also govern credit and determine its allotment, for that reason supplying so to*  
38          *speak, the life blood of the entire economic body, and grasping in their hands, as it were, the very soul*  
39          *of production, so that no one can breathe against their will...”*  
40          *[Pope Pius XI]*

41          *“A billion here, a billion there—pretty soon it adds up to real money.”*  
42          *[Senator Everett Dirksen]*

## 20 Chapter 20: Maxims of Law

### 20.1 Ignorance of the Law

By Christopher Holloman Hansen

As ignorance of the Law is not considered a valid excuse. It is important to consider, and study the law. Not only the laws of God but the interpretations and meanings of law that is most certain and chiefest of law. These are commonly known as “maxims” of law. Normally when a maxim is presented it is first written in it Latin form and then in English. We have reversed that format here for ease of reading. Legal references were removed for the same reasons.

Also included are a few definitions for quick reference and thoughts from men of law and of the courts concerning law. These maxims are but a small sampling of legal maxims but are considered especially important to the Fellowship because they demonstrate clearly that Christian morality is the foundation of American law; the duty to God we have before our duty to obey any legislation passed as law by a government; that you cannot have law (real law) in America without religion, morality and God, that if you neglect your rights and duties you are the one that has added to your difficulties. The maxims demonstrate the evil of U.S.C. Title 26 and its regulations, and they demonstrate the evils of the Social Security Act, codes and regulations. A more complete list can be found in most legal dictionaries. These maxims and definitions were found in: A LAW DICTIONARY ADAPTED TO THE CONSTITUTION AND LAWS OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA AND OF THE SEVERAL STATES OF THE AMERICAN UNION, With References to the Civil and Other Systems of Foreign Law by John Bouvier (1856 edition). In addition the definition of “succor” and “impossible” were found in the 1828 edition of Webster’s as they were not found in Bouvier’s. The 1856 edition of Bouvier’s Law dictionary was used, as was Webster’s 1828 edition, in an attempt to ensure that the meanings of laws and of the words that form these maxims could be understood in the same manner that the Founding Fathers understood them when the Constitution was authored. (All emphasis was added by editor.)

### 20.2 Thoughts on law

*“The government of the United States has been emphatically termed a government of laws and not men.”*

*[Chief Justice John Marshall]*

*“But, unfortunately, law by no means confines itself to its proper functions. And when it has exceeded its proper functions, it has not done so merely in some inconsequential and debatable matters. The law has gone further than this; it has acted in direct opposition to its own purpose. The law has been used to destroy its own objective: It has been applied to annihilating the justice that it was supposed to maintain; to limiting and destroying rights which its real purpose was to respect. The law has placed the collective force at the disposal of the unscrupulous who wish, without risk, to exploit the person, liberty, and property of others. It has converted plunder into a right. When plunder becomes a way of life for a group of men living together in society, they create for themselves in the course of time, a legal system that authorizes it and a moral code that glorifies it.”*

*[Frederic Bastiat, Economic Sophisms]*

*“Wherever law ends, tyranny begins, if the law be transgressed to another’s harm; an whosoever in authority exceeds the power given him by the law, and makes use of the force he has under his command to compass that upon the subject which the law allows not, ceases in that to be a magistrate, and acting without authority may be opposed, as any other man who by force invades the right of another. This is acknowledged in subordinate magistrates. He that hath authority to seize my person in the street may be opposed as a thief and a robber if he endeavours to break into my house to execute a writ, notwithstanding that I know he has such a warrant and such a legal authority as will empower him to arrest me abroad. And why this should not hold in the highest, as well as in the most inferior magistrate, I would gladly be informed.”*

*[John Locke, late 1600’s; from: Of Tyranny]*

*“It is proper to take alarm at the first experiment on our liberties. We hold this prudent jealousy to be the first duty of citizens and one of the noblest characteristics of the late Revolution. The freemen of*

1 *America did not wait till usurped power had strengthened itself by exercise and entangled the question*  
2 *in precedents. They saw all the consequences in the principle, and they avoided the consequences by*  
3 *denying the principle. We revere this lesson too much... to forget it."*  
4 *[James Madison]*

5 *"Those rights, then, which God and nature have established, and are therefore called natural rights,*  
6 *such as life and liberty, need not the aid of human laws to be more effectually invested in every man*  
7 *than they are; neither do they receive any additional strength when declared by the municipal laws to*  
8 *be inviolate. On the contrary, no human legislature has power to abridge or destroy them, unless the*  
9 *owner shall himself commit some act that amounts to a forfeiture."*  
10 *[Sir William Blackstone, Commentaries 1:139 (1765) ]*

11 *"All laws which are repugnant to the Constitution are null and void."*  
12 *[Marbury v. Madison, 5 U.S. (2 Cranch) 137, 174, 176, (1803)]*

13 *"An unconstitutional act is not law; it confers no rights; it imposes no duties; affords no protection; it*  
14 *creates no office; it is in legal contemplation, as inoperative as though it had never been passed."*  
15 *[Norton v. Shelby County, 118 U.S. 425 p.442]*

16 *"Where rights secured by the Constitution are involved, there can be no rule making or legislation*  
17 *which would abrogate them."*  
18 *[Miranda vs. Arizona, 384 U.S. 436 p. 491]*

19 *"All acts of the legislature apparently contrary to natural rights and justice are, in our law and must*  
20 *be in the nature of things, considered void... We are in conscience bound to disobey."*  
21 *[Robin vs. Hardaway, 1 Jefferson 109, (Va., 1772)]*

## 22 **20.3 Maxims**

23 *A maxim is so called because its dignity is chiefest, and its authority most certain, and because*  
24 *universally approved by all. Maxime ita dicta quia maxima ejus dignitas et certissima auctoritas, atque*  
25 *quod maxime omnibus probetur.*

26 *We can do nothing against truth. Nihil possumus contra veritatem.*

27 *Liberty is an inestimable good. Libertas inestimabilis res est.*

28 *Law is the science of what is good and evil. Jus est ars boni et aequi.*

29 ***To swear is to call God to witness, and is an act of religion. Jurare est Deum in testum vocare, et est***  
30 *actus divini cultus.*

31 *It is better to suffer every wrong or ill, than to consent to it. Melius est omnia mala pati quam malo*  
32 *concentire.*

33 *It is better to recede than to proceed in evil. Melius est recurrere quam malo currere.*

34 ***No man is presumed to be forgetful of his eternal welfare, and particularly at the point of death. Nemo***  
35 *praesumitur esse immemor suae aeternae salutis, et maxime in articulo mortis.*

36 *Not only what is permitted, but what is proper, is to be considered, because what is improper is illegal.*  
37 *Non solum quid licet, sed quid est conveniens considerandum, quia nihil quod inconveniens est licitum.*

38 ***Whatever is against the rule of right, is a wrong. Quicquid est contra normam recti est injuria.***

39 *What is otherwise good and just, if sought by force or fraud, becomes bad and unjust. Quod alias bonum*  
40 *et justum est, si per vim vel fraudem petatur, malum et injustum efficitur.*

1 *When you doubt, do not act. Quod dubitas, ne feceris.*

2 *Where the law is uncertain, there is no law. Ubi jus incertum, ibi jus nullum.*

3 *It is a miserable state of things where the law is vague and uncertain. Res est misera ubi jus est vagam*  
4 *et invertum.*

5 *The custom of fixing and refixing (making and annulling) laws is most dangerous. Legis figendi et*  
6 *refigendi consuetudo periculosissima est.*

7 *It is a miserable slavery where the law is vague or uncertain. Misera est servitus, ubi jus est vagum aut*  
8 *incertum.*

9 *When the law fails to serve as a rule, almost everything ought to be suspected. Ubi non adest norma*  
10 *legis, omnia quasi pro suspectis habenda sunt.*

11 *No one is obliged to accept a benefit against his consent. Dig. 50, 17, 69. But if he does not dissent he*  
12 *will be considered as assenting. Invito beneficium non datur.*

13 *He who errs is not considered as consenting. Non videntur qui errant consentire.*

14 *All things are presumed to be done legitimately, until the contrary is proved. Omnia praesumuntur*  
15 *legitime facta donec probetur in contrarium*

16 *He is not deceived who know himself to be deceived. Non decipitur qui scit se decipi.*

17 *Every consent removes error. Omnis consensus tollit errorem.*

18 *He who uses his legal rights, harms no one. Qui jure suo utitur, nemini facit injuriam.*

19 *He who derives a benefit from a thing, ought to feel the disadvantages attending it. Que sentit*  
20 *commodum, sentire debet et onus.*

21 *Where there is no authority to enforce, there is no authority to obey. Ubi non est condendi auctoritas,*  
22 *ibi non est parendi necessitas.*

23 *Error of law is injurious. Error juris nocet.*

24 *What is expressed renders what is implied silent. Expressum facit cessare tacitum.*

25 *An error not resisted is approved. Error qui non resistitur, approbatur.*

26 *Nothing against reason is lawful. Nihil quod est contra rationem est licitum.*

27 *One cannot transfer to another a right which he has not. Nemo plus juris ad alienum transfere potest,*  
28 *quam ispe habent.*

29 *The power which is derived cannot be greater than that from which it is derived. Derativa potestas*  
30 *non potest esse major primitiva.*

31 *Editor's questions: How does our government have the lawful authority to take from one person and*  
32 *give it to another against the will of the first person if We the People that supposedly granted this power*  
33 *to the governments do not have the power to forcibly take from a person and give it to another person?*  
34 *Do you have the right to take someone's property and give it to anyone you choose? If not, then how*  
35 *did our government get such a power?*

36 *Time runs against the slothful and those who neglect their rights. Currit tempus contra desides et sui*  
37 *juris contemptores.*

1 *It is to the intention that all law applies. Animus ad se omne jus ducit.*

2 *The intention of the party is the soul of the instrument. Animus moninis est anima scripti.*

3 *No one is bound to arm his adversary. Nemo tenetur armare adversarum contra se.*

4 *No one is bound to expose himself to misfortune and dangers. Nemo tenetur seipsam infortunis et*  
5 *periculis exponere.*

6 *The proof lies upon him who affirms, not on him who denies. Affirmati, non neganti incumbit probatio.*

7 *An act done by me against my will, is not my act. Actus me invito factus, non est meus actus.*

8 *An act does not make a person guilty, unless the intention be also guilty. This maxim applies only to*  
9 *criminal cases; in civil matters it is otherwise. Actus non reum facit, nisi mens sit rea.*

10 *The laws consist not in being read, but in being understood. Non in legendo sed in intelligendo leges*  
11 *consistunt.*

12 *Impossibility excuses the law. Impotentia excusat legem.*

13 *No one is bound to do what is impossible. A l'impossible nul n'est tenu.*

14 *The law requires nothing impossible. Lex non cogit impossibilia.*

15 *The law forces not to impossibilities. Hob. 96. Lex non cogit ad impossibilia.*

16 *The law intends not anything impossible. 12 Co. 89. Lex non intendit aliquid impossibile.*

17 *Gross negligence is a fault, gross fault is a **fraud**. Manga negligentia culpa est, magna culpa dolus est*

18 *Great neglect is equivalent to **fraud**. Magna culpa dolus est.*

19 *To be able to know is the same as to know. This maxim is applied to the duty of every one to know the*  
20 *law. Idem est scire aut scire debet aut potuisse.*

21 ***Ignorance** of facts excuses, ignorance of law does not excuse. 1 Co. 177; 4 Bouv. Inst. n Ignorantia*  
22 *facti excusat, ignorantia juris non excusat. See Ignorance.*

23 *The laws **succor** the ignorant. Lex succurit ignoranti. (See Succor)*

## 24 **20.4 Definitions**

25 *IMPOSS'IBLE, adjective [French from Latin impossibilis; in and possibilis, from possum, to be able.]*

26 *1. That cannot be. It is impossible that two and two should make five, or that a circle and a square*  
27 *should be the same thing, or that a thing should be, and not be at the same time.*

28 *2. Impracticable; not feasible; that cannot be done.*

29 *With men this is impossible; but with God all things are possible. Matthew 19. Without faith it is*  
30 *impossible to please God. Hebrews 11.*

31 *There are two kinds of impossibilities; physical and moral. That is a physical impossibility, which is*  
32 *contrary to the law of nature. A thing is said to be morally impossible, when in itself it is possible, but*  
33 *attended with difficulties or circumstances which give it the appearance of being impossible.*  
34 *(WEBSTER'S 1828)*

1 *IMPOSSIBILITY, The character of that which. cannot be done agreeably to the accustomed order of*  
2 *nature.*

3 2. *It is a maxim that no one is bound to perform an impossibility. A l'impossible nul n'est tenu.*  
4 *(Bouvier's)*

5 *SUC'COR, VERB TRANSITIVE Literally, to run to, or run to support; hence, to help or relieve when*  
6 *in difficulty, want or distress; to assist and deliver from suffering; as, to succor a besieged city; to*  
7 *succor prisoners.*

8 *NOUN Aid; help; assistance; particularly, assistance that relieves and delivers from difficulty, want*  
9 *or distress. (WEBSTER'S 1828)*

10 *IGNORANCE, The want of knowledge.*

11 2. *Ignorance is distinguishable from error. Ignorance is want of knowledge; error is the non-conformity*  
12 *or opposition of our ideas to the truth. Considered as a motive of our actions, ignorance differs but*  
13 *little from error. They are generally found together, and what is said of one is said of both.*

14 3. *Ignorance and error, are of several kinds. 1. When considered as to their object, they are of law and*  
15 *of fact. 2. When examined as to their origin, they are voluntary or involuntary, 3. When viewed with*  
16 *regard to their influence on the affairs of men, they are essential or non-essential.*

17 6.—2. *Ignorance is either voluntary or involuntary. 1. It is voluntary when a party might, by taking*  
18 *reasonable pains, have acquired the necessary knowledge. For example, every man might acquire a*  
19 *knowledge of the laws which have been promulgated, a neglect to become acquainted with them is*  
20 *therefore voluntary ignorance. Doct. & St. 1, 46; Plowd. 343.*

21 7.—2. *Involuntary ignorance is that which does not proceed from choice, and which cannot be*  
22 *overcome by the use of any means of knowledge known to him and within his power; as, the ignorance*  
23 *of a law which has not yet been promulgated. (Bouvier's)*

24 *FRAUD, contracts, torts. Any trick or artifice employed by one person to induce another to fall into*  
25 *an error, or to detain him in it, so that he may make an agreement contrary to his interest. The fraud*  
26 *may consist either, first, in the misrepresentation, or, secondly, in the concealment of a material fact.*  
27 *Fraud, force and vexation, are odious in law. Fraud gives no action, however, without damage; and in*  
28 *matters of contract it is merely a defence; it cannot in any case constitute a new contract. It is essentially*  
29 *ad hominem.*

30 2. *Fraud avoids a contract, ab initio, both at law and in equity, whether the object be to deceive the*  
31 *public, or third persons, or one party endeavor thereby to cheat the other.*

32 3. *The following enumeration of frauds, for which equity will grant relief, is given by Lord Hardwicke,*  
33 *2 Ves. 155. 1. Fraud, dolus malus, may be actual, arising from facts and circumstances of imposition,*  
34 *which is the plainest case. 2. It may be apparent from the intrinsic nature and subject of the bargain*  
35 *itself; such as no man in his senses, and not under delusion, would make on the one hand, and such as*  
36 *no honest and fair man would accept on the other, which are inequitable and unconscientious*  
37 *bargains. Fraud, which may be presumed from the circumstances and condition of the parties*  
38 *contracting.*

39 5. *An actual or positive fraud is the intentional and successful employment of any cunning,*  
40 *deception, or artifice, used to circumvent, cheat, or deceive another.*

41 6. *By constructive fraud is meant such a contract or act, which, though not originating in any actual*  
42 *evil design or contrivance to perpetrate a positive fraud or injury upon other persons, yet, by its*  
43 *tendency to deceive or mislead. them, or to violate private or public confidence, or to impair or injure*  
44 *the public interests, is deemed equally reprehensible with positive fraud, and, therefore, is prohibited*  
45 *by law, as within the same reason and mischief as contracts and acts done malo animo. Constructive*

1 *frauds are such as are either against public policy, in violation of some special confidence or trust, or*  
2 *operate substantially as a fraud upon private right's, interests, duties, or intentions of third persons; or*  
3 *unconscientiously compromit, or injuriously affect, the private interests, rights or duties of the parties*  
4 *themselves.*

5 *7. The civilians divide frauds into positive, which consists in doing one's self, or causing another to do,*  
6 *such things as induce a belief of the truth of what does not exist or negative, which consists in doing or*  
7 *dissimulating certain things, in order to induce the opposite party. into error, or to retain him there.*  
8 *The intention to deceive, which is the characteristic of fraud, is here present. Fraud is also divided into*  
9 *that which has induced the contract, dolus dans causum contractui, and incidental or accidental fraud.*  
10 *The former is that which has been the cause or determining motive of the contract, that without which*  
11 *the party defrauded would not have contracted, when the artifices practised by one of the parties have*  
12 *been such that it is evident, without them, the other would not have contracted. Incidental or accidental*  
13 *fraud is that by which a person, otherwise determined to contract, is deceived on some accessories or*  
14 *incidents of the contract; for example, as to the quality of the object of the contract, or its price, so that*  
15 *he has made a bad bargain. Accidental fraud does not, according to the civilians, avoid the contract,*  
16 *but simply subjects the party to damages. It is otherwise where the fraud has been the determining cause*  
17 *of the contract, qui causam dedit contractui; in that case. the contract is void. (Bouvier's)*

## 21 Chapter 21: Sovereign Epistles

### 21.1 Introduction

by Daniel McGavin Hansen

Language is a gift of God enabling man to be thoughtful and to communicate. In the words of an anonymous sage, “Language is the dress of thought; every time you speak your mind is on parade.” Ben Jonson observed: “Language most shows a man; speak that I may see thee.”

Sovereign Epistles is a collection of letters presented that students of Christian sovereignty may see more clearly into the concepts, doctrines and precepts of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty. These epistles are presented with candor and honesty and are not intended to be cited as rote dogma pretending to have God’s stamp of approval. These letters help show the continuation of our patriotic religion and our attempt to translate the doctrines of Christ and the gospel of liberty into cogent argument. In the words of Coleridge, “Language is the armory of the human mind, and at once contains the trophies of the past, and the weapons of its future conquests.”

To translate trophies of the past into weapons for future conquests is an unending assignment and our modest attempt is offered as just that. We hope that the Sovereign Epistles will help create an insatiable appetite for the quest of truth and wisdom and understanding and will provoke gems of creative thinking and nuggets of inspiration that can enhance and enlarge our written and ongoing parade of thought.

The Apostle Paul wrote in his second epistle to the Corinthians, Chapter 3, verse 6 “...for the letter killeth, but the spirit giveth life.”

We believe the spirit of translation and understanding by that spirit is captured by Wm. Tyndale in his Prologue to the first printed English New Testament, published in 1525:

*I have here translated, brethren and sisters most dear and tenderly beloved in Christ, the New Testament for your spiritual edifying, consolation and solace, exhortyng instantly and besechyng those that are better sene in the tongues than I, and that have higher gifts of grace to interpret sense of Scripture, and meaning of the Spirit, than, to consider and ponder my labor, and that with the spirit of meekness. And if they perceive in any places that I have not attained the very sense of the tongue, or meaning of the Scripture, or have not given the right English word, that they put in their hands to amend it, remembering that so is their duty to do. For we have not received the gifts of God for ourselves only, or for to hide them; but for to bestow them unto the honoring of God and Christ and edifying of the congregation, which is the body of Christ.*

We have sought to emulate the Tyndale spirit and hope to be judged by the same.

Regardless, our epistles are designed to provoke debate, discussion, thinking and interaction of thought; yes even controversy, for the truth on earth has always been controversial. Truth must be kept alive in vigorously contended contest. Throughout history God has required the blood of his martyrs and saints to fertilize the tree of truth. Men of wisdom understand that that which is easily obtained is lightly esteemed. Truth unchallenged and uncontested becomes as dead dogma, as dust on the Bible and ignorance of the Constitution. Error, sophistry, deceit and evil proliferate as weeds in an unkept garden. Truthful ideas and wisdom must be carefully cultivated to grow into fruition in the hearts and minds of mortals if they are to have any utility and value to the human condition.

Arthur Schopenhauer claims there are three stages of truth:

1. First, it is considered absurd and ignored or ridiculed.
2. Next, it is considered dangerous to the status quo and viciously attacked.
3. Lastly, it is considered wholesome, indeed, self-evident.

1 Our epistles are presented in the name of “Seekers” a title adopted by hero and early American spiritual leader Roger Williams  
2 as he claimed no special authority to expound upon the doctrines of our Lord but proclaimed himself a “Seeker” of truth.

3 We Sovereigns have been endowed by our Creator with certain unalienable rights, God given talents, and abilities, not to be  
4 hidden under a bushel but to be invested in the market place of ideas, there to be polished and refined in the Eternal Battle of  
5 good verses evil. We are exercising and seeking to keep alive our Rights including the freedoms of speech, press, assembly  
6 and worship.

7 Our hope of victory is in Christ and our prayer is that He will magnify our pens of persuasion; For we believe in the sentiment  
8 expressed by William C. Clegg:

9 *Know this, that every soul is free*  
10 *To choose his life and what he'll be,*  
11 *For this eternal truth is given*  
12 *That God will force no man to heav'n.*

13 *He'll call, persuade, direct aright,*  
14 *And bless with wisdom, love, and light*  
15 *In nameless ways be good and kind,*  
16 *But never force the human mind.*

17 *Freedom and reason make us men;*  
18 *Take these away, what are we then?*  
19 *mere animals, and just as well*  
20 *The beasts may think of heav'n or hell.*

21 Victory belongs to the diligent, the active, the brave. We hope the Sovereign Epistles will inspire you to action and arm you  
22 with knowledge and understanding, but, if we fall short of our lofty aspirations we leave you the poetic encouragement of  
23 “OPPORTUNITY” by Edward B. Sill:

24 *A craven hung along the battle's edge,*  
25 *And thought "Had I a sword of keener steel—*  
26 *The blue blade that the king's son bears—but this*  
27 *Blunt thing—!" he snapped and flung it from his hand.*  
28 *And lowering crept away and left the field.*  
29 *Then came the king's son, wounded, sore bestead,*  
30 *And weaponless, and saw the broken sword,*  
31 *Hilt-buried in the dry and trodden sand,*  
32 *And ran and snatched it, and with battle-shout*  
33 *Lifted afresh he hewd his enemy down,*  
34 *And saved a great cause that heroic day.*

35 In the United States of America we are all sons and daughters of the King of kings; princes and princesses all. Pick up what  
36 ever sword you may find and with a battle shout enter, once again, the eternal battle for liberty.

37 May God bless you, us, and all mankind.

## 38 **21.2 American Aristocracy**

39 January 23, in the year of our Lord 1996

40 Dear Alan,

41 Most people that live in these united States realize that we do not have a monarchy but what most, if not nearly all, Americans  
42 fail to realize is that we do have an aristocracy. We the People, are created by our God as equals and therefore all of us, as  
43 individuals, are sovereigns. The Bible, in Revelation, written by John the Beloved, it says in 1:6 that God has made us Kings.

1 I write this letter because God has told us that as a man thinkest, so is he. If We the People know not what we are, how are  
2 we to think and in doing so take upon ourselves our true natures? But we need not rely only on the Bible for our aristocracy.  
3 The law is quite clear on this matter.

4 In *Chisholm v. Georgia* The Supreme Court ruled,

5 *[A]t the Revolution, the sovereignty devolved on the people; and they are truly the sovereigns of the*  
6 *country, but they are sovereigns without subjects. with none to govern but themselves; the citizens of*  
7 *America are equal as fellow citizens, and as joint tenants in the sovereignty. (US) @ Dall 419, 4541 L*  
8 *Ed 440, 455 @ Dall 1793 pp.471-472.*

9 In *Yick Wo v. Hopkins, Sheriff*, the Supreme Court ruled:

10 *Sovereignty itself is, of course, not subject to the law, for it is the author and source of law, but in our*  
11 *system, while sovereign powers are delegated to the agencies of government, sovereignty itself remains*  
12 *with the people, by whom and for whom all government exists and acts... For, the very idea that one*  
13 *man may be compelled to hold his life or the means of living or any material right essential to the*  
14 *enjoyment of life, at the mere will of another, seems to be intolerable in any country where freedom*  
15 *prevails, as being the essence of slavery itself. (118 U. 5. 356.)*

16 In *Scott v. Sandford, Mo.* they ruled:

17 *The words 'sovereign people' are those who form the sovereign, and who hold the power and conduct*  
18 *the government through their representatives. Every citizen is one of these people and a constituent*  
19 *member of this sovereignty.' 60 U.S. 393 404*

20 What exactly is a sovereign and what does sovereignty mean? Let us consult Mr. Webster to help define the essence of our  
21 thinking and our true nature.

22 *Sovereign, adj., 1. above or superior to all others; greatest 2. supreme in power, rank. etc. 3. of or being*  
23 *a ruler; reigning noun- 1. a person having sovereign authority; specif., a monarch or ruler*

24 *Sovereignty n., 3. supreme and independent political authority*

25 What does this mean to you? It means that you are literally just what John proclaimed that God had made you; a king, queen,  
26 czar, monarch, Caesar; but, as it says in *Chisholm v. Georgia*, without subjects. You are, therefore, in charge of your own  
27 life. Free from the oppression of governments and/or other sovereigns.

28 There are really only three ways to lose your God given freedoms and all of them are, of course, lost by breaking the laws of  
29 the God, our Eternal Sovereign, that gave us our sovereignty. They are found within the 13th chapter of Romans. Verse 1  
30 says to be subject to God for there is no power but of God: the powers that he has ordained. So we, as subjects to Christ have  
31 been made kings (Rev. 1:6), ordained sovereigns (Romans 13:1 and see Supreme Court Rulings above) and been endowed  
32 by our Creator with Unalienable rights (Dec. of Ind. and Rom.13:1).

33 1. You can be foolish and freely give them away; trading the dangers of freedom and sovereignty for the security of slavery.  
34 You can, for example, encumber yourself with contracts, like SS-5s and 1040 forms or sign up for government licenses to do  
35 things that are God given and not subject to government interference. Or you could enslave yourself to debt. You can even  
36 forget to put our Heavenly Father and His Son, Jesus Christ first in your life and encumber yourself to some other god, i.e.:  
37 gambling, food, sports, television, sex, work. etc. There shall be no other gods before Him. You cannot serve God and  
38 mammon. Debt is bondage and debt is not just the owing of money. Debt is any encumbrance of your time and/or energy.  
39 God warns us against debt. 'Owe no man anything," Rom. 13:7. This is pretty simple; keep the yoke of freedom and of Christ  
40 upon your shoulders not of debt, bondage and slavery of banks and tyrants nor any man that may currently control our  
41 governments. Matt. 11:29, Gal. 5:1

42 2. You can openly transgress the laws God has given us to keep us from violating the rights of other sovereigns. Thou shalt  
43 not steal, Thou shalt not kill, etc. If you infringe upon another sovereigns God given rights the *Constitution* has set up remedies  
44 to rid the nations aristocracy (that is you and me) of such behavior. The *Constitution* of these united States has set forth the

1 proper way of handling miscreant sovereigns and ridding us, the aristocracy that properly govern ourselves under the laws of  
2 God, of those that will not follow the law of God (Rom.13:10) “to do no ill to his neighbor” in Articles IV, V, VI, VII, of the  
3 *Bill of Rights*.

4 Our Christ inspired Founders had to be very careful how they went about disciplining a fellow Sovereign. Study the  
5 *Declaration of Independence* and see the caution the Founders took in separating from the Sovereign of England and the  
6 colonies. They were faced with determining how to protect righteous Sovereigns from wicked ones without allowing the  
7 government servants too much power. They were more concerned with protecting an individual Sovereign’s God given rights  
8 than with convicting a single criminal because they knew from the Bible and history that a wicked and power hungry  
9 government was more detrimental to freedom than even the most abominable serial killer. Unlimited Sovereigns have,  
10 throughout history, killed hundreds of millions of men, women and children, stolen untold wealth from those who had earned  
11 it, raped, pillaged, injured and in other words became tyrants. Combine all of the unGodly people of history that have  
12 perpetrated their wickedness on others as single individuals or even in small organized groups and we will find that they have  
13 done less of what is called criminal than any one of a multitude of unGodly unlimited Sovereigns. I am sure you can name a  
14 few: Attila the Hun, Herod, Mao, Nebuchadnezzar, Caesar, Stalin, Hitler. Think of the untold misery caused by sovereign  
15 governments and all other crimes pale. What are the crimes of a hundred Dalmers or Jack the Rippers to that of a single  
16 Stalin.

17 The Christ inspired Founding Fathers knew government to be the single greatest threat to freedom so they almost completely  
18 removed government from the determination of guilt or innocence of a Sovereign. Take a look at the protections from  
19 government we have been given in the *Bill of Rights*:

20 In Article IV we find that the law of the land does not trust magistrates, sheriffs nor any other law enforcement agency  
21 directly. Servants of the Sovereigns are not above the aristocracy. An accusing Sovereign must be willing to accuse another  
22 Sovereign; under— “Oath or affirmation”, and by doing so subject themselves to penalties for perjury, and make those  
23 accusations in very specific ways, before a judge (representative of the aristocracy in general) may allow any action against  
24 or removal of any property owned by a Sovereign. There are, therefore, remedies against those Sovereigns that would break  
25 the law of God concerning bearing false witness against their neighbors.

26 In Article V we find that only a large group of twenty or so kings and queens coming together as a Grand Jury, can indict  
27 another Sovereign of a capital or infamous crime. No group of servants, judges, congressmen, presidents, law enforcement  
28 officers, no matter how large can bring a Sovereign to trial for a felony.

29 In Article VI our Christ inspired Founders secured the right of a Sovereign to be tried. after being indicted by a Grand Jury  
30 of Sovereigns, only by other Sovereigns in another jury. That jury of Sovereigns has, according to John Jay, the first Chief  
31 Justice of the U. S. supreme Court “...the right to determine both the law as well as the fact in controversy.” The servant of  
32 the court, the Judge, can, according to law, only advise the jury of Sovereigns what he believes the law to be. The unelected,  
33 impartial, to both the individual Sovereign and the State, jury of kings and queens then decide if the law is Constitutional: if  
34 the law, even if Constitutional, is a Godly law; and lastly if the accused Sovereign broke that Godly law. If even one single  
35 Sovereign on that jury believes that either the law is unGodly, or that the accused Sovereign is not guilty or believes the  
36 servants of the government in any way abused the Sovereign’s rights in obtaining the information to bring to trial; and votes  
37 for acquittal then the government can do nothing to encumber the accused Sovereign’s God given rights.

38 In Article VII our Christ inspired Founders secured the right of Sovereigns to once again have a group of Sovereigns, in jury  
39 form, decide all controversies at common law that exceed \$20.00. Remember this \$20.00 figure is not out of date since this  
40 Congress has the express power given them in Section 8 of the *Constitution* to regulate the Value of money.

41 In four short Articles we find that a sovereign must not be accused lightly or without possible repercussions upon the accuser.  
42 The accuser has something to lose. The accused must be indicted by a group of Sovereigns, not public servants. A single  
43 Sovereign can keep the accused Sovereign unconvicted by voting for acquittal on the law or the facts. The government cannot  
44 condemn a Sovereign nor take his life, liberty or property, without the consent of the accused sovereign. Only other free  
45 Sovereigns in total agreement of both the law, the facts and the crime can do it.

46 By studying the loss of our sovereignty caused by trespasses against the laws of God we can see that the Founding Fathers  
47 went to great lengths to protect our sovereignty and expected us to honor it likewise by honoring God and the God given  
48 rights of other Sovereigns.

1 3. Lastly; we can lose our sovereignty by allowing the government servants to usurp Constitutional authority, stealing the  
2 power rightfully reserved to the People. This is what George Washington, in his *Farewell Address*, said was one way we  
3 would lose our freedom; by usurpation of power by so called government servants. Our Christ inspired Founders once again  
4 tried to protect our sovereignty through the *Constitution* and the *Bill of Rights*. The *Constitution* organized government and  
5 very specifically said what that government could do. They then added the *Bill of Rights* to ensure that the weapons of freedom  
6 would be in the hands of those Sovereigns that were vigilant. Without such vigilance we deserve to be the slaves we have  
7 become. Slaves to the IRS that has usurped authority. A slave, after all, is a human being that is forced, without free choice,  
8 to surrender all or a part of his or her labor or wages to their master. Even chattel slaves have free time and limited movement.  
9 Some chattel slaves have been given great power and authority by their masters. Many black slaves in the southern states ate  
10 better and had better general living conditions than factory workers in the north. The slavemaster may give many permissions  
11 or licenses to do as you wish most of the time and the chains he has forged for you may be light but make no mistake, if your  
12 master forces you to surrender even a penny of your wages without your consent then, you are a slave. Taxes on God given  
13 Unalienable rights are Constitutionally forbidden. Taxes like imposts, duties and excise are not and do not affect your  
14 sovereignty. Has the IRS stolen a part of your kingdom by usurpation? Have you checked into it? Is your freedom of any  
15 importance to you? It was to our Founding Fathers.

16 The first thing our Christ inspired Founders did was to protect all of us, Sovereigns, from the very federal representative  
17 government called upon to enforce the laws of God. No federal law could be written to infringe on the rights of any of the  
18 aristocracy, no matter how few, to practice their beliefs in God; to talk or write openly to other Sovereigns, or others, without  
19 fear of government; representative reprisals; to gather together freely in sovereign groups of their choosing without magistrate  
20 interference; or to complain to the representatives of the aristocracy in general for a redress of grievances.

21 Secondly, the Fathers put the teeth of freedom in our hands. In Article II our Christ inspired Founders secured for us, if we  
22 chose to avail ourselves of it, the ability to protect our kingdoms from individual law breaking Sovereigns, sovereign States  
23 that abrogate or disobey God's laws and any other threat to our God given rights by maintaining Arms. This was done not  
24 only to protect ourselves and our individual kingdoms but because, "...when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing  
25 invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, it is their duty, to throw  
26 off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security.' (Dec. of Ind.) In other words the supreme law of  
27 the land says we have the right and duty to violently overthrow any government that does not protect our rights after we have  
28 availed ourselves of ALL other remedies and they have failed. I repeat: it is the law, our right, and our duty.

29 Article III gave us more security from the general government but also recognized the danger of war to freedom as a nation  
30 of sovereigns. We are a union of Sovereigns and therefore have obligations to protect one another against nations that would  
31 enslave us through force.

32 I have already discussed Articles IV through Article VII so I will continue with Article VIII.

33 In Article VIII we continue to find a distrust of the servants of the People by our Christ inspired Founders. Even after a  
34 Sovereign has been arrested the Founders limited our servants ability to impose bail. Even if a Sovereign is indicted by a  
35 Grand Jury and then after breaking a law of God by trespassing on the rights of another Sovereign is convicted by his  
36 Sovereign peers, the servants (government) of the aristocracy (We the People) cannot take it upon themselves to be cruel.

37 In IX and X the distrust of the very representatives that serve the government our Christ inspired Founders established became  
38 evident. In IX it says just because we have written down a few of our God given rights to secure them it does not mean that  
39 we do not have other God given rights; so stay away from them too.

40 In X it clearly says that if a power is not delegated to the federal representative government of the United States by the  
41 covenant of the *Constitution*, they have no delegated power from the aristocracy and therefore can do nothing in that area. Be  
42 it for good or evil they cannot do it. In other words: If We the People did not give them a license then our servants cannot do  
43 it. Trust in and commitment to God, and distrust of people who claim to want to be servants of the people is the entire  
44 foundation of the *Declaration of Independence*, the *Constitution* and the *Bill of Rights*.

45 Usurpation coupled with ignorance and slothfulness has lead our aristocracy into this slavery. Vigilance, duty and courage  
46 are our path to reestablishing our freedoms. In Proverbs 12:24 God councils us clearly:

47 *'The hand of the diligent shall bear rule: but the slothful shall be under tribute.'*

1 Have you been diligent in your fight for freedom or have you been slothful and in doing so been coerced into paying tribute  
2 to your masters?

3 Many Christians feel they should leave the management of this government to others believing that Christ will personally  
4 bring about His kingdom on this earth so we can just wait for His return. This thinking is not Biblical. Christ calls upon us,  
5 as Christians, to do His work. He did not use His power to spread the Good News directly. He calls upon us, His servants to  
6 do the work. The same is true in working for freedom . We cannot sit idly by and wait for Christ to save us. We must act. Did  
7 Moses bend to the will of the government? Did Joshua bend his knee to the kings that inhabited the lands that were given to  
8 the Israelites by God? Did Peter and John heed the threatenings of the Government when told, in Acts, not to preach of Christ?  
9 Did Paul in Acts, Chapter 23, submit to interrogation by flogging by the legitimate local government or when threatened did  
10 he demand what jurisdiction the government had over him, he being a Roman. We simply demand the same thing Paul asked.  
11 What jurisdiction do you, as a servant of the government, have over me, the master of government and a sovereign. And if  
12 they cannot prove jurisdiction we are not about to concede it to them. Paul did not. Peter did not. John did not. I will not. We  
13 cannot or President Washington’s prophetic warning will find fulfillment when we lose our freedom to usurpation.

14 To those Christians that stay on their knees to any oppressive tyrannical government, especially the oligarchy that has usurped  
15 this government of these united States of America and do not question that claimed jurisdiction and fail to fight for the  
16 restoration of our God given unalienable Rights... I quote Samuel Adams,

17 *If ye love wealth better than liberty, the tranquility of servitude better than the animating contest of*  
18 *freedom, go home from us in peace. We ask not your counsels or your arms. Crouch down and lick the*  
19 *hands which feed you. May your chains set lightly upon you, and may posterity forget that ye were our*  
20 *countrymen.*

21 In closing I will say but this: Choose ye this day whom ye shall serve but for me and my house we shall be diligent concerning  
22 our sovereignty and not pay tribute to usurpers.

23 Long live America’s aristocracy,

24 Christopher Holloman Hansen Presiding Sovereign for  
25 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

### 26 **21.3 To all freedom loving young people**

27 July 28th, in the year of our Lord 1999

28 Here is some information about the Fellowship. Please read it and decide if you are interested in joining. If you are interested  
29 in regaining your liberty I believe that the Fellowship can help. I want to warn you that this is often a difficult battle. Some  
30 people may be offended by the truth. As George Orwell said, “*In an age of universal deceit, telling the truth is a revolutionary*  
31 *act.*” If you are less concerned about what is the right thing to do in defense of liberty than in offending a friend then please  
32 do not join. Benjamin Franklin lost his son in the battle for liberty. Not because his son died but because his son became a  
33 Tory and his enemy. The God inspired Founders of this nation pledged their Lives, Fortunes and Sacred Honour to give us  
34 liberty. If you are not willing to do the same then I offer you the timeless words of Samuel Adams:

35 *If you love wealth better than liberty, the tranquility of servitude better than the animating contest of*  
36 *freedom, go home from us in peace. We ask not your counsels or your arms. Crouch down and lick the*  
37 *hands which feed you. May your chains set lightly upon you, and may posterity forget that you were our*  
38 *countrymen.*

39 The time has come that we either become once again the sons and daughters of liberty or submit to the comfort of slavery.  
40 This is the choice left to us because of the continued wickedness of our leaders.

41 Let us refer to: A Declaration by the Representatives of the United Colonies of North-America, Now Met in Congress at  
42 Philadelphia, Setting Forth the Causes and Necessity of Their Taking Up Arms. In this document Thomas Jefferson, writing  
43 for the Congress, said:

1           *We are reduced to the alternative of chusing an unconditional submission to the tyranny of irritated*  
2           *ministers, or resistance by force. — The latter is our choice. — We have counted the cost of this contest,*  
3           *and find nothing so dreadful as voluntary slavery. — Honour, justice, and humanity, forbid us tamely*  
4           *to surrender that freedom which we received from our gallant ancestors, and which our innocent*  
5           *posterity have a right to receive from us. We cannot endure the infamy and guilt of resigning succeeding*  
6           *generations to that wretchedness which inevitably awaits them, if we basely entail hereditary bondage*  
7           *upon them.*

8           The Social Security System and the Internal Revenue Code and enforcement are basely entailing hereditary bondage upon  
9           your generation. That is why I have fought it for 20 years. I do not as yet support armed conflict as Thomas Jefferson supported  
10          because we have not used all of the other religious and legal means afforded to us by those very Founders. The time has come  
11          to stand up and be counted against this lie.

12           *Either you oppose a lie, or you become a liar. You can kid yourself and say I'm only going along because*  
13           *they have all the guns, but day by day, year by year, your integrity erodes. Finally, you become like the*  
14           *tyrants: just one more liar. — Franklin Sanders*

15          Learn the truth and the truth shall make you free but only if you are strong enough to fight for that truth.

16          As always in the Grace of Christ through Faith made Alive by our Good Works,

17          Christopher Holloman Hansen, Presiding Sovereign

## 18          **21.4 Voluntary Slavery**

19          January 16, in the year of our Lord 1995

20          Written by Christopher Holloman Hansen to his son Joshua Joel Holloman Hansen for his History Class.

21          At the trials held in Nuremberg following WWII a fantastic idea was adopted into the fabric of civilized law. That idea is  
22          this: Government, no matter how entrenched within the minds of the populous; how enriched with power, authority, and self  
23          aggrandizement; how endowed by the majority of the voting public with trust; whether within the military or civil sector,  
24          does not have within its powers the atoning grace to erase the actions and abominations of the individual committed or even  
25          encouraged or commanded under the laws of that government.

26          The judgment of the International Military Tribunal found that defendants were still legally responsible for their actions even  
27          though they were acting under the orders of superior authority stating:

28            *[T]he true test... is not the existence of the order—but whether moral choice [in executing it] was in*  
29            *fact Possible.*

30          Now is a time to remember history and consider what were the moral choices under the iron hand of Hitler and the S.S. and  
31          what were the possible consequences of those “moral choices.”

32          A “moral choice,” is in truth a Higher Law. A law which is given to mankind by, and I quote the Declaration of Independence,  
33          “Nature and of Nature’s God.” A law assumed by all mankind but more especially in these united States, is the law given us  
34          by, “Nature’s God,” that all men are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable rights, that is: Life, Liberty and the  
35          pursuit of Happiness and that there is an eternal difference between right and wrong and that we are personally responsible  
36          for our own actions. Ignorance is not a defense against the behest of this Higher Law but knowledge of this Higher Law more  
37          fully condemns the educated.

38          A German Judge on trial at Nuremberg, received great condemnation not because he knew and enforced the law of the land  
39          but because he followed it when his education, personal knowledge and beliefs clearly told him the laws he enforced were  
40          wrong in the eyes of God. He failed the people of the world when he refused to obey the Higher Law of right and wrong. And  
41          it mattered not what the personal consequences may have been for him. He broke this Eternal and universal law and therefore  
42          was guilty of Crimes against Humanity and was sent to prison.

1 John Marshal and the Supreme Court of these united States proclaimed that the Constitution is the, “supreme law of the land,”  
2 but they were wrong in this. The supreme law of the whole world is that found In the Declaration of Independence: that we  
3 are endowed by our Creator with unalienable rights, i.e. rights that cannot be abridged nor abrogated by any government or  
4 law.

5 When we take this into consideration then we must deem all laws that are in violation of this Highest Law, to be null an void  
6 and without merit or value and that we must not follow them.

7 I would like now to center on just one of these unalienable rights. The right of Liberty. The right to be free. The Constitution  
8 of the United States did not include this right to all people within its borders and so the Grantor of this right, “Nature’s God,”  
9 punished the country for its violation through the Civil War. At first the war was fought over State’s Right and Succession  
10 and the war did not bode well for the North. The tide of this war did not change until after the Emancipation Proclamation.  
11 The flaw within the Constitution was then what the battle was fought over and slavery was abolished. ABOLISHED! And  
12 these united States of America once again thrived.

13 But to think that other men are less than ourselves seems to be a natural flaw within men, whether inborn or learned we seem  
14 to have a tendency to consider men of different color, religion, origin or lessor financial status or education to be less than us  
15 in the eyes of God, and therefore seemingly available for our personal benefit even if it means constraining them by law or  
16 force. The Declaration of Independence corrects this incorrect conception when it states that all men are created equal making  
17 all people born under this covenant to be sovereigns, kings or queens without subjects. Therefore no man has the right, for  
18 any reason, to enslave another. Law, however, must be maintained and if a sovereign breaks a law that deprives another child  
19 of God of any of these God given rights then governments, instituted for the benefits of man, have the right to punish the  
20 lawbreaker.

21 But what if a law, written and enforced by a government, is in direct opposition to the right of all men to have Liberty? Or  
22 even the right of a single sovereign to freely claim their right or rights?

23 Should it be obeyed? Should It be opposed? Are we guilty of Crimes against Humanity if we, because of fear, ignorance or  
24 even collusion, obey and carry out or comply with such a law? The answer is, yes. Yes, because we become traitors to the  
25 very God that gave us those unalienable rights.

26 Here is what a court said about the issue:

27 *“All acts of the legislature apparently contrary to natural rights and justice are, in our law and must*  
28 *be in the nature of things, considered void... We are in conscience bound to disobey.”*  
29 *[Robin vs. Hardaway, 1 Jefferson 109, (Va., 1772)]*

30 William Shakespeare said it eloquently:

31 *When our actions do not, Our fears do make us traitors.*

32 Abraham Lincoln expounded on Shakespeare’s thoughts when he said:

33 *To sin by silence when they should protest makes cowards of men.*

34 When the *Dred Scott* decision was handed down; right minded jurists, regular un-elected citizens, called to sit in judgement,  
35 who understood if only in their hearts, that slavery was wrong, refused to convict those that helped slaves to escape to their  
36 Right of Liberty.

37 It was their duty to do so.

38 It was their duty to negate this unjust law. It was their right under the Law of the *Declaration of Independence*, the Higher-  
39 Law, to help those that broke the unjust and immoral law of slavery and the Supreme Court decision of *Dred Scott* that  
40 supported it.

1 The six Justices that voted in the majority in the *Dred Scott* case were as immoral and contemptible in their decision as any  
2 Nazi collaborator and as accountable to God if not to any Earthly tribunal. Americans paid the price for these Justice's actions  
3 with their dearest blood. The Civil War killed more Americans than any other war in our history.

4 Are we, as Citizens of the United States of America, any better than the people of Germany during Hitler's reign? Are we  
5 any better than those six Justices that allowed Slavery to continue? I will offer the hypothesis that we as a nation, by our  
6 inaction, our complacency and self-inflicted ignorance are more accountable to the people of this world for the loss of life  
7 and liberty than any so called evil empire in history.

8 This is the reason why: Because we have allowed ourselves, through apathy and fear, to become slaves. Not chattel slaves as  
9 was the case before the Civil War, but unknowing slaves to our own government and to the men that control it.

10 *"But I am not a slave," you say. "I am free."*

11 I contend that you are not free! And here are my reasons why:

12 Mayer Amsched Rothchild, a prominent European banker in the eighteenth century said:

13 *Permit me to issue and control the money of the nation and I care not who makes its laws.*

14 Thomas Jefferson knew of this threat and warned us about it when he said:

15 *If the American people ever allow private banks to control the issue of their money, first by inflation  
16 and then by deflation, the banks and corporations that will grow up around them, will deprive the people  
17 of their property until their children will wake up homeless on the continent their fathers conquered.*

18 Do you know who, "issues and controls the money of," this, "nation"? Do we have a homeless problem in America today?

19 The President of the Bank of England in the 1920's, SIR JOSIAH STAMP, said:

20 *Banking was conceived in iniquity, and was born in sin. The Bankers own the Earth. Take it away from  
21 them, but leave them the power to create deposits, and with the flick of the pen, they will create enough  
22 deposits, to buy it back again. However, take it away from them, and all the great fortunes like mine  
23 will disappear, and they ought to disappear, for this would be a happier and better world to live in. But  
24 if you wish to remain the slaves of Bankers, and pay the cost of your own slavery, let them continue to  
25 create deposits.*

26 Pope Pius XI said:

27 *In the first place, then, it is patent that in our days, not wealth alone is accumulated, but immense power  
28 and despotic economic domination are concentrated in the hands of the few, who for the most part are  
29 not the owners but only the trustees and directors of invested funds, which they administer at their own  
30 good pleasure...This domination is most powerfully exercised by those who, because they hold and  
31 control money, also govern credit and determine its allotment, for that reason supplying so to speak,  
32 the life blood of the entire economic body, and grasping in their hands, as it were, the very soul of  
33 production, so that no one can breathe against their will...*

34 Congressman Louis T. McFadden, United States Congressman and former Chairman of the Committee on Banking and  
35 Currency understood this modern form of slavery very well. He said:

36 *Mr. Chairman, we have in this country one of the most corrupt institutions the world has ever known. I  
37 refer to the Federal Reserve Board and the Federal Reserve Banks, hereinafter called the Fed. The Fed  
38 has cheated the Government of the United States and the people of the United States out of enough  
39 money to pay the Nation's debt.... The wealth of these United States and the working capital have been  
40 taken away from them and has either been locked in the vaults of certain banks and the great  
41 corporations or exported to foreign countries for the benefit of foreign customers of these banks and  
42 corporations. So far as the people of the United States are concerned, the cupboard is bare.*

1 The Federal Reserve (Banks) are one of the most corrupt institutions, the world has ever seen. There is not a man, within the  
2 sound of my voice, who does not know that this Nation is run by the International Bankers.

3 L. Tolstoy

4 *Money is a new form of slavery, and distinguishable from the old simply by the fact that it is*  
5 *impersonal—that there is no human relation between master and slave.*

6 Robert Hemphill, a former Credit Manager of the Federal Reserve Bank in Atlanta helps us to understand:

7 *If all the bank loans were paid, no one could have a bank deposit, and there would not be a dollar of*  
8 *coin or currency in circulation. This is a staggering thought. We are completely dependent on the*  
9 *commercial banks. Someone has to borrow every dollar we have in circulation, cash, or credit. If the*  
10 *banks create ample synthetic money we are prosperous; if not, we starve. We are absolutely without a*  
11 *permanent money system. When one gets a complete grasp of the picture, the tragic absurdity of our*  
12 *hopeless situation is almost incredible - but there it is.*

13 James Madison also understood it:

14 *History records that the money changers have used every form of abuse, intrigue, deceit, and violent*  
15 *means possible to maintain their control over governments by controlling money and its issuance.*

16 Even the Bible warned us but we did not heed the very counsel of God:

17 *Proverbs 22:7—The rich rule over the poor, and the borrower is servant to the lender.*

18 *Deut. 28:43&44—The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high; and thou shalt*  
19 *come down very low. He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him: he shall be the head, and*  
20 *thou shalt be the tail.*

21 The Constitution says,

22 *“Congress shall have power... To coin Money, regulate the value thereof.”*

23 No Amendment was ever passed to change this and simple law cannot outweigh nor change the Constitution. But Congress,  
24 in 1913, in an act of treason, gave its law bound obligation and duty, “To coin money, and regulate the value thereof,” to a  
25 private system called the Federal Reserve.

26 The Federal Reserve is neither Federal nor is it a Reserve. The Fed is a foreign owned private bank. That’s right, a foreign  
27 owned bank controls our monetary system and is totally free from the control of Congress to control the money of the nation,  
28 our nation. And so it is that Rothchild’s plan has reached fulfillment within our nation.

29 Did this happen over night and without planning? To even consider that assumption borders on the edge of idiocy. The hero  
30 of the American Socialist movement, President Franklin D. Roosevelt, said:

31 *“In politics, nothing happens by accident. If it happens, it was planned that way.”*

32 And what was the intention of those who planned to take over our money? What would they gain? The answer was given by  
33 London bankers themselves through their agent in the Hazard Circular in July of 1862,

34 *Slavery is likely to be abolished by the war power and all chattel slavery abolished. This I and my*  
35 *European friends are in favor of, for slavery is but the owning of labor and carries with it the care of*  
36 *the laborers, while the European plan, led on by England, is that capital shall control labor by*  
37 *controlling wages. The great debt that the capitalists will see to it is made out of the war, must be used*  
38 *as a means to control the volume of money. To accomplish this the bonds must be used as a banking*  
39 *basis. We are now waiting for the Secretary of the Treasury to make this recommendation to Congress.*

1 *It will not do to allow the greenback, as it is called, to circulate as money any length of time, as we can*  
2 *not control that. But we can control the bonds and through them the bank issues.*

3 Salmon P. Chase, (Lincoln's Secretary to the Treasury) unwittingly helped the European Bankers accomplish their stated  
4 goals by piloting the 1863 banking act in the United States. He never forgave himself, subsequently saying:

5 *My agency, in promoting the passage of the National Bank Act, was the greatest mistake in my life. It*  
6 *has built up a monopoly which affects every interest in the country. It should be repealed, but before*  
7 *that can be accomplished, the people should be arrayed on one side, and the banks on the other, in a*  
8 *contest such as we have never seen before in this country.*

9 These Bankers sought the slavery of all free men and still do today.

10 Horace Greely the man who gave us "Go West Young Man" knew the truth as well. In 1872 he said:

11 *We have stricken the shackles from four million human beings and brought all laborers to a common*  
12 *level, not so much by the elevation of the former slaves as by practically reducing the whole working*  
13 *population, white and black, to a condition of serfdom. While boasting of our noble deeds, we are*  
14 *careful to conceal the ugly fact that by our iniquitous money system we have nationalized a system of*  
15 *oppression which, though more refined, is not less cruel than the old system of chattel slavery.*

16 Horace Greely in effect called the American workers Slaves. Slaves to the bankers as was prophesied in the Bible quotes  
17 above.

18 Abraham Lincoln understood this form of slavery and sought to halt its progress by issuing \$150,000,000 in United States  
19 Notes or greenbacks. Lincoln was assassinated.

20 Were Lincoln's actions a threat to the plan of the bankers to enslave us? The following was taken from the London Times of  
21 the same period,

22 *If that mischievous financial policy, which had its origin in the North American Republic during the*  
23 *late war in that country, should become indurated down to a fixture, then that government will furnish*  
24 *its own money without cost. It will pay off its debts and be without a debt. It will have all the money*  
25 *necessary to carry on its commerce. It will become prosperous beyond precedent in the history of the*  
26 *civilized governments of the world. The brains and the wealth of all countries will go to North America.*  
27 *That government must be destroyed or - it will destroy every monarchy on the globe.*

28 Please remember that the monarchs of the globe, at the time this was written, were effectively controlled by this same problem.  
29 They had allowed the bankers to 'issue and control the money,' and were just the well paid and privileged enforcers of  
30 European slavery.

31 President Wilson said, in 1916, that because he had signed the Federal Reserve Act of 1913 giving power to only a few men  
32 that:

33 *We have come to be one of the worst ruled, one of the most completely controlled and dominated*  
34 *governments in the civilized world. We are no longer a government by free opinion, no longer a*  
35 *government by conviction and the vote of the majority, but a government by the opinion and duress of*  
36 *a small group of dominate men. I have unwittingly betrayed my country.*

37 And with his signature our free government was destroyed, as was declared necessary in the London times only forty years  
38 previous.

39 The officers of the Federal Reserve are this nation's slave owners. A large part of the National debt is owed to these bankers.  
40 We are slaves to this, "Iniquitous money system," but what is the tool that keeps us in line? Who are our direct taskmasters  
41 that force us to pay off the debt created to enslave us? The Nazi's had the Gestapo. USSR had the KGB. So whom would the  
42 bankers use here in America?

1 After the *Constitution* was bypassed and the Federal Reserve System was created its enforcement arm also needed to be  
2 created so in 1913 the Sixteenth Amendment (the Income Tax) was also implemented. This had to be done so the bankers'  
3 plans to create slaves of Americans could be fulfilled. Thomas Jefferson understood the bankers and their plans when he  
4 prophesied of what would occur if we allowed what the bankers have indeed done:

5 *To preserve our independence, we must not let our rulers load us with perpet-ual debt. We must take*  
6 *our choice between economy and liberty, or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debts, we must*  
7 *be taxed in our meat and drink, in our necessities and in our comforts, in our labors and in our*  
8 *amusements.*

9 *If we can prevent the government from wasting the labors of the people under the pretense of caring*  
10 *for them, they will be happy. The same prudence, which in private life would forbid our paying our*  
11 *money for unexplained projects, forbids it in the disposition of public money. We are endeavoring to*  
12 *reduce the government to the practice of rigid economy to avoid burdening the people and arming the*  
13 *magistrate with a patronage of money which might be used to corrupt the principles of our*  
14 *government...*

15 And so it is that the bankers can reach into your pocket and keep Americans in slavery by debt and servitude.

16 Did you ever wonder why the Government wastes so much money on obviously useless and unneeded projects? The reports  
17 of Government waste are so prevalent that news programs question them, Sit Coms ridicule them and comedians make a  
18 living joking about them. Is our Government so stupid that it cannot cut off this wasteful spending?

19 Of course not.

20 Our Government and the bankers that buy our Congress and President and control the bureaucracy must spend more money  
21 than the taxpayers can support in order to keep the debt going and keep us enslaved.

22 "But that can't be true," you say.

23 Ninety percent of President Kennedy's Cabinet were made up of men that openly supported this system. They all belonged  
24 to the Council on Foreign Relations.

25 Warren Christopher was in President Carter's Cabinet.

26 President Clinton promised to bring new faces to Washington. Warren Christopher is in his Cabinet. Warren Christopher is  
27 a ranking member of the Council on Foreign Relations. This is but one instance in an endless procession of C.F.R. cabinet  
28 members.

29 But there is no real difference between Republican or Democratic administrations. The C.F.R. maintains its strangle hold on  
30 our Government within both Parties. The Federal Government has grown sixteen times its 1960 size under both Republican  
31 and Democrat administrations.

32 Why must it continue to grow at such a rate when the need of Government has not even doubled?

33 Because the American worker has been so resilient, so undaunted by challenge that they have continued to succeed financially  
34 against all odds that have been placed in their way and have remained too prosperous.

35 But the inevitable has happened: The weight of the debt, created by our, "Iniquitous money system," controlled by the Federal  
36 Reserve, has overpowered even the American spirit and is slowly dragging us down. Our standard of living is no longer  
37 increasing as in years past. Our children will be lucky to even equal our standard of living and the nation as a whole will  
38 continue its downward spiral.

39 I make you this promise: that under Bill Clinton, the federal government will grow and the debt will not be reduced one cent  
40 while he is in office, nor will it under any Republican president even with the Republicans in control of congress. The reason  
41 I can say this so emphatically is because Bill Clinton and Newt Gingrich are members of the C.F.R..

1 So shout and sing Hail to the Chief when you see him next and realize that he is more than your President, he is one of your  
2 masters.

3 So as we watch our *Declaration of Independence* and *Constitution* trampled under the feet of these bankers what can we as  
4 “Individuals” do?

5 If we are to assume that the Higher Law states that Liberty is an unalienable right granted by God and that no Government  
6 has the right to remove our Liberty by any law, then we are Duty Bound to disobey all law that contributes to the slavery of  
7 America and with our slavery the slavery of the world. If we do not rebel against such so called laws then we are guilty of  
8 “Crimes Against Humanity” and will be viewed by history as either ignorant slaves or co-conspirators, and cowards.

9 Remember what the courts at Nuremberg proclaimed:

10 *[T]he true test... is not the existence of the order—but whether moral choice [in executing it] was in*  
11 *fact Possible.*

12 Do you have the same “moral choice,” to disobey this “order,” of slavery as the defendants at Nuremberg? Of course you do.

13 When the, “moral choice,” was placed before the signers of the *Declaration of Independence* they pledged, “our Lives, our  
14 Fortunes and our sacred Honor.” They were willing to lose everything, to even die in order to overthrow tyranny.

15 “But they were an organized group,” you say.

16 That is not the question. The question before the court at Nuremberg was whether the moral choice existed. It did indeed exist  
17 even though the cost of it to any German that denied it would have most likely have been the loss of life, liberty and fortune.  
18 It was the same choice that faced our Founding Fathers. It is the same choice we face today!

19 Are you willing to make the same kind of commitment to Liberty or are you, guilty of crimes against humanity by inaction.  
20 Remember the Founding Fathers warned us:

21 *Beware of tyrants masquerading as public servants.*

22 Sir Hartley Shawcross, used familiar words of our America’s founders during his closing argument at Nuremberg:

23 *The Charter of this Tribunal,... gives warning for the future— I say, and repeat again, gives warning*  
24 *for the future, to dictators and tyrants masquerading as a State that if, in order to strengthen or further*  
25 *their crimes against the community of nations they debase the sanctity of man in their own countries,*  
26 *they act at their peril, for they affront the International Law of mankind.*

27 In the 1700s, Johann W. von Goethe made today’s problem very clear when he said:

28 *None are more hopelessly enslaved than those who falsely believe they are free.*

29 David Rockefeller said it another way:

30 *Freedom—is the absence of the awareness of restraint.*

31 Thomas Jefferson confirmed it when he said:

32 *If a nation expects to be ignorant and free, it expects what never was and never will be.*

33 The majority of this nation falsely believes they are free because they are unaware of their bondage. Let us pray for and work  
34 toward the day that this nation will end self imposed ignorance and learns the well-documented truth once again and then like  
35 our Founding Fathers pledge life, fortune and honor for the animating contest of freedom?

36 Yours in Faith,

1 Christopher Holloman Hansen for The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

## 2 **21.5 Uncle Oliver**

3 February 5th, in the year of our Lord 1995

4 Dear Cousin Christopher,

5 Greeting and salutations. I have been appraised of your restorationist efforts on behalf of our benighted unwary and seduced  
6 brothers and sisters that are blinded by the craftiness of men and are wallowing as swine in the entanglements of socialism.  
7 Truly, we as a people have forgotten the requirements and responsibility of self-government and have forsaken eternal  
8 vigilance in the care and protection of liberty for the false security of temporary comfort and amusement.

9 I have resurrected for your consideration some award winning letters to the editor that I believe express some salient points  
10 that sovereign Americans may sink their teeth into regarding the eternal struggle with evil.

11 Christopher, the essence of sovereignty is self-government. We need less assertion of so called "RIGHTS" and more focus  
12 on responsibility. Uncle Oliver taught us The Boy Scout Oath and Law. These virtues provide foundation for self-government.

### 13 **Oath**

14 *"On my honor I'll do my best to do my duty to God and my country; to obey the Scout Law; to help  
15 other people at all times; to keep myself physically strong, mentally awake and morally straight."*

### 16 **Law**

17 *"A Scout is trustworthy, loyal, helpful, friendly, courteous, kind, obedient, cheerful, thrifty, brave, clean  
18 and reverent."*

19 No man is self-governing who is controlled by animal appetites such as lust; or controlled by chemical addictions as found  
20 in tobacco, liquor or cocaine. A rhetorical question may be posed to those who may believe freedom can be attained in the  
21 absence of God and morality.

22 How many policemen would it take to impose freedom on an immoral and corrupt citizenry...? The answer is that freedom  
23 cannot be imposed. Only moral and self-governing men and woman can be free and sovereign.

24 Attached are some published letters from Uncle Oliver, our great Boy Scout Leader, some from cousin Dan and a few from  
25 myself, that deal succinctly with the issues of sovereignty and social responsibility. I hope you will find them useful.

26 For God, Family and Country,

27 Ian McGavin

## 28 **21.6 Christ is in Christmas**

29 Editor Reno Gazette Journal:

30 Yes, Denise Moore, there is Christ in CHRISTmas. As we all know, Adam fell that men might be, even so are all made alive  
31 in Christ. Out of the fall, out of chaos or even paganism, Christ rises, in ascendancy. He is master of all and lord of all.  
32 CHRISTmas is a triumph, a victory, a celebration of life, a birthday party for Jesus, if you will. A time, in which the world  
33 celebrates with peace on earth, goodwill to men, love, brotherhood, family, service to others and a spirit of giving. Ah, yes,  
34 there is opposition in all things, and evil is battling to re-focus away from Christ but let us for a minute focus on the positive,  
35 remembering that as we seek first the Kingdom of Christ all things are added upon. Santa becomes jolly old St. Nicholas, the  
36 servant of Christ as an ambassador of love and of giving to little children. Green is the first color of Christmas. The evergreen  
37 tree with its needles pointed heavenward is a symbol of everlasting life and hope, directing man's thoughts to God. The

1 brilliant star on the pinnacle of the evergreen is a heavenly sign of promise. God promised a Savior for the world and the star  
2 is a sign of the fulfillment of that promise. The colored lights shine forth like many glowing heavenly stars.

3 Red is the second color of Christmas. The red ornament is a symbol of Christ's blood which was shed for us. The candy cane  
4 is a shepherd's crook to bring back the sheep strayed from the fold. The tinkling bell is an invitation to return to Christ's fold.  
5 The round holly wreath reminds us of the eternal nature of God's love. It is important that we now celebrate the birth of our  
6 Savior with an eye single to His glory... remembering that all things testify of Christ. May His kingdom come and His will  
7 be done on earth as it is in Heaven, I pray in the Name of Jesus Christ. Amen.

8 Oliver F. Hansen

9 **21.7 Let His Kingdom Come**

10 February 7, in the year of our Lord Jesus Christ 2000

11 Dear Cousin Christopher:

12 The words politics and religion are regarded by many as antithetical, however, truthfully, as the creation of ONE... Political  
13 Religion abounds in unity, harmony and ONENESS. The glorious Declaration declares the self-evident truth that man is a  
14 creation of God with the unalienable Right of Life. The *Preamble of the Constitution*, in the name of We the People ordains  
15 and establishes the *Constitution* to secure the Blessings of Liberty for ourselves and our Posterity. Therefore, Constitutional  
16 unalienable Rights are bestowed upon the yet to be born as a right of inheritance, even prior to conception.

17 This political doctrine of the sanctity of Life is perfectly one with Christian Doctrine. We read in the OLD TESTAMENT  
18 (Jeremiah 1:4 & 5):

19 *Then the word of the Lord came unto me saying, before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and*  
20 *before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, and I ordained thee a prophet unto the*  
21 *nations.*

22 There is revealed the Creator God, Father of Mankind, preparing and empowering His spokesman for a political mission to  
23 the "nations."

24 Ancient Israel rejected the prophets and the Sovereign Lord as recorded in First Samuel (Chapter 8 vs 6 & 7):

25 *But the thing displeased Samuel, when they said, Give us a king to judge us. And Samuel prayed unto*  
26 *the Lord. And the Lord said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto*  
27 *thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them.*

28 Later in history this same Sovereign was rejected again by his people (Mark 15:12 & 13): And Pilate said...:

29 *What will ye then that I shall do unto him whom ye call King of the Jews? And they cried out again,*  
30 *Crucify him.*

31 We truly can now see the vision of the Father of the Revolution, Samuel Adams, who, as the *Declaration of Independence*  
32 was being signed (1776) proclaimed:

33 *We have this day restored the Sovereign to whom all men ought to be obedient. He reigns in heaven*  
34 *and from the rising to setting of the sun, let His Kingdom come.*

35 The evil spirit of lust and murder was manifest by the mob of Jews and the Roman government that sanctioned the destruction  
36 of innocent life. Daily in America, we witness the rejection and re-crucifixion of our Savior as our posterity by millions is  
37 ripped from the wombs and sacrificed on the altars of filthy lucre, convenience, lust and political expediency.

38 Remember the words of King Jesus as recorded in the NEW TESTAMENT (St. Mathew 25:40):

1           *Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these my brethren, ye have*  
2           *done it unto me.*

3 History documents the fate of the nations that rejected their God and King ... they reaped as they had sewn. Thomas Jefferson  
4 expressed my consternation when he stated:

5           *Indeed, I tremble for my country when I reflect that God is just.*

6 The beast is beguiling our nation with complacency in the midst of carnage...men cry peace, peace, but, there is no peace...the  
7 war is raging.

8 Keep hold of the faith, Christ Bearer, hoist the banner of Liberty and wield the sword of Truth... the beast must be destroyed.

9 We are all enlisted till the conflict is over; happy are we, happy are we. Soldiers in the army there's a bright crown in store;  
10 we shall win and wear it by and by.

11           *Blessed is the nation whose God is the Lord.*  
12           *[Psalm 33:12]*

13 Ian McGavin (Warhawk)

## 14 **21.8 Woem to Whoredom**

15 Editor Reno Gazette Journal:

16 You cannot compromise with evil. You can give it no quarter. You must attack it and defeat it or be defeated by it. Legalizing  
17 evil, in the illusion of controlling it, is an act of moral suicide which compromises the sanctity, integrity and purpose of law.  
18 This is a declared nation under God. Prostitute the law to accommodate whoredom and you disease the very fabric of our  
19 civilization and destroy the moral foundation of our republic. Whoredom has infected mankind from the beginning and has  
20 indeed preceded the decline and fall of many nations which in their culpability, ignorance and hedonism allowed vice to  
21 flourish, govern and wreak havoc. The wages of sin is death.

22 Daniel McGavin Hansen

## 23 **21.9 Theory un-American**

24 July 27, 1987

25 Editor Reno Gazette Journal:

26 The theory of evolution is un-American. Contrary to the dogma preached in our government schools, we are not chance  
27 products of slime.

28 The defining documents of our nation declares as self-evident truth that all men are created, endowed by their Creator with  
29 life and liberty. For generations our children were taught that they are noble creations of God.

30 Our Constitution was adopted Sept.17, 1787, "in the year of our Lord." We as a people have de-evolved a long way since  
31 then. Now our children are isolated from their Creator in the government schools and graduate from these institutions ignorant  
32 of their American heritage, the Declaration of Independence, and the Constitution.

33 Creationism as defined by those documents is barred from our schools. The godless theory of evolution is now enshrined by  
34 state propagandists as a pre-eminent monopoly doctrine, not to be subjected to competitive academic freedom by students or  
35 teachers. This preposterous theory is paraded as "fact" in the prostituted name of "sciences" This "fact" is "substantiated" by  
36 myriads of missing links, unexplained jumps and leaps and suppositions which defy rationality and all laws of probability.

1 What has evolved in the wake of such ignorance is a gargantuan socialistic government financed by debt and deception, an  
2 immoral diseased AIDS-infested citizenry, and a slimy mess.

3 This nation was created as a “nation under God.” To deny this fact is to deny our liberty and undermine the very foundation  
4 of our existence.

5 Dan Hansen, Sparks

6 **21.10 Response to Mr. Pickering, an Atheist**

7 Nov. 30, 1987

8 Editor,

9 It is reassuring to read in the nit-pickerings of our resident atheist that he has “realized the American dream.” He can thank  
10 God for that. He may also be surprised to learn that the ‘American dream’ did not evolve. It was created by Christians,  
11 beginning with the Pilgrim’s Mayflower Compact establishing a body politic for the express purpose of worshipping Jesus  
12 Christ. Americans bow no knee to a king, dictator or tyrant because we recognize that man is endowed by his Creator  
13 (Declaration of Independence) with his rights and that Jesus Christ is our Lord (Article VII, U.S. Constitution).

14 It is no accident that avowed atheist Karl Marx declared his intention to “dethrone God.” Remove God from our American  
15 schools and institutions and you destroy the very foundation of our liberty.

16 America is now devolving into the slime of socialism and immorality. God gave us an anchor and a beacon. Letting go of  
17 him, we now wallow in the filth and bondage of pornography, V.D., abortion, AIDS, alcohol, drugs, debt, political corruption,  
18 crushing taxation, international intrigue and dishonor. This is not freedom, Mr. Pickering, this is license.

19 That great Christian, George Washington (whose birthday we no longer celebrate), declared that religion and morality are  
20 indispensable supports of political prosperity.

21 Your rights will be secure, Mr. Pickering, as long as we remain “one nation under God with liberty and justice for all.”

22 That is precisely why we are concerned. So please forgive us when we of necessity disturb the comfort of your ignorance.

23 Daniel Hansen

24 **21.11 Population Control Nonsense**

25 Minority View, By Walter E. Williams

26 Population control idiots might consider Zaire’s meager population density of 39 people per square mile to be ideal while  
27 Hong Kong’s population density of 427,501 people per square mile is problematic. Hong Kong is 6,000 times more crowded  
28 than Zaire. Yet Hong Kong’s per capita income is \$8,260 while Zaire, the world’s poorest country, has a per capita income  
29 of less than \$200.

30 Planet Earth is loaded with room. We could put the world’s entire population into the United States. Doing so would make  
31 our population density 1,531 people per square mile. That’s a far lower population density than what now exists in New York  
32 (11,440), Los Angeles (9,126) and Houston (7,512). The entire U.S. population could move to Texas and each family of four  
33 would enjoy 2.9 acres of land. If the entire world’s population moved to Texas, California, Colorado and Alaska, each family  
34 of four would enjoy nine-tenths of an acre of land.

35 So-called overpopulation problems are really a result of socialistic government practices that reduce the capacity of people  
36 to educate, clothe, house and feed themselves.

37 **21.12 The Carrion of Human Flesh Portrayed**

1 Aug. 6, 1986

2 Editor Reno Gazette Journal:

3 Apologists for pornography are proliferating like venereal diseases. Wallowing like swine in their infected mire, they  
4 amazingly proclaim their filthiness “art and free speech.” They even claim “constitutional rights” to infect themselves and  
5 others.

6 Man cannot seek the freedom of animals and still sustain civilization. Individuals cannot run off into the playboy world of  
7 irresponsibility depicted so enticingly in pornography.

8 Pornography is pleasing to fools because it promises pleasure without responsibility: Pleasure without marriage, without  
9 children, without life. It promises indulgence without consequences such as broken hearts and disease. Pornography  
10 encourages self-indulgence and self-gratification through the use and abuse of others.

11 Love, charity, mercy, kindness, self-restraint and consideration of others—the very foundations of civilization—are trampled  
12 upon by pornography.

13 Men who salivate over the carrion of human flesh portrayed in pornography acquire the appetites and sensibilities of beasts.  
14 Self-debasement, cruelty, child abuse, battered women, broken hearts, broken families and unstable civilization are the  
15 products of pornography.

16 Low-minded fools and profit-motivated deceivers may call this “art,” but garbage by any other name is still garbage - and it  
17 still attracts rats.

18 Ian McGavin, Sparks

### 19 **21.13 Animal Farm**

20 Oct. 7, 1992

21 Editor:

22 For those wallowing in the advocacy of pornography, the following facts may seem irrelevant. After all, concepts of  
23 cleanliness are difficult for a pig to comprehend. Especially sloganeering pigs such as Orwell’s Napoleon of Animal Farm  
24 fame. Napoleon did understand, however, the prostitution of language, i.e. “literature” for porno, “adult” for irresponsible,  
25 “sexually active” for promiscuous, “gay” for depraved, etc. Such words appeal to the bleating sheep mentality of government  
26 school graduates.

27 A perfectly good word on the other hand that stimulates the Pavlovian knee jerks of the sheep is “censorship.”

28 There is nothing intrinsically wrong with censorship. Until the sexual revolution took over the farm in the 50’s censorship of  
29 pornography was common in free America. We humans censored porno for the same reason we censured drunk drivers, drug  
30 pushers, perjurers and those who harm or present a clear and present danger to the health and wellbeing of others.

31 Despite the Gazette Journal’s unfounded assertions that porn does “not pose a threat to our society,” scholarly studies from  
32 the Universities of New Hampshire, Arizona and Utah, by the Michigan State Police Department and by the Canadian  
33 Government, verify a clear correlation between pornography and sexually oriented crimes and violence.

34 Even a liberal sophist should be able to correlate a relationship of over 5 million porno magazines a month advertising deviant  
35 and irresponsible sexual practices, having an impact upon the base behavior of the human animal.

36 I’m all for censorship. It’s time you liberals took a bath.

37 Ian McGavin

## 1 **21.14 Mixing religion with politics**

2 Sept. 21, 1984

3 Editor Reno Gazette Journal:

4 In view of the nationwide hassle about the role of religion in politics, I wish to submit the following wise counsel by President  
5 Calvin Coolidge:

6 *Our government rests upon religion. It is from that source that we derive our reverence for truth and*  
7 *justice, for equality and liberality and for the rights of mankind. Unless the people believe in these*  
8 *principles they cannot believe in our government. There are only two main theories of government in*  
9 *the world. One rests on righteousness and the other on force. One appeals to reason, the other appeals*  
10 *to the sword. One is exemplified in a republic; the other is represented by despotism.*

11 *The government of a country never gets ahead of the religion of a country. There is no way by which*  
12 *we can substitute the authority of law for the virtue of men. Of course we can help to restrain the vicious*  
13 *and furnish a fair degree of security by legislation and police control, but the real reform which society*  
14 *in these days is seeking will come as a result of religious conviction, or they will not come... at all.*  
15 *Peace, justice, charity—these cannot be legislated into being. They are the result of divine grace.*

16 Oliver F. Hansen, Sparks

## 17 **21.15 Horse slaughter decried by fools**

18 Reno Gazette-Journal:

19 Fools decry the slaughter of surplus horses for meat and other byproducts that are used to feed dogs, cats and people and  
20 provide jobs that build our economy.

21 People in India for generations have endured poverty, starvation and the ravages of poverty because they worship cows  
22 instead of eating them.

23 Unfortunately, the Oriental mysticism disguised as environmentalism is being preached in our government schools and forced  
24 on our citizens by tax-eating government schemes that destroy jobs and cause debt.

25 The West has been hard hit by BLM and Forest Service bureaucrats who worship the spotted owl and “wild and free” roaming  
26 horses penned up to recycle hay at taxpayers’ expense.

27 Ranchers, miners, lumberjacks and freedom-loving Americans have been harassed and impoverished.

28 We need to fight this government-sponsored religion and restore limited government under the true and loving God of  
29 America acknowledged in Article 7 of the Constitution of the United States as our Lord.

30 Daniel Hansen, Sparks

## 31 **21.16 Horse Worship**

32 September 1, 1999

33 Editor:

34 In India, cattle worship is common, and here it’s horses, particularly so-called “wild horses.” I have nothing against horses. I  
35 was born and raised on a cattle and horse ranch.

1 However, there are many people who make their living from horses, and it seems to me that this worship of “wild horses” is  
2 quite foolish. I resent the taking of my taxes to take care of these “wild horses.”

3 Let those who worship, care for these “wild horses.” I’m sure if it came from their pockets there would be much less of a  
4 fervor.

5 R.J. Steck, Reno

## 6 **21.17 Ad Nauseum**

7 January 28, 1988

8 Editor Sparks Tribune:

9 From the Darwinian mind in command of the Washoe County School Board has evolved a comprehensive AIDS program  
10 worthy of its origin. Conceived in the slime of human perversion, this program will have our children evolve from innocence  
11 into well-schooled sexual mechanics.

12 As Pavlov’s dog, they will be trained in all the Look and See, Show and Tell, Think and Do programs of the Freudian  
13 academia. According to John F. Murtha, chairman of the Sex Education Advisory Committee, the AIDS program does not  
14 “advocate any particular value system or lifestyle.” That’s correct in a sense, Mr. Murtha, the AIDS program does not  
15 advocate cleanliness, decency, abstinence, marriage, or fidelity, nor does it mention God or the Ten Commandments. It’s just  
16 one big, frank, nine-year-comprehensive discussion of every sexual deviation and perversion known to man.

17 Mr. Murtha further asserts that the sex program is not “void of moral values.” How right he is again. The program has all of  
18 the moral value of dogs in heat and further stimulates the imagination and curiosity of our children with insensitive group  
19 instruction regarding feculent homosexual practices, mutual stimulation, petting, ad nauseum. All of this will be taught by  
20 “value free” instructors who will evidently place a condom over their own value system. Come off your sanctimonious  
21 Darwinian high horse, you “professional educators.” We taxpayers are being raped and plundered to put a shirt and tie and  
22 stamp of the academic on information our children can get at the corner porn rack for a couple of bucks. For their money, the  
23 taxpayers are getting a form of sex education and along with it a dose of educational aids.

24 Ian McGavin

## 25 **21.18 Death Education**

26 February 3, 1989

27 Editor Reno Gazette Journal:

28 Come on. “Will sex education promote immorality as opponents fear? Will it become a ‘how to’ course?” The preposterous  
29 Gazette Journal answer: “One must hope not.”

30 Life and Death education based on hope is not absurd enough. Jim Conkey of the State AIDS Education Task Force declares,  
31 “For now all we can do is give them information... whether the program is working is any one’s guess.”

32 That’s it folks, hope and guess “sex education” for our children. The experimenters had their way with this hope and guess  
33 sex Ed in California for 15 years as a regular part of the government school curriculum.

34 During this period California teen pregnancy tripled and the California abortion rate for teenagers is 64.87% higher than the  
35 national average. Governor Deukmejian just signed a new sex education bill based on traditional values emphasizing  
36 abstinence.

37 The facts are in. Traditional morality works, experimentation flunks.

1 Ian McGavin

2 **21.19 Pledged Allegiance to the Flag**

3 July 4, 1989

4 Dear Editor Reno Gazette Journal:

5 Americans, drunk with excess, have forgotten that freedom isn't free. Freedom isn't license, it isn't perversion, it isn't acting  
6 with blatant disregard for the rights of others.

7 Freedom of Speech is not libel, it's not slander, it's not defamation of character and it's not burning the American Flag.

8 A man can be destroyed financially, politically, morally, and physically with attacks upon his name and reputation. Slander,  
9 ridicule and orchestrated contempt destroy.

10 Forget the sword, kill with the pen. Ideas amid symbols are the greatest weapons... especially when attacking the insipid and  
11 cowardly who have not the moral courage to defend their honor and hence their life and liberty.

12 We have pledged allegiance to the Flag. The Flag is our name, our symbol, our honor. The Flag is one Republic under God.  
13 It is life and liberty. It is the blood of our noble ancestors. It is families and children and purple mountain majesties. It is our  
14 past, present and future.

15 To trample upon our Flag is treason. To sanction this desecration is giving aid and comfort to our enemies. To tolerate this  
16 treason is death to us, and our Republic.

17 Honorable men and women have sacrificed their lives for the Flag. If we don't live for the Flag we seal our own ignoble fate.  
18 Long live the Republic.

19 Daniel M. Hansen

20 **21.20 No Other God Before Me**

21 July 4th, 1999 AD

22 Dear Daniel,

23 I find nothing so offensive as when I hear someone take the name of my Lord and Savior, Jesus Christ, in vain. No foul  
24 language or finger gestures even comes close. The United States Supreme Court and the Founding Fathers have stated that  
25 the United States of America is a Christian Nation. The Ten Commandments are carved on the walls of the Supreme Court.  
26 The Ten Commandments say that we are not to take the name of the God in vain. I have never heard of any reasonable person  
27 say we need a law, punishable as either a misdemeanor or a felony, applied to a person that takes Christ's name in vain. Any  
28 thinking Christian would naturally be opposed to such a law because it would weaken the chains placed upon that dangerous  
29 servant, the federal government, that is constantly seeking and craving more power.

30 Such a law or Constitutional Amendment could be abused. Street corner evangelists could be arrested for crying repentance  
31 to this nation. Ministers could be dragged from their own pulpits for preaching Christ. School children could be arrested for  
32 witnessing to friends. Such a law would be as abused like the commerce clause, misinterpreted like the general welfare clause  
33 or construed and made incomprehensible like the 16th amendment.

34 Instead of strengthening Christianity such a law could be abused to damage or even completely criminalize Christianity.

35 The same is true of any amendment that could in anyway weaken the first amendment. Any flag protection amendment holds  
36 more danger than a fire bug in a fireworks factory. The Constitution was established to keep the federal government out of  
37 our lives. No chink in that armor is wise.

1 I love our flag and have never defaced it. I was trained how to care for it; fold it properly and never let even so much as a  
2 loose thread from its stitching touch the ground. I complain to companies that leave it hanging in the rain or without a spotlight  
3 at night. I also know that you should never give this government more power, no matter how excellent or just the cause may  
4 be. Our current flag is the symbol of this modern nation, not the nation of 1776 with 13 stars or even the nation of 1944 with  
5 48 states. It is not the flag of Iwo Jima or Gettysburg or Bunker Hill. It now has 50 stars and represents a nation that enslaves  
6 our children with the iniquitous Social Security and Internal Revenue systems. It is a nation that refused to impeach an  
7 admitted liar and oath violator. A nation with a criminal monetary system called the Federal Reserve.

8 President Wilson said America had become one of the worst nations in the world and that was in 1916.

9 Our flag represents many things today and not all of them are Mom and apple pie. There may come a day that our flag  
10 becomes representative of something so evil that it needs a good burning to cleanse its very soul. It may be that the best way  
11 to say that is to burn the flag that represents such evil. God cleanses by fire.

12 To protect the flag you intend to deface and vandalize our glorious Constitution and before I would agree to that I would burn  
13 a thousand flags if it even has a small chance to awaken the spirit of truth within you and protect my and my children's  
14 freedom of speech.

15 More harm has been done by people with good intentions than from all the tyrants that ever lived. You can buy a flag Dan  
16 and make it your own property and if anyone tries to burn it you have the God given right to protect it with your life but keep  
17 your good intentions confined to your own property Dan and leave my Constitution alone.

18 Christopher Hansen

## 19 **21.21 My Friend Jefferson**

20 December 17th, 1995

21 Editor Las Vegas Review Journal:

22 The following was written by my fifteen-year-old son, Joshua, as an assignment for his Honors American Literature English  
23 class. He was to write it as a contemporary of Thomas Jefferson. I felt your readers should have the opportunity to read it.

24 *Dear Mr. Jefferson,*

25 *The Declaration of Independence was, to me, your personal masterpiece and one of the greatest pieces*  
26 *of literature ever written. It truly spoke the mind, heart, and soul of every freedom loving patriot in the*  
27 *colonies, and anyone else in the world who would be free. It inspired the hearts of many who were*  
28 *previously unsure or against the revolution. It gave reasons for our revolt, justified our actions, and let*  
29 *everyone know that God was on our side.*

30 *You also gave a definition of Rights "... Life, Liberty, and the Pursuit of Happiness..." and made it clear*  
31 *as to the origin of all Rights "... that they are endowed by their Creator with certain unalienable*  
32 *Rights." You defined what the purpose of government is in the phrase "... That to secure these Rights,*  
33 *Governments are Instituted among men..." and that we always must be watchful of government and to*  
34 *never, in any way, let it infringe upon an individual's Rights. "...That when any Form of Government*  
35 *becomes destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the people to alter or abolish it..." This statement*  
36 *defined another unalienable Right, the Right to change and fight a government that does not protect an*  
37 *Individual's unalienable Rights. "...it is their right, it is their duty, to throw off such Government..."*  
38 *and here you state that Freedom is not only a Right, but a person's duty to maintain.*

39 *My best wishes to Independence my friend. The Continental army marches here soon and I plan to join*  
40 *them in fulfilling the duty of liberty. May we all defend this sacred Right, now in the revolution, and*  
41 *forever. May future generations never forget this War and may they always maintain liberty.*

1                   *Sincerely,*  
2                   *Joshua J. H. Hansen*

3 It is a sad note that Joshua did not learn any of the heart of the above information from the Government School System.  
4 Hopefully we will soon remember the words of the Declaration of Independence and throw off the corrupt NEA anti-God  
5 Humanist dominated schools and start the voucher system so parents can freely choose what their children learn. There may  
6 be a few parents who choose poorly but the majority of parents will make far better decisions and give their children better  
7 curriculums than the planned Ignorance they are currently force fed from the Clark County Schools. This is not an attack on  
8 the teachers. My son has great teachers. It is a denigration of the current administrators, books and system. If the schools  
9 continue to deny Christian children freedom to learn history that includes the influence of God upon and within our history  
10 we will, without doubt, lose all our freedoms to a godless Oligarchy.

11 Sincerely,

12 Christopher H. Hansen

### 13 **21.22 A New Revolution**

14 May 1st, 1995

15 Editor Las Vegas Review Journal:

16 As I listened to President Clinton's touching speech in Oklahoma in honor of the bombing victims the words of Thomas  
17 Jefferson came to mind, "Don't speak to me of the eloquence of politicians, tie them down with the chains of a constitution."  
18 As I saw the tearless Janet Reno in the audience I also remembered the murdered children of Waco, burned alive two years  
19 before to the day by Reno and her unlawfully deployed ATF agents. The Clintons and Reno did not wear mournful ribbons  
20 after Reno murdered those children: Why now? Does law enforcement only cry out with indignation when some of their own  
21 are murdered. The President and our law enforcement branches are sworn to uphold and defend the Constitution but instead  
22 they constantly trample on it. And before you law officers get indignant with what I just said ask yourself when was the last  
23 time you even read the Constitution you are sworn to uphold. I have not yet read it in my NEA controlled school.

24 President Clinton said Justice would prevail. Why not start with firing and then prosecuting Reno. Then dismantle the IRS  
25 whose agents consider all taxpayers guilty until proven innocent. Take away the power of the privately owned Federal Reserve  
26 and return the Constitutional power to print money to our Congress (Art. 1 Sec 8). Stop the Nazi like intimidation of the ATF.  
27 Follow the lead of Nye County and return the 87% of Nevada you hold in violation of Article 1, Section 8.

28 I do not condone what was done in Oklahoma but the pain and misery caused there is like a heavy rain in comparison to the  
29 hurricane like destruction of the abusive Federal Government. And if they had honestly sought to uphold the Constitution  
30 instead of usurping and abusing authority this bombing would never have occurred. Tyranny, after all, is only government  
31 sanctioned terrorism. We must stop the cause of this violence: Federal abuse.

32 The Declaration of Independence and the Revolutionary war came about following the abuse of power by government and if  
33 the President and Congress do not reverse course I believe there will be a new Revolution. Let us just hope that it will not be  
34 associated with such cowardice as was demonstrated in Oklahoma. But since our Government has no honor I suspect neither  
35 will its innocent victims. I pray to the founder of our Constitution, God Almighty and His Son Jesus Christ, that we Americans  
36 can find our way back to freedom through legislation without further violence because our generation deserves to be free:  
37 Free of Bloody Revolution, free of crushing debt, free of the Federal Reserve and free of a One World Tyranny.

38 Joshua Hansen  
39 Silverado High School  
40 Freshman Honors student

### 41 **21.23 Duty**

42 November 7th, 1998

1 Editor Nevada Review Journal:

2 I would like to make a response to Stephanie Jorgenson concerning her letter titled *Totally Clueless* (Oct. 11th). In her letter  
3 she states that obtaining a social security number and paying federal income tax is a “responsibility of every citizen if the  
4 United States of America.” On top of that she states that Joshua Hansen should not be allowed to vote because he is “clueless.”

5 I believe it was Thomas Jefferson who once stated that: “Anyone who believes a nation can be ignorant and be free, believes  
6 something that cannot be.” Frankly I am appalled by Miss Jorgenson’s demonstration of ignorance in her letter. A  
7 responsibility is the fulfillment of a duty and so I have one thing to ask you Miss Jorgenson, where in all of State and Federal  
8 law or writings can we find what exactly what our duty is as a Citizen of the United States of America? In the *Declaration of*  
9 *Independence* Thomas Jefferson states: “But when a long train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same object  
10 evinces a design to reduce them under absolute Despotism, it is their right, **it is their duty, to throw off such Government,**  
11 and to provide new Guards for their future security.” According to Jefferson, who was also a tax rebel I might add, the only  
12 duty we have as Americans is to safeguard freedom and bring down any government that dares to take it away from us. There  
13 are two ways to accomplish this, the first is the peaceful means of voting, however when that God given right has been  
14 stripped from us, the founders gave us another method of “voicing our opinion” and it is called the “right to keep and bear  
15 arms.”

16 I have no idea where you get the idea that Social Security or Federal income tax is an American duty. In fact legally I see it  
17 as just the opposite. According to probably the single most quoted and most precedent setting case in American History,  
18 *Marbury v. Madison* it was declared that “All laws which are repugnant to the *Constitution* are null and void.” Now let me  
19 ask Miss Jorgenson, where in the *Constitution* is Social Security mentioned? According to the Privacy Act of 1974 it states  
20 “It shall be unlawful for any Federal, State or local government agency to deny any individual any right, benefit, or privilege  
21 provided by law because of such individual’s refusal to disclose his social security number.” And although the 16th  
22 amendment mentions income tax no where do I see that Article I, Section 9, clause 4 states that “No Capitation, or other  
23 direct, Tax shall be laid...” I see that we have a boy of 18 who has done some actual study and has some issues he wants  
24 voiced to the government but people like you, who have just as much right to disagree, think that only your voice in  
25 government should be heard. I don’t care if you are a bright red communist or a black flag toting anarchist, everyone in this  
26 country has the God Given Right to change this government peacefully. Your duty as an American is to protect the freedom  
27 of all Americans and, according to Jefferson, you need to study (you know, maybe read the *Constitution* and the *Declaration*  
28 *of Independence* some time). I can see by your article that it is not I, Joshua Joel Holloman Hansen, who am clueless, it is  
29 you Miss Jorgenson. However, I am still glad they allow you to vote.

30 Joshua Joel Holloman Hansen

### 31 21.24 To All Those Americans Who Love Freedom

32 March 27, in the year of our Lord 1999

33 Many people have said that we of the Christian Fellowship are just trying to hide behind the Free exercise clause of the First  
34 Amendment to avoid paying taxes or to make it more difficult to collect those taxes. We of The First Christian Fellowship of  
35 Eternal Sovereignty take the opposite view and that is that the Federal government has attempted to steal from us the exercise  
36 of our religion by imposing taxes in a manner and with rules and regulations that directly violate the teachings and warnings  
37 of the Bible, which is the very foundation of the *United States Constitution*; the common law and the instructions and  
38 teachings of the founders of the United States of America.

39 Alexander Hamilton wrote in The Federalist, No. 79.

40 *In the general course of human nature, A POWER OVER A MAN’S SUBSISTENCE AMOUNTS TO A*  
41 *POWER OVER HIS WILL. (Emphasis by Hamilton)*

42 If you have power over a man’s will then you have the power over his actions if not his beliefs. And what is the Exercise of  
43 one’s religion if not his actions in that religion. Webster’s 1828 Dictionary defines Exercise:

44 2. Practice; performance; as the exercise of religion; and 10. Act of divine worship.

1 Mr. Chief Justice Marshall in *M’Culloch v. Maryland*, said that the power to tax is the power to destroy.

2 In *Pacific Ins. Co. v. Soule*, 7 Wall. 433, 19 L.Ed. 95, referring to the unlimited nature of the power of taxation conferred  
3 upon Congress, it was observed, “With these exceptions, the exercise of the power is, in all respects, unfettered.”

4 The exceptions mentioned in the case did not include the limitations set forth by the First Amendment because they did not  
5 apply to the case but remember that the *Bill of Rights* were added specifically to limit the federal government and that  
6 limitations extend without question to the powers of taxation since Congress was allowed to make “no law” that would  
7 prohibit the free exercise of religion. All taxes are enforced by law.

8 But what was the meaning of “will” in Hamilton’s generation? (It is interesting to note who Webster quoted as examples of  
9 the use of the word “will”).

10 **WEBSTER’S 1828 DICTIONARY:**

11 *WILL, noun 1. That faculty of the mind by which we determine either to do or forbear an action; the*  
12 *faculty which is exercised in deciding, among two or more objects, which we shall embrace or pursue.*  
13 *The will is directed or influenced by the judgment. The understanding or reason compares different*  
14 *objects, which operate as motives; the judgment determines which is preferable, and the will decides*  
15 *which to pursue. In other words, we reason with respect to the value or importance of things; we then*  
16 *judge which is to be preferred; and we will to take the most valuable. These are but different operations*  
17 *of the mind, soul, or intellectual part of man. Great disputes have existed respecting the freedom of the*  
18 *will.*

19 *Will is often quite a different thing from desire.*

20 *A power over a man’s subsistence, amounts to a power over his will.*

21 *Federalist, Hamilton.*

22 *2. Choice; determination. It is my will to prosecute the trespasser.*

23 *3. Choice; discretion; pleasure.*

24 *Go, then, the guilty at thy will chastise.*

25 *Pope.*

26 *4. Command; direction.*

27 *Our prayers should be according to the will of God.*

28 *Law.*

29 *5. Disposition; inclination; desire. “What is your will, Sir?” In this phrase, the word may also signify*  
30 *determination, especially when addressed to a superior.*

31 *6. Power; arbitrary disposal.*

32 *Deliver me not over to the will of my enemies. Psalm 27.*

33 *7. Divine determination; moral purpose or counsel.*

34 *Thy will be done.*

35 *Lord’s Prayer.*

36 *WILL, verb transitive [Saxon willan; Gothic wilyan; Dutch willen; German wollen; Swedish vilja;*  
37 *Danish ville; Latin volo, velle; Greek; French vouloir; Italian volere. The sense is to set, or to set*  
38 *forward, to stretch forward. The sense is well expressed by the Latin propono.]*

39 *1. To determine; to decide in the mind that something shall be done or forborne; implying power to*  
40 *carry the purpose into effect. In this manner God wills whatever comes to pass. So in the style of princes;*  
41 *“we will that execution be done.”*

42 *A man that sits still is said to be at liberty, because he can walk if he wills it. Locke.*

43 Our will is our thoughts, our actions, our freedom of choice. Without it we are slaves and must follow the will of our master.

44 Our government has systematically removed us from a God fearing freedom-loving republic to a Satanic socialistic nation of  
45 international and hereditary tax slaves. This has been accomplished by slowly increasing taxes coupling them with benefits

1 that make people believe they must have government benefits or they will suffer. In doing so they have made their posterity  
2 slaves to the debt they created by accepting those benefits.

3 Our Founding Fathers said this concerning hereditary bondage:

4 *Honour, justice, and humanity, forbid us tamely to surrender that freedom which we received from our*  
5 *gallant ancestors, and which our innocent posterity have a right to receive from us. We cannot endure*  
6 *the infamy and guilt of resigning succeeding generations to that wretchedness which inevitably awaits*  
7 *them, if we basely entail hereditary bondage upon them.*

8 Our modern government has embraced hereditary bondage and they call it the Social Security System. They say it is a  
9 voluntary system and then convince you that it is not. They say there is a Social Security Trust Fund but it is not listed in the  
10 U.S. Treasury Department list of trust funds. They promised us that the Social Security Number would never be used as a  
11 general numerical identifier but it has become just that and it is believed by many to be the Prophesied numerical identifier,  
12 the infamous Mark of Beast. We of the Fellowship believe it is the Mark of the Beast. This system is not authorized by the  
13 Constitution. This system has created hereditary bondage based upon a lie. Satan is the father of lies.

14 To voluntarily accept or keep the Social Security Number; to be forced to pay into such a system; to have withholding taxes  
15 taken from our wages before we can render the firstfruits of our wages unto God; is to force us to violate our rights of free  
16 exercise of our religion.

17 To force us to testify against ourselves by signing forms that we know are false. To take our property without due process  
18 and/or a Seventh Amendment jury trial. To be denied the safeguards of the Fourth, Fifth, and Sixth Amendments. To be  
19 restricted in courts from telling the whole truth after swearing before God that we will do so. All these combine to create a  
20 power over a man's will by establishing a power over that man's sustenance. This abuse of the constitutional power to tax  
21 literally destroys the man's ability to worship according to the dictates of his conscience and therefore becomes  
22 unconstitutional by the restrictions placed upon the Congress by the First Amendment and a violation of law by the agencies  
23 that violate the restrictions defined in the Religious Freedom Restoration Act of 1993.

24 Christ preached the Gospel of Liberty in the Testaments of His Divinity. Our Founding Fathers established a government  
25 based on those principles. Christianity does not flourish in a socialist society. Satan is the father of socialism. Satan is Christ's  
26 enemy. We cannot willingly accept Satan's system and accompanying number and in our Republican form of limited  
27 government and even our current power abrogating government does not have the legal authority to take away our free will  
28 even if the majority falsely believes it is for the benefit of the political body as a whole.

29 Thomas Jefferson in 1775 said,

30 *"We have counted the cost of this contest, and find nothing so dreadful as voluntary slavery."*

31 We of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty embrace that philosophy as an integral part of our religious  
32 beliefs.

33 The question before the American people is this: Will we be able to practice our beliefs? Or will we be forced through the  
34 government's power to destroy, its power over the sustenance of man, to control our will and deny us our right to worship  
35 Christ?

36 To the second we shout, "Forbid it all mighty God."

37 We submit this to America in the name of our Lord, Jesus Christ, Amen

38 Christopher Holloman Hansen, Presiding Sovereign

### 39 **21.25 In the Year of Our Lord?**

40 by Joel F. Hansen

1 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty recognizes Jesus Christ as our Lord and this has been the focus of some  
2 discussion as to whether or not that is a misleading statement.

3 This debate caused me to embark on some research on the subject of calendar systems around the world and through the  
4 centuries. I was surprised to find out that, if I had been born in China, instead of being born in the year of our Lord 1944, I  
5 would have been born in the year of the Monkey, since the Chinese calendar is based upon a revolving cycle of 12 years in  
6 which the various years are named after pigs, tigers, rats, monkeys, and various other animals, and that I had the luck to be  
7 born a monkey. How inspiring.

8 A review of other calendars around the world shows that most, if not all of them, are religiously based. For instance, the  
9 Islamic calendar is reckoned from Al) 622, the day after the Hegira or flight of Mohammed from Mecca to Medina. So, I  
10 could have been born in the year of Mohammed 1364. The Aztec calendar, in use when the European Christians landed in  
11 Mexico, is a solar calendar derived from the Mayan system of 400 BC. In the center is the head of the sun god; around it, in  
12 concentric circles, is the history of the world according to Aztec mythology. So I could have been born in the year of the sun  
13 god 2344, instead of being a monkey. That gave me a lot of comfort.

14 There is the Jewish calendar, which is based. on the starting point of Jewish chronology, variously given as 4004 BC and  
15 3761 BC, the date of the creation of the world as described in the Old Testament. The years in that calendar are designed  
16 A.M, which stands for *anno mundi* (the year of the world) and BCE (before the common era, as a replacement for BC). So I  
17 could have traced my birth back to the time of the creation of the earth, as set forth in the Bible, which was getting a little  
18 closer to what I wanted for the year of my birth.

19 By contrast, the Gregorian calendar, which is the one the Founders were using, was adopted all over “Christendom” (a term  
20 now lost in our politically correct newspeak) as a result of a decree by Pope Gregory XIII. It was first adopted on the continent  
21 (of Europe) and later, in 1752, was made the official calendar of England, and it remains to this day the official calendar of  
22 the United States. The Gregorian calendar is a Christian calendar, because it uses the birth of Jesus Christ as the starting date.  
23 Dates of the Christian era are designated AD (Latin *anno domini*, “in the year of our Lord”) and BC (before Christ), thus  
24 making the birth of our Lord as the center point of all human history. The official Christian church calendar is a table  
25 containing holy days, saints’ days, and festivals of’ the Church, with the dates of the civil calendar on which they occur.  
26 These include the fixed feasts, such as Christmas, and the movable feasts, which depend on the date of Easter. It was this  
27 calendar, the Christian calendar, to which the Founders referred when giving the date of their inspired creation, the U.S.  
28 *Constitution*.

29 Some reply, that is all fine and good, but the Founders were egocentric white males who cared nothing for these other  
30 calendars, were totally immersed in their own little American world, and would just have used “in the year of our Lord” as a  
31 matter of common practice, without thinking more about it, and certainly they weren’t trying to make any statement. But  
32 what the above discussion shows is that *a civilization’s calendar is reflective of its values, its history, its beliefs, and its*  
33 *religion*. Western Europe calculates its time from the birth of Christ because it was a Christian civilization. The Founders  
34 knew all of this. They were profound students of history. Their writings show an acquaintance with the philosophies Of  
35 government throughout history and around the world. They knew they were Christians, and they knew that the nation they  
36 were building was founded upon Christian, Biblical principles. A close examination of the historical record will reveal that  
37 they put the words “in the Year of our Lord” into the *U.S. Constitution* knowingly.

38 The relevant paragraph in Article VII states:

39 *Done in Convention by the Unanimous Consent of the States present the Seventieth Day of September*  
40 *in the Year of our Lord one thousand seven hundred and Eighty seven and of the Independence of the*  
41 *United States of America the twelfth. IN WITNESS whereof We have here- unto subscribed our Names...*

42 These men were subscribing their names to a document, which was later described by Gladstone as “the greatest document  
43 ever struck off at a given time by the brain and purpose of man.” They knew it was profoundly important. They knew it would  
44 govern a vast land of millions of people, and hoped it would do so for a long time. They had debated, sweat blood over,  
45 edited, re-edited, compromised, and recompromised, hammered and pounded every word, sentence, paragraph, section, and  
46 article with every ounce of intelligence and inspiration that the entire body collectively possessed. These were the most  
47 dedicated patriots, the wisest leaders, the greatest minds, and the most fervent patriots America had produced, men raised up  
48 by the hand of God to accomplish this marvelous miracle. And now they had finished their work, and were proudly

1 subscribing their names. They not only told the date from the birth of Christ, they told the date from the birth of their nation.  
2 They didn't just put down the numbers "1787" or even "1787 AD". No, they spelled it out in meticulous detail, and made  
3 sure they said that this document, one of the most important and profound in all of human history, was properly related to the  
4 God that they worshipped by declaring that it was done "in the Year of our Lord". Did they. do this merely by accident? It  
5 hardly seems possible.

6 For comparison, it. is instructive to look at another revolution, which was occurring about this same time in Europe, the  
7 infamous French revolution. While the rallying cry of Americans had been, No King but King Jesus“, the rallying cry of the  
8 French Revolution, ”Liberty, Equality, Fraternity“, did not mention the name of Deity. And it is little wonder. The French  
9 revolution was an anti-Christian revolution. Its leaders were either Deists (God wound up the universe like a great clock and  
10 then forgot about us) or they were avowed atheists. Their founding document, their equivalent of our *Declaration of*  
11 *Independence* and *Constitution* rolled into one, was written by Maximilien Robespierre, a fanatical devotee of Jean Jacques  
12 Rousseau, a man whose ideas formed the basis for the philosophies of modern socialist tyrants and philosophers such as  
13 Adolf Hitler and Karl Marx. When Robespierre took control of the French government, he proclaimed as the official religion  
14 ”The Cult of the Supreme Being“ which was based on Rousseau’s theory of Deism. In Paris, all churches were closed and  
15 the radicals began actively to sponsor the revolutionary religion known as the ”Cult of Reason.”

16 Is it any wonder, then, that the date of the Declaration of the Rights of Man (Declaration Droits de L’Homme) has, appearing  
17 prominently printed in its title, the date, listed as simply “1792.” There is no AD, there is no “in the year of our Lord,” and  
18 no reference to Jesus Christ can be found anywhere in the document. This is not surprising in the least, when we realize that  
19 in October of 1793 the Jacobin government abolished the traditional Christian calendar and replaced it with the “Republican”  
20 calendar (seems fitting, doesn’t it?), which substituted for the traditional dating system such dates as the “Ninth Thermidor”.  
21 It was this Deistic, atheistic, anti-Christian, even paganistic government which instituted the infamous “Reign of Terror” in  
22 which thousands of innocent people were guillotined. In Paris alone, 2639 people were beheaded. This revolutionary  
23 government ended with the guillotining of Robespierre himself. The chaos which resulted ended in the ascendance of  
24 Napoleon Bonaparte as the dictator of France.

25 Why did our Founding Fathers not sponsor a reign of terror? Why, in their *Declaration of Independence*, did they say that  
26 men were “endowed by their Creator” with certain unalienable rights emblazoned in the glorious *Bill of Rights*? And why did  
27 they enshrine the right to worship God freely as the first of these unalienable rights emblazoned in the glorious *Bill of Rights*?  
28 And why did they, unlike Robespierre, state in no uncertain terms that their greatest work, the *Constitution of the United*  
29 *States of America*, was created “in the Year of our Lord” one thousand seven hundred and Eighty seven...?

30 The answer of course is that the American revolution was a Christian revolution, whose soldiers’ battle cry was “No King  
31 but King Jesus!” Although the secular historians have tried to delete this fact from our history, it is there for anyone to see  
32 who will study the historical record. George Washington issued the following order during the War for Independence: “The  
33 General hopes and trusts that every officer and man, will endeavor so to live, and act, as becomes a Christian Soldier defending  
34 the dearest Rights and Liberties of his country.” John Adams declared, “The Christian religion is, above all the Religions that  
35 ever prevailed or existed in ancient or modern times, the religion of Wisdom, Virtue, Equity, and Humanity.” In 1785, James  
36 Madison, later to become the Father of the Constitution, rose to speak against a bill in the Virginia legislature, declaring that  
37 he was opposed to it because “the policy of the bill is adverse to the diffusion of the light of Christianity.” And Benjamin  
38 Franklin (sometimes accused of being a Deist) proclaimed: “Whoever shall introduce into public affairs the principles of  
39 primitive Christianity will change the face of the world.”

40 And where are we now? Our children now take “Spring Break” instead of Easter Vacation, and they are off for a two-week  
41 “Winter Break” instead of Christmas vacation. The secularization and paganization of our calendar goes hand in hand with  
42 the secularization of every element of our society, from the removal of the Ten Commandments from our classrooms to the  
43 outlawing of Nativity scenes from public parks, to the decrees that prayers and Bibles are to be removed from our classrooms  
44 and replaced with sex education and condoms.

45 The calendar is not exempt recently a judge in Florida ordered that the letters AD were not to be written on any date of any  
46 document filed in his court, because some people appearing before him might not believe that this is the “**year of the Lord.**”  
47 Notice how he put that: The **year of the Lord**, not the **year of our Lord**. That is no more a mistake than is the fact that the  
48 founders stated it properly as the **Year of our Lord**.

1 Yes, Article VII of the *U.S. Constitution* does acknowledge Jesus Christ as the Lord of this Land, and it acknowledges Him  
2 as “OUR Lord”. Well, who is the “our” referred to? It can be none other than those referred to in the preamble, which states:  
3 “**We the people of the United States**, in order to form a more perfect union.. .do ordain and establish this *Constitution for*  
4 *the United States of America.*” In other words, Jesus Christ is the Lord of the people of the United States, by the very words  
5 of the *Constitution* itself!

6 If we Sovereign Americans don’t fight to maintain Jesus Christ as “Our Lord”, as the Lord of this Land, who will? If we  
7 don’t acknowledge that the Founders put His name in the *Constitution* on purpose? who will? And if we cave in to the  
8 onslaught of the pagans and secularists against all of our Christian institutions, including our calendar, who won’t?

9 The language in our Preamble is precisely on point. “The Founders of Our Nation stated that the United States Constitution  
10 was ‘Done in Convention by the Unanimous Consent of the States present the Seventeenth day of September in the year of  
11 our Lord one thousand seven hundred and Eighty seven. thus acknowledging Jesus Christ as the Lord of ”We the People of  
12 the United States" and as the God of this land.

13 I hope and fervently pray that we can maintain the memory of freedom in the hearts Of the people of this country, that they  
14 may know that “where the Spirit of Christ is, there is liberty”, and that we the Sovereign Independent Americans, may ever  
15 hold aloft the torch of liberty, which is enlightened from above by the light of Christ. May God bless our land forever, and  
16 may His Son ever be Our God and Our Redeemer.

### 17 **21.26 To Swear or Not to Swear that is the Question**

18 April 15, 1999

19 Dear Karl,

20 Before I quote any of the first testament of Christ, more commonly known as the Old Testament, I will quote Christ in the  
21 second or New Testament to Him.

22 *Matt. 5:17-19 Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy,*  
23 *but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise*  
24 *pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments,*  
25 *and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do*  
26 *and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.*

27 Also consider:

28 *Heb. 13:8, 9 Jesus Christ the same yesterday, and to day, and for ever. Be not carried about with*  
29 *divers and strange doctrines. For it is a good thing that the heart be established with grace; not with*  
30 *meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.*

31 And if you refuse to swear now you will when you go before the judgement bar of God.

32 *Isa. 45:23 I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not*  
33 *return, That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear.*

34 The answer to your question concerning Matt. 5:33-37:

35 *Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but*  
36 *shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven; for it*  
37 *is God’s throne: Nor by the earth; for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem; for it is the city of the*  
38 *great King. Neither shalt thou swear by thy head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black.*  
39 *But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil.*

40 It does not tell us not to swear in God’s name and for, what I believe are good reasons.

1 *Deut. 6:13 Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God, and serve him, **and shalt swear by his name.***

2 *Deut. 10:20 Thou shalt fear the LORD thy God; him shalt thou serve, and to him shalt thou cleave, **and***  
3 ***swear by his name.***

4 Pretty plain! We are, however, commanded not to swear by false gods:

5 *Josh. 23:7 That ye come not among these nations, these that remain among you; neither make mention*  
6 *of the name of their gods, **nor cause to swear by them**, neither serve them, nor bow yourselves unto*  
7 *them:*

8 Nor are we to swear falsely:

9 *Zech. 8:17 And let none of you imagine evil in your hearts against his neighbour; and **love no false***  
10 ***oath: for all these are things that I hate, saith the LORD.***

11 But swearing happened a lot...

12 *Josh. 9:19 But all the princes said unto all the congregation, **We have sworn unto them by the LORD***  
13 ***God of Israel: now therefore we may not touch them.***

14 And they were not condemned for it...

15 *1 Kgs. 8:31 If any man trespass against his neighbour, and an oath be laid upon him to cause him to*  
16 *swear, and the oath come before thine altar in this house:*

17 It was common place and proper and not a sin at all. It was even done in the House of the Lord.

18 *II Kgs. 11:4 And the seventh year Jehoiada sent and fetched the rulers over hundreds, with the captains*  
19 *and the guard, and brought them to him into the house of the LORD, and made a covenant with them,*  
20 ***and took an oath of them in the house of the LORD, and shewed them the king's son.***

21 God did it with Isaac also.

22 *1 Chr. 16:16 Even of the covenant which he made with Abraham, and of his oath unto Isaac;*

23 And the Lord blessed them for it.

24 *II Chr. 15:14, 15 And they **sware unto the LORD** with a loud voice, and with shouting, and with*  
25 *trumpets, and with cornets. And all Judah rejoiced at the oath: for they had sworn with all their heart,*  
26 *and sought him with their whole desire; and he was found of them: **and the LORD gave them rest***  
27 ***round about.***

28 And the priests approved of it.

29 *Neh. 5:12 Then said they, We will restore them, and will require nothing of them; so will we do as thou*  
30 *sayest. Then I called the **priests, and took an oath of them**, that they should do according to this*  
31 *promise.*

32 *1 Sam. 24:21,22 **Swear now therefore unto me by the LORD**, that thou wilt not cut off my seed after*  
33 *me, and that thou wilt not destroy my name out of my father's house. **And David sware** unto Saul. And*  
34 *Saul went home; but David and his men gat them up unto the hold.*

35 And I do not want this nation destroyed so I will swear by His name.

36 *Jer. 12:15-17 And it shall come to pass, after that I have plucked them out I will return, and have*  
37 *compassion on them, this is speaking of our day and will bring them again, every man to his heritage,*

1 *and every man to his land. And it shall come to pass, if they will diligently learn the ways of my people,*  
2 *to swear by my name, The LORD liveth; as they taught my people to swear by Baal; then shall they be*  
3 *built in the midst of my people. **But if they will not obey, I will utterly pluck up and destroy that nation,***  
4 *saith the LORD.*

5 Also:

6 *Lev. 19:12 And ye shall not swear by my name falsely, neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God:*  
7 *I am the LORD.*

8 Notice it does not say we cannot or must swear by His name but that we cannot swear by His name falsely.

9 Why in God's name?

10 *Heb. 6:13 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could swear by **no greater**, he sware*  
11 *by himself,*

12 *Gen. 26:3 Sojourn in this land, and I will be with thee, and will bless thee; for unto thee, and unto thy*  
13 *seed, I will give all these countries, and I will perform the oath which I sware unto Abraham thy father;*

14 *Acts 2:30 **Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him**, that of*  
15 *the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne;*

16 *Heb. 6:13-20 For when God made promise to Abraham, because he could **swear** by no greater, **he***  
17 ***sware by himself**, Saying, Surely blessing I will bless thee, and multiplying I will multiply thee. And so,*  
18 *after he had patiently endured, he obtained the promise. For men verily **swear by the greater**: and an*  
19 ***oath for confirmation** is to them an end of all strife. Wherein God, willing more abundantly to shew*  
20 *unto the heirs of promise the immutability of his counsel, confirmed it by an oath: That by two immutable*  
21 *things, in which it **was impossible for God to lie**, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for*  
22 *refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us: Which hope we have as an anchor of the soul, both sure*  
23 *and stedfast, and which entereth into that within the veil; Whither the forerunner is for us entered, even*  
24 *Jesus, made an high priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.*

25 I figure that if we are to be like God and he swore an oath by his own name then we can also for God cannot sin and if  
26 swearing an oath in His name is sinning God sinned and is no longer God.

27 Why without oaths we would not even have Christ.

28 *Heb. 7:28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; **but the word of the oath**, which*  
29 *was since the law, **maketh the Son**, who is consecrated for evermore.*

30 *Gen. 24:3 And I will make thee swear by the LORD, the God of heaven, and the God of the earth, that*  
31 *thou shalt not take a wife unto my son of the daughters of the Canaanites, among whom I dwell:*

32 Abraham was a Prophet of God and talked with God and understood by whom one should swear.

33 And swearing was required by the prophets of God.

34 *Ezra 10:5 Then arose Ezra, **and made the chief priests, the Levites, and all Israel, to swear** that they should*  
35 *do according to this word. **And they sware.***

36 *Num. 30:1,2 And Moses spake unto the heads of the tribes concerning the children of Israel, saying,*  
37 ***This is the thing which the LORD hath commanded.** If a man vow a vow **unto the LORD**, or **swear***  
38 ***an oath** to bind his soul with a bond; he shall not break his word, he shall do according to all that*  
39 *proceedeth out of his mouth.*

40 In numbers we are even led to believe that those will who will not swear are in the ranks of evil.

1 *Eccl. 9:2 All things come alike to all: there is one event to the righteous, and to the wicked; to the good*  
2 *and to the clean, and to the unclean; to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not: as is the*  
3 *good, so is the sinner; and he that sweareth, as he that feareth an oath.*

4 *James 5:12 But above all things, my brethren, swear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither*  
5 *by any other oath: but let your yea be yea; and your nay, nay; lest ye fall into condemnation.*

6 I don't fully understand what it means not to swear when God Himself does so. And I do not understand what it means to let  
7 my communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; because more than these cometh of evil. If the apostles followed this counsel then  
8 their writings would have been pretty short. Why did Christ say more than Yeas and Nays. Were His teachings of evil. I  
9 believe that this and the other verse in Matthew are mistranslated or have more explanation that was not included. The Bible  
10 is not perfect and has many missing books and letters that the letters themselves say we need for our salvation so if the Bible  
11 has two opposing laws. I will look at the history of God's people with a broader view than one scripture or a single quote that  
12 is the size of a gnat and give more weight to those scriptures that have the weight more like a camel.

13 *Jer. 12:10 Many pastors have destroyed my vineyard, they have trodden my portion under foot, they*  
14 *have made my pleasant portion a desolate wilderness.*

15 If you want even more weight on the side of swearing in God's name I will supply you with them. I barely scratched the  
16 surface here.

17 In closing though I will say this: If you feel uncomfortable swearing an oath because you feel that in doing so you violate  
18 God's law then you must, and I repeat MUST, follow your conscience. Pray about this and follow the answer God gives to  
19 you personally.

20 Christopher Holloman Hansen for The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

## 21 21.27 Sovereign Marriage

22 July 18, in the year of our Lord 1999

23 Dear Janine Hawkins:

24 I am sorry your dear friend got upset with my views on non-licensing of marriage. I did not wish it. She is a hard worker. She  
25 loves liberty. I do not agree with her on a few important issues but on most major issues I agree with her. I realize that many  
26 of you think my views are radical. I am radical if you compare me to the Socialists that run America.

27 I realize that because I have done original research on the law and because I have seen the fraud perpetrated upon the American  
28 people by government servants clearly I think differently than most Americans. I realize that my thinking has been thought  
29 to be ridiculous and outrageous by those that have not had the **opportunity** to research as I have been blessed to do.

30 I realize that it is unwise to promote these views to the average voter as they are complex. They are indeed complex but I am  
31 unable to disprove them and there are no issues that I am not prepared to change my views if there is **evidence** I am incorrect.  
32 Many people argue with me but only my fellow researchers on the "TeaParty" take the time to prove me wrong. It does not  
33 happen too often but when they find new evidence then I do not feel beaten but elated. I seek only truth and that often scares  
34 people who only want to be comfortable in their beliefs.

35 I have been informed that my opposition to marriage licensing is thought to be anti-Christian. That I must favor homosexual  
36 marriage if I do not support marriage licenses. I have, therefore, decided to share a small, easily read, portion of my studies.  
37 I believe that this explains quite clearly what I believe is a legal marriage. I have copied it directly from the mentioned  
38 dictionary without editing. If this is un-Christian then I am un-Christian.

39 Marriage has been declared to be an Unalienable right by the United States Supreme Court several times. That does not mean  
40 that there are not applicable laws that restrict marriage or more importantly define marriage. An unalienable right to marriage  
41 does not mean that homosexuals can enter into a marriage contract as that is not a marriage any more than a crow could marry  
42 a whale. A sister and a brother may make a contract to live together, have children, and call it a marriage but no court in 1856

1 would recognize it as a “lawful marriage” as that was not the definition of marriage. Polygamy was not possible because it  
2 was not a lawful marriage and only a polygamy license could make it legal. A rose by any other name would smell as sweet  
3 is a fact of law. No union between two people was or is a marriage unless it met the legal definition. A pig is a pig is a pig no  
4 matter what a liar or perverter of language or truth calls it. If the lawyers and judges had defined life as well as they had  
5 marriage we would not be fighting trying to stop abortions.

6 You will note at section 13 that in “Louisiana, a license must be obtained” and also that in 1856 (copyright date) that Louisiana  
7 was the **only** State that “required” a license. Then read the sentence that starts with the word “But” in the highlighted area  
8 and convince yourself that it was “required.” It may also be of interest to you, if you don’t know American legal history, that  
9 Louisiana is the only Union State that has law not based on English common law but on French law. It was and still is very  
10 different than all other Union States.

11 *A LAW DICTIONARY*  
12 *ADAPTED TO THE CONSTITUTION AND LAWS OF*  
13 *THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA*  
14 *AND OF THE SEVERAL STATES OF THE AMERICAN UNION*  
15 *With References to the Civil and Other Systems of Foreign Law*  
16 *by*  
17 *John Bouvier*  
18 *SIXTH EDITION, REVISED, IMPROVED, AND GREATLY ENLARGED.*  
19 *VOL. I.*  
20 -----

21 *PHILADELPHIA CHILDS & PETERSON, 124 ARCH STREET 1856*

22 *MARRIAGE. A contract made in due form of law, by which a free man and a free woman reciprocally*  
23 *engage to live with each other during their joint lives, in the union which ought to exist between husband*  
24 *and wife. By the terms freeman and freewoman in this definition are meant, not only that they are free*  
25 *and not slaves, but also that they are clear of all bars to a lawful marriage. Dig. 23, 2, 1; Ayl. Parer.*  
26 *359; Stair, Inst. tit. 4, s. 1; Shelford on Mar. and Div. c. 1, s. 1.*

27 *2. To make a valid marriage, the parties must be willing to contract, Able to contract, and have actually*  
28 *contracted.*

29 *3.—1. They must be willing to contract. Those persons, therefore, who have no legal capacity in point*  
30 *of intellect, to make a contract, cannot legally marry, as idiots, lunatics, and infant; males under the*  
31 *age of fourteen, and females under the age of twelve, and when minors over those ages marry, they*  
32 *must have the consent of their parents or guardians.*

33 *4. There is no will when the person is mistaken in the party whom he intended to marry; as, if Peter*  
34 *intending to marry Maria, through error or mistake of person, in fact marries Eliza; but an error in the*  
35 *fortune, as if a man marries a woman whom he believes to be rich, and he finds her to be poor; or in*  
36 *the quality, as if he marry a woman whom he took to be chaste, and whom he finds of an opposite*  
37 *character, this does not invalidate the marriage, because in these cases the error is only of some quality*  
38 *or accident, and not in the person. Poynt. on Marr. and Div. ch. 9.*

39 *5. When the marriage is obtained by force or fraud, it is clear that there is no consent; it is, therefore,*  
40 *void ab initio, and may be treated as null by every court in which its validity may incidentally be called*  
41 *in question. 2 Kent, Com. 66; Shelf. on Marr. and Div. 199; 2 Hagg. Cons. R. 246; 5 Paige, 43.*

42 *6.—2. Generally, all persons who are of sound mind, and have arrived to years of maturity, are able to*  
43 *contract marriage. To this general rule, however, there are many exceptions, among which the*  
44 *following may be enumerated.*

45 *7.—1. The previous marriage of the party to another person who is still living.*

1 8.—2. *Consanguinity, or affinity between the parties within the prohibited degree. It seems that persons*  
2 *in the descending or ascending line, however remote from each other, cannot lawfully marry; such*  
3 *marriages are against nature; but when we come to consider collaterals, it is not so easy to fix the*  
4 *forbidden degrees, by clear and established principles. Vaugh. 206; S. C. 2 Vent. 9. In several of the*  
5 *United States, marriages within the limited degrees are made void by statute. 2 Kent, Com. 79; Vide*  
6 *Poynt. on Marr. and Div. ch. 7.*

7 9.—3. *Impotency, (q.v.) which must have existed at the time of the marriage, and be incurable. 2 Phillim.*  
8 *Rep. 10; 2 Hagg. Rep. 832.*

9 10.—4. *Adultery. By statutory provision in Pennsylvania, when a person is convicted of adultery with*  
10 *another person, or is divorced from her husband, or his wife, he or she cannot afterwards marry the*  
11 *partner of his or her guilt. This provision is copied from the civil law. Poth. Contr. de Mariage, part 3,*  
12 *c. 3, art. 7. And the same provision exists in the French code civil, art. 298. See 1 Toull. n. 555.*

13 11.—3. *The parties must not only be willing and able, but must have actually contracted in due form of*  
14 *law.*

15 12. *The common law requires no particular ceremony to the valid celebration of marriage. The consent*  
16 *of the parties is all that is necessary, and as marriage is said to be a contract jure gentium, that consent*  
17 *is all that is needful by natural or public law. If the contract be made per verba de presenti, or if made*  
18 *per verba de futuro, and followed by consummation, it amounts to a valid marriage, and which the*  
19 *parties cannot dissolve, if otherwise competent; it is not necessary that a clergyman should be present*  
20 *to give validity to the marriage; the consent of the parties may be declared before a magistrate, or*  
21 *simply before witnesses; or subsequently confessed or acknowledged, or the marriage may even be*  
22 *inferred from continual cohabitation, and reputation as husband and wife, except in cases of civil*  
23 *actions for adultery, or public prosecutions for bigamy. 1 Silk. 119; 4 Burr. 2057; Dougl. 171; Burr.*  
24 *Settl. Cas. 509; 1 Dow, 148; 2 Dow, 482; 4 John. 2; 18 John. R. 346; 6 Binn, 405; 1 Penn. R. 452; 2*  
25 *Watts, R. 9. But a promise to marry at a future time, cannot, by any process of law, be converted into a*  
26 *marriage, though the breach of such promise will be the foundation of an action for damages.*

27 13. *In some of the states, statutory regulations have been made on this subject. In Maine and*  
28 *Massachusetts, the marriage must be made in the presence, and with the assent of a magistrate, or a*  
29 *stated or ordained minister of the gospel. 7 Mass. Rep. 48; 2 Greenl. Rep. 102. **The statute of***  
30 *Connecticut on this subject, requires the marriage to be celebrated by a clergyman or magistrate, and*  
31 *requires the previous publication of the intention of marriage, and the consent of parents; it inflicts*  
32 *a penalty on those who disobey its regulations. The marriage, however, would probably be considered*  
33 *valid, although the regulations of the statutes had not been observed. Reeve's Dom. Rel. 196, 200,*  
34 *290. The rule in Pennsylvania is, that the marriage is valid, although the directions of the statute have*  
35 *not been observed. 2 Watts, Rep. 9; 1 How. S. C. R. 219. The same rule probably obtains in New Jersey;*  
36 *2 Halsted, 138; New Hampshire; 2 N. H. Rep. 268; and Kentucky. 3 Marsh. R. 370. **In Louisiana, a***  
37 *license must be obtained from the parish judge of the parish in which at least one of the parties is*  
38 *domiciliated, and the marriage must be celebrated before a priest or minister of a religious sect, or an*  
39 *authorized justice of the peace; it must be celebrated in the presence of three witnesses of full age, and*  
40 *an act must be made of the celebration, signed by the person who celebrated the marriage, by the parties*  
41 *and the witnesses. Code, art. 101 to 107. **The 89th article of the Code declares, that such marriages***  
42 *only are recognized by law, as are contracted and solemnized according to the rules which it*  
43 *prescribes. But the Code does not declare null a marriage not preceded by a license, and not*  
44 *evidenced by an act signed by a certain number of witnesses and the parties, nor does it make such*  
45 *an act exclusive evidence of the marriage. The laws relating to forms and ceremonies are directory*  
46 *to those who are authorized to celebrate marriage. 6 L. R. 470.*

47 14. *A marriage made in a foreign country, if good there, would, in general, be held good in this country,*  
48 *unless when it would work injustice, or be contra bonos mores, or be repugnant to the settled principles*  
49 *and policy of our laws. Story, Confl. of Laws, Sec. 87; Shelf. on M. & D. 140; 1 Bland. 188; 2 Bland.*  
50 *485; 3 John. Ch. R. 190; 8 Ala. R. 48.*

1 *15. Marriage is a contract intended in its origin to endure till the death of one of the contracting parties.*  
2 *It is dissolved by death or divorce.*

3 *16. In some cases, as in prosecutions for bigamy, by the common law, an actual marriage must be*  
4 *proved in order to convict the accused. See 6 Conn. R. 446. This rule is much qualified. See Bigamy.*

5 *17. But for many purposes it may be proved by circumstances; for example, cohabitation;*  
6 *acknowledgment by the parties themselves that they were married; their reception as such by their*  
7 *friends and relations; their correspondence, on being casually separated, addressing each other as man*  
8 *and wife; 2 Bl. R. 899; declaring, deliberately, that the marriage took place in a foreign country; 2*  
9 *Moo. & R. 503; describing their children, in parish registers of baptism, as their legitimate offspring;*  
10 *2 Str. 1073; 8 Ves. 417; or when the parties pass for husband and wife by common reputation. 1 Bl. R.*  
11 *639; S. C. 4 Burr. 2057; Dougl. 174; Cowp. 594; 3 Swans. R. 400; 8 S. & R. 159; 2 Hayw. R. 3; 1*  
12 *Taylor, R. 121; 1 H. & McH. 152; 2 N. & McC. 114; 5 Day, R. 290; 4 R. & M. 507; 9 Mass. R. 414; 4*  
13 *John. 52; 18 John. 346. After their death, the presumption is generally conclusive. Cowp. 591; 6 T. R.*  
14 *330.*

15 *18. The civil effects of marriage are the following: 1. It confirms all matrimonial agreements between*  
16 *the parties.*

17 *19.—2. It vests in the husband all the personal property of the wife, that which is in possession*  
18 *absolutely, and chuses in action, upon the condition that he shall reduce them to possession; it also*  
19 *vests in the husband right to manage the real estate of the wife, and enjoy the profits arising from it*  
20 *during their joint lives, and after her death, an estate by the curtesy when a child has been born. It vests*  
21 *in the wife after the husband's death, an estate in dower in the husband's lands, and a right to a certain*  
22 *part of his personal estate, when he dies intestate. In some states, the wife now retains her separate*  
23 *property by statute.*

24 *20.—3. It creates the civil affinity which each contracts towards the relations of the other.*

25 *21.—4. It gives the husband marital authority over the person of his wife.*

26 *22.—5. The wife acquires thereby the name of her husband, as they are considered as but one, of which*  
27 *he is the head: erunt duo in carne una.*

28 *23.—6. In general, the wife follows the condition of her husband.*

29 *24.—7. The wife, on her marriage, loses her domicil and gains that of her husband.*

30 *25.—8. One of the effects of marriage is to give paternal power over the issue.*

31 *26.—9. The children acquire the domicil of their father.*

32 *27.—10. It gives to the children who are the fruits of the marriage, the rights of kindred not only with*  
33 *the father and mother, but all their kin.*

34 *28.—11. It makes all the issue legitimate.*

35 *PROMISE OF MARRIAGE. A contract mutually entered into by a man and a woman capable of*  
36 *contracting matrimony, that they will marry each other.*

37 *2. When one of the contracting parties violates his or her promise to the other, the latter may support*  
38 *an action against the former for damages, which are sometimes very liberally given. To entitle the*  
39 *plaintiff to recover damages, however, the defendant must not have been incapable of making the*  
40 *contract at, the time, and such incapacity must not have been known to the opposite party; as, if a*  
41 *married man were to promise to marry a woman, and he afterwards refused to do so.*

42 *3. The canon law punished these breaches of promises by ecclesiastical censures.*

1 4. According to the ancient jurisprudence of France, damages could have been recovered for the  
2 execution of this engagement, and cases are reported which show a considerable liberality on this  
3 subject. M. Maynon, counsellor in the parliament of Paris, was condemned to sixty thousand livres  
4 damages; and a M. Hebert to fourteen thousand livres. D'Hericourt, Lois Ecclesiastiques, titre du  
5 Mariage, art. 1, n. 13. By the modern law of France, damages may be recovered for the violation of  
6 this contract.

7 5. In Germany and Holland damages may also be recovered. Voet, in Pandectas, tit. de sponsalibus, n.  
8 12; Huberus, in Pandectas, eod. tit. n. 19. And the Prussian code regulates the amount of damages to  
9 be paid under a variety of circumstances. Part 1, b. 2, tit. 2. Vide 2 Chit. Pr. 52; Rose, Civ. Ev. 193; 2  
10 Car. & P. 631; 4 Esp. R. 258; 1 C. & P. 350; Holt, R. 151; S. C. 3 E. C. L. R. 57; 7 Cowen, 22; 1 John.  
11 Cas. 116; 6 Cowen, 254; 4 Cowen, 355; 7 Wend. 142.

12 SOLEMNITY. The formality established by law to render a contract, agreement, or other act valid.

13 2. A marriage, for example, would not be valid if made in jest, and without solemnity. Vide Marriage,  
14 and Dig. 4, 1, 7; Id. 45, 1, 30.

15 This was marriage defined. No licenses were required. No homosexuals could ever be married because that is not a marriage  
16 any more than it is a baseball game. Anyone that believes that marriages must have a license to be legal have not studied  
17 history. To believe you need a license to get “married” is to believe a fraud that was created for the simple purpose of taxing  
18 and a more devious intent of being a party of the marriage, a third party, in the contract with a legal right to control the issue  
19 of the contract (28.—11. It makes all the issue legitimate.) And to be a controlling partner in the contract or its break up.

20 What was harmful to the community about marriage? Legally defined marriage.

21 Only something that is harmful to a community may be licensed and then only in the most least restrictive manor. If you read  
22 only 10 of the landmark cases on the first amendment you can understand this rule clearly.

23 If your friend will demonstrate the errors in my position I will embrace HER truth that to this point I have been unable to  
24 find.

25 Yours in truth,  
26 Christopher Holloman Hansen

27 **I have also added this wonderful letter I just received. I hope you will consider it all.**

## 28 **21.28 5 Reasons Why Christians Should Not Obtain a State Marriage License**

29 by Pastor Matt Trehwella

30 Every year thousands of Christians amble down to their local county courthouse and obtain a marriage license from the State  
31 in order to marry their future spouse. They do this unquestioningly. They do it because their pastor has told them to go get  
32 one, and besides, “everybody else gets one.” This pamphlet attempts to answer the question—why shouldn’t we go get one?

33 1. The definition of a “license” demands that we not obtain one to marry. Black’s Law Dictionary defines “license” as, “The  
34 permission by competent authority to do an act which without such permission, would be illegal.” Why should it be illegal  
35 to marry without the State’s permission? Why should we need the State’s permission to participate in something which God  
36 instituted (Gen. 2:18-24)? We should not need the State’s permission to marry nor should we grovel before state officials to  
37 seek it. What if you apply and the State says “no.” You must understand that the authority to license implies the power to  
38 prohibit. A license by definition “confers a right” to do something. The State cannot grant the right to marry. It is a God-  
39 given right.

40 2. When you marry with a marriage license, you grant the State jurisdiction over your marriage. When you marry with a  
41 marriage license, your marriage is a creature of the State. It is a corporation of the State! Therefore, they have jurisdiction

1 over your marriage including the fruit of your marriage. What is the fruit of your marriage? Your children and every piece of  
2 property you own. There is plenty of case law in American jurisprudence which declares this to be true.

3 In 1993, parents were upset here in Wisconsin because a test was being administered to their children in the government  
4 schools which was very invasive of the family's privacy. When parents complained, they were shocked by the school  
5 bureaucrats who informed them that their children were required to take the test by law and that they would have to take the  
6 test because they (the government school) had jurisdiction over their children. When parents asked the bureaucrats what gave  
7 them jurisdiction, the bureaucrats answered, "your marriage license and their birth certificates." Judicially, and in increasing  
8 fashion, practically, your state marriage license has far-reaching implications.

9 3. When you marry with a marriage license, you place yourself under a body of law which is immoral. By obtaining a marriage  
10 license, you place yourself under the jurisdiction of Family Court which is governed by unbiblical, immoral laws. Under  
11 these laws, you can divorce for any reason. Often, the courts side with the spouse who is in rebellion to God, and castigates  
12 the spouse who remains faithful by ordering him or her not to speak about the Bible or other matters of faith when present  
13 with the children.

14 As a minister, I cannot in good conscience perform a marriage which would place people under this immoral body of laws. I  
15 also cannot marry someone with a marriage license because to do so I have to act as an agent of the State—literally! I would  
16 have to sign the marriage license, and I would have to mail it into the State. Given the State's demand to usurp the place of  
17 God and family regarding marriage, and given it's unbiblical, immoral laws to govern marriage, it would be an act of idolatry  
18 for me to do so.

19 4. The marriage license invades and removes God-given parental authority. When you read the Bible, you see that God  
20 intended for children to have their father's blessing regarding whom they married. Daughters were to be given in marriage  
21 by their fathers (Dt. 22:16; Ex. 22:17; I Cor. 7:38). We have a vestige of this in our culture today in that the father takes his  
22 daughter to the front of the altar and the minister asks, "Who gives this woman to be married to this man?"

23 Historically, there was no requirement to obtain a marriage license in colonial America. When you read the laws of the  
24 colonies and then the states, you see only two requirements for marriage. First, you had to obtain your parents permission to  
25 marry, and second, you had to post public notice of the marriage 5-15 days before the ceremony.

26 Notice you had to obtain your parents permission. Back then you saw godly government displayed in that the State recognized  
27 the parent's authority by demanding that the parents permission be obtained. Today, the all-encompassing ungodly State  
28 demands that their permission be obtained to marry.

29 By issuing marriage licenses, the State is saying, "You don't need your parents permission, you need our permission." If  
30 parents are opposed to their child's marrying of a certain person and refuse to give their permission, the child can do an end  
31 run around the parent's authority by obtaining the State's permission, and marry anyway. This is an invasion and removal of  
32 God-given parental authority by the State.

33 5. When you marry with a marriage license, you are literally a polygamist. From the State's point of view, when you marry  
34 with a marriage license, you are not just marrying your spouse, but you are also marrying the State. Though many doubt you  
35 when you say this, nevertheless, it is true.

36 The most blatant declaration of this fact that I have ever found is a brochure entitled "With This Ring I Thee Wed." It is found  
37 in county courthouses across Ohio where people go to obtain their marriage licenses. It is published by the Ohio State Bar  
38 Association. The opening paragraph under the subtitle "Marriage Vows" states, "Actually, when you repeat your marriage  
39 vows you enter into a legal contract. There are three parties to that contract. 1. You; 2. Your husband or wife, as the case may  
40 be; and 3. the State of Ohio."

41 See, the State knows, the lawyers know, that when you marry with a marriage license, you are not just marrying your spouse,  
42 you are marrying the State! You are a polygamist! You are not just making a vow to God and your spouse, but you are making  
43 a vow to the State, and you are giving undue jurisdiction to the State.

44 When Does the State Have Jurisdiction Over a Marriage?

1 God intended the State to have jurisdiction over a marriage for two reasons—1). in the case of divorce, and 2). when crimes  
2 are committed i.e., adultery, bigamy. etc. Unfortunately, the State now allows divorce for any reason, and it doesn't prosecute  
3 for adultery.

4 In either case, divorce or crime, a marriage license is not necessary for the courts to determine whether a marriage existed or  
5 not. What is needed are witnesses, and that is why witnesses should be recorded both on the marriage certificate itself and by  
6 keeping the wedding day guest book.

7 Marriage was instituted by God, therefore it is a God-given right. According to Scripture, it is to be governed by the family,  
8 and the State only has jurisdiction in the cases of divorce or crime.

### 9 **History of Marriage Licenses in America**

10 George Washington was married without a marriage license. Abraham Lincoln was married without a marriage license. So,  
11 how did we come to this place in America where marriage licenses are issued?

12 Historically, all the states in America had laws outlawing the marriage of blacks and whites. In the mid-1800's, certain states  
13 began allowing interracial marriages or miscegenation as long as those marrying received a license from the state. In other  
14 words they had to receive permission to do an act which without such permission would be illegal.

15 Blacks Law Dictionary points to this historical fact when it defines "marriage license" as, "A license or permission granted  
16 by public authority to persons who intend to intermarry." "Intermarry" is defined in Black's Law Dictionary as,  
17 "Miscegenation; mixed or interracial marriages."

18 Give the State an inch and they'll take a 100 miles (or as one elderly woman once said to me "10,000 miles.") Not long after  
19 these licenses were issued, some states began requiring all people who marry to obtain a marriage license. In 1923, the Federal  
20 Government established the Uniform Marriage and Marriage License Act (they later established the Uniform Marriage and  
21 Divorce Act). By 1929, every state in the Union had adopted marriage license laws.

22 What Should We Do?

23 Christian couples should not be marrying with State marriage licenses, nor should ministers be marrying people with State  
24 marriage licenses. Some have said to me, "If someone is married without a marriage license, then they aren't really married."  
25 Given the fact that states may soon legalize same-sex marriages, we need to ask ourselves, "If a man and a man marry with  
26 a State marriage license, and a man and woman marry without a State marriage license—who's really married? Is it the two  
27 men with a marriage license, or the man and woman without a marriage license?" In reality, this contention that one is not  
28 really married unless they obtain a marriage license just reveals how Statist we have become in our thinking. We need to  
29 think biblically.

30 You should not have to obtain a license from the State to marry someone anymore than you should have to obtain a license  
31 from the State to be a parent, which some in academic and legislative circles are currently pushing to be made law.

32 When I marry a couple, I always buy them a Family Bible which contains birth and death records, and a marriage certificate.  
33 We record the marriage in the Family Bible. What's recorded in a Family Bible will stand up as a legally binding document  
34 in any court of law in America. Both George Washington and Abraham Lincoln were married without a marriage license.  
35 They simply recorded their marriage in their Family Bibles. So should we.

36 *Pastor Trehella*  
37 *Mercy Seat Christian Church*  
38 *10240 W. National Ave. PMB #129*  
39 *Milwaukee, Wisconsin.*

### 40 **21.29 Sovereign Brother**

41 December 25, in the year of our Lord 1995

1 Dear Sovereign Brother of the LDS faith,

2 Brother and fellow King, not only in Christ but as a warrior on the front lines against the Beast, for in my slightly updated  
3 words from Shakespeare's Henry the Fifth: For he who fights against the Beast, shall be my brother, be he ne'er so vile, this  
4 battle shall gentle his condition and Gentlemen now abed with fear shall hold their manhood cheap while any speaks that  
5 fought with Christ within these latter days.

6 The game is afoot and we are indeed upon the front line. No matter the cost we must be strong and hoist the title of liberty,  
7 the *Constitution*, high for all to see. I know how difficult the fight is, I know for I live beneath the same constant tyrannical  
8 financial threats as you, but we cannot faint because our children's freedom rests in the balance. The Saints in Rome went to  
9 face the lions without even hope. We have not only hope but the weapons of the *Constitution* with which to fight. We cannot  
10 let the Beast number us nor can we give of our firstfruits to his abominable blood-sucking agents that live to sap our strength.  
11 If an agent is spending time on you, rejoice therefore, just think how much money you are costing those bottom dwelling  
12 leeches. And how, if he is spending time on you, can he attach his lips to the lifeblood of some other patriot. If he is spending  
13 his time making your life miserable do your best to return the favor. Enjoy the fight for we are all enlisted till the conflict is  
14 o'er, HAPPY ARE WE, HAPPY ARE WE; keep a video camera with you and put it in his face if he tries to follow or confront  
15 you, seek an IRS administrative disciplinary hearing, apply for restraining orders, file lawsuits, demand protection from your  
16 Sheriff assisted by others who support you. Do all you can to legally force that demon of hell back into the spawning pit from  
17 whence he crawled. Bring his dark deeds into the light of the *Constitution* and the public eye. And most importantly, call  
18 upon Christ continually to give you the strength to defeat this threat.

19 Here is what leaders of your church have said about the *Constitution*:

20 David O. McKay said:

21 "Governments are the SERVANTS, not the MASTERS of the people. All who love the *Constitution of the United States*  
22 can vow with Thomas Jefferson, who, when president, said, 'I have sworn upon the altar of God eternal hostility against  
23 every form of tyranny over the mind of man.'"

24 Jefferson also said:

25 "To preserve our independence, we must not let our rulers load us with perpetual debt. We must take our choice between  
26 economy and liberty, or profusion and servitude. If we run into such debts, we must be taxed in our meat and drink, in our  
27 necessities and in our comforts, in our labors and in our amusements.

28 "If we can prevent the government from wasting the labors of the people under the pretense of caring for them, they will be  
29 happy. The same prudence which in private life would forbid our paying our money for unexplained projects, forbids it in  
30 the disposition of public money. We are endeavoring to reduce the government to the practice of rigid economy to avoid  
31 burdening the people and arming the magistrate with a patronage of money which might be used to corrupt the principles of  
32 our government..."

33 Quoting again from McKay:

34 *"In conclusion, I repeat that no greater immediate responsibility rests upon members of the Church,*  
35 *upon all citizens of the Republic and of neighboring Republics than to protect the freedom vouchsafed*  
36 *by the Constitution of the United States. 'Let us, by exercising our privileges under the Constitution:*  
37 *(1) Preserve our right to worship God according to the dictates of our conscience,*  
38 *(2) Preserve the right to work when and where we choose...*  
39 *(3) Feel free to plan and to reap without the handicap of bureaucratic interference.*  
40 *(4) Devote our time, means, and life if necessary, to hold inviolate those laws which will secure to*  
41 *each individual the free exercise of conscience, the right and control of property, and the protection*  
42 *of life."*  
43 *["Free Agency.. .A Divine Gift" 367, 378]*

44 Are you one of the few Latter-day Saints that live up to this calling?

45 Heber J. Grant said:

1 *"Let it [the Constitution] be taught in schools, in seminaries, and in colleges. Let it be written in primers,*  
2 *in spelling books, and almanacs. Let it be preached from the pulpit, proclaimed in legislative halls, and*  
3 *enforced in courts of justice. In short, let it become the political religion of the nation."*

4 Apostle Wirthlin just recently, 1995, repeated this admonition.

5 Harold B. Lee said

6 *"So today is no time for youth to whimper the refrain of the defeated and retire to the fancied security*  
7 *of the regimented state. Today is the day for youth to gird themselves with the armor of peace, having*  
8 *as their weapons "the shield of faith... and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God."*

9 Spencer W. Kimbal said:

10 *"The only way we can keep our freedom is to work at it. Not some of us. All of us. Not some of the time,*  
11 *but all of the time."*

12 Ezra Taft Benson said:

13 *"The War that began in heaven is not yet over. The conflict continues on the battlefield of morality. And*  
14 *one of Lucifer's primary strategies has been to restrict our agency through the power of earthly*  
15 *governments."*

16 Brigham Young said:

17 *"I love the government and the Constitution of the United States, but I do not love the damned rascals*  
18 *who administer the government.'*

19 Also, Joseph Smith, the founder of the LDS church stated:

20 *"The different states, and even Congress itself, have passed many laws diametrically contrary to the*  
21 *Constitution of the United States. '...Shall we be such fools as to be governed by its laws, which are*  
22 *unconstitutional? No!"*

23 I, as the Presiding Sovereign of The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty, wholeheartedly agree with all of  
24 those statements about the *Constitution* and fighting for your freedom.

25 As a member of The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter-day Saints you, evidently, have the direction and corresponding duty,  
26 according to your past and present leaders to defeat the tyranny that now plagues us.

27 Alma 60:36:

28 *"Behold I am Moroni, your chief Captain. I seek not for power, but to pull it down I seek not for honor*  
29 *of the world, but for the glory of my God, and the freedom and welfare of my country."*

30 Can you put your name in place of Moroni's name?

31 Alma 61:12,13 We would subject ourselves to the yoke of bondage if it were requisite with the justice of God, or if he should  
32 command us so to do. But behold he doth not command us that we shall subject ourselves to our enemies, but that we should  
33 put our trust in him, and he will deliver us.

34 Take a good look at what President Heber J. Grant had to say concerning Roosevelt's Social Security plan. When ever you  
35 think of giving up or becoming a part of the Social Security or Federal Income tax lie read this again. He says that such plans  
36 are in violation of the revelations of Jesus Christ. Choose you this day who you will serve!

37 *"We have on, at the present time, a great political campaign (1936), and I want to say to the Saints that*  
38 *I hope they will not allow their political affiliations, their regard for political affairs, to cause feelings*

1 of ill-will towards one another. I have had some of the most insulting letters that ever came to me,  
2 condemning me for not being in favor of the Townsend Plan, and that I must be ignorant of the plan. I  
3 am not ignorant of the plan. I have not read every word of it, but I have asked one of my secretaries to  
4 read every word of the plan and to give me the important points, and to my mind it is in direct opposition  
5 to everything I have quoted from Brigham Young and from the revelations of the Lord. The idea of  
6 allowing every man and woman who has reached the age of sixty years and wishes to retire from  
7 working to get two hundred dollars a month from the government! There is nothing truer than Brigham  
8 Young's statement, that we should give nothing to people, unless they are not able to work, without  
9 requiring them to do something for it...

10 "Let every Latter-day Saint who has a farm, farm it, and not try to borrow money to be paid back by  
11 the government. Let every man feel that he is the architect and builder of his own life, and that he  
12 proposes to make a success of it by working. "Six days shalt thou labor and do all thy work," and rest  
13 on the seventh. Do not be willing to labor four or five days and then only half labor. Let every Latter-  
14 day Saint give value received for everything he gets, whether it be in work, or whatever he does."  
15 [CR, October, 1936: 13. President Heber J. Grant ]

16 To become a beneficiary of the Social Security System is A VIOLATION OF Christ's law and if you do it you embrace the  
17 plans of Gadianton just as the "more part of the righteous" had done in Hel. 6:38:

18 38 And it came to pass on the other hand, that the Nephites did build them up and support them,  
19 beginning at the more wicked part of them, until they had overspread all the land of the Nephites, and  
20 had seduced the more part of the righteous until they had come down to believe in their works and  
21 partake of their spoils, and to join with them in their secret murders and combinations.

22 I believe that the former Secretary of Agriculture in the Eisenhower Administration and President of The Church of Jesus  
23 Christ of Latter-day Saints gave a good description of why Christians of any sect or denomination do not get involved in the  
24 battle for liberty. Satan does not want them to because if Christians would put in the effort our *Constitution* could be saved.  
25 Ezra T. Benson said:

26 "The devil knows that if the elders of Israel should ever wake up, they could step forth and help preserve  
27 freedom and extend the gospel. Therefore the devil has concentrated, and to a large extent successfully,  
28 in neutralizing much of the priesthood. He has reduced them to sleeping giants. His arguments are  
29 clever.

30 "Here are a few samples:

31 "First: "We really haven't received much instruction about freedom," the devil says...

32 "Second: "You're too involved in other church work," says the devil.

33 "Third: "You want to be loved by everyone," says the devil, "and this freedom battle is so controversial  
34 you might be accused of engaging in politics."...

35 "Fourth: "Wait until it becomes popular to do," says the devil, "or, at least until everybody in the Church  
36 agrees on what should be done."...

37 "Fifth: "It might hurt your business or your family," says the devil, "and besides why not let the gentiles  
38 save the country? They aren't as busy as you are."...

39 "Sixth: "Don't worry," says the devil, "the Lord will protect you, and besides the world is so corrupt  
40 and heading toward destruction at such a pace that you can't stop it, so why try?"...

41 "And now as to the last neutralizer that the devil uses most effectively-it is simply this: "Don't do  
42 anything in the fight for freedom until the Church sets up its own specific program to save the  
43 Constitution." This brings us right back to the scripture I opened with today-to those slothful servants  
44 who will not do anything until they are "compelled in all things" [D&C 58:26]. Maybe the Lord will  
45 never set up a specific church program for the purpose of saving the Constitution. Perhaps if he set one

1 up at this time it might split the Church asunder, and perhaps he does not want that to happen yet for  
2 not all the wheat and tares are fully ripe.

3 "The Prophet Joseph Smith declared it will be the elders of Israel who will step forward to help save  
4 the Constitution, not the Church. And have we elders been warned? Yes, we have. And have we elders  
5 been given the guidelines? Yes indeed, we have. And besides, if the Church should ever inaugurate a  
6 program, who do you think would be in the forefront to get it moving? It would not be those who were  
7 sitting on the sidelines prior to that time or those who were appeasing the enemy. It would be those  
8 choice spirits who, not waiting to be "commanded in all things" [D&C 58:26], used their own free will,  
9 the counsel of the prophets, and the Spirit of the Lord as guidelines and who entered the battle "in a  
10 good cause." [D&C 58:27] and brought to pass much righteousness in freedom's cause...

11 "Brethren, if we had done our homework and were faithful, we could step forward at this time and help  
12 save this country. The fact that most of us are unprepared to do it is an indictment we will have to bear.  
13 The longer we wait, the heavier the chains, the deeper the blood, the more the persecution, and the less  
14 we can carry out our God-given mandate and worldwide mission. The war in heaven is raging on the  
15 earth today. Are you being neutralized in the battle?"  
16 [Ezra Taft Benson from (Not Commanded in All Things; and in GFC)]

17 Jefferson's prophecy, mentioned above, has come to fruition and our constitutional government, founded upon Christian  
18 principles, has become corrupt. So corrupt in fact that the government leaders and bankers have become an oligarchy of  
19 tyranny and servants of the Beast to rule over us in an attempt to make us Satan's slaves. Christ has not commanded us to be  
20 in bondage to the IRS or the Social Security System or any government. He has commanded just the opposite, that we should  
21 fight against any tyranny and anything that abrogates the *Constitution*. Prophets have prophesied of it, Christ has commanded  
22 it. Let us all press on in the work of the Lord.

23 Christopher Holloman Hansen, Presiding Sovereign for  
24 The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty

## 25 **21.30 The I.R.S. and The Church**

26 by Pastor Jim Phillips

- 27 1. Now the IRS was more subtle than any organization which the Lord God allowed to be established. And it said unto
- 28 the Church, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not receive subsidies from every thing which God allowed to be established.
- 29 2. And the Church said unto the IRS, We may receive the tithes and offerings of every member of the Church to Meet our
- 30 needs:
- 31 3. But of the 501(c) 3 tax-exempt status which is from the IRS, God hath said, Ye shall not receive subsidies from it,
- 32 neither shall ye incorporate, lest ye die:
- 33 4. And the IRS said unto the Church, Ye shall not surely die:
- 34 5. For God doth know that in the day ye receive your Corporate status, that artificial life shall be breathed into your
- 35 Church by the State, and your Pastors shall be as smart as God knowing "Public Policy" better than the Word of God.
- 36 6. And when the Church saw that the IRS was able to subsidize it's pet projects, and that it was the politically correct
- 37 thing to do, and that it gained a certain amount of respectability from the world, the Church took the subsidies, and
- 38 gave the benefits also to her Pastor with her; and he did compromise.
- 39 7. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they realized that they were powerless spiritually, and they made excuses,
- 40 and covered up their sin:
- 41 8. And they heard the Word of the Lord God convicting them in a real Church: And they tried to hide themselves from
- 42 the presence of the Lord God amongst the real Churches and men of God in the world.
- 43 9. And the Lord God called unto the Pastor, and said unto him, Where art thou?
- 44 10. And he said, I heard your Word preached in a real Church, and I was afraid, because I was powerless spiritually; and I
- 45 hid myself.
- 46 11. And he said, Who told thee that thou was powerless spiritually? Hast thou received subsidies from the IRS, whereof I
- 47 commanded thee that thou shouldest not receive?
- 48 12. And the Pastor said, The Church whom thou gavest me to Pastor, she gave me benefits, and I did take them.

- 1 13. And the Lord God said unto the Church, What is this that thou hast done? And the Church said, The IRS tempted us,  
2 and we voted to receive their subsidies.
- 3 14. And the Lord God said unto the IRS, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all institutions, and above  
4 every organization in the world; you are lower than a snakes belly, and shall be cursed every day of your existence.
- 5 15. And I will put division between thee and the true Church, and between your Corporate Churches and Hers: they shall  
6 win in the end, and yours shall persecute Hers until the rapture.
- 7 16. Unto the Corporate Church he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy future ministries, and thy desire shall be  
8 to the Chairman of the Trustee board, and he or she shall rule your Corporate Church with a *Constitution* given to it by  
9 the State.
- 10 17. And unto the Pastor he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of the Corporate Church, and have received  
11 your Tax Exempt Status from the IRS, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not receive subsidies of the  
12 IRS: cursed is your Corporate Church because of you; in sorrow shalt thou receive of it's subsidies all the days of thy  
13 life;
- 14 18. Divisions also and strife shall Corporate Status bring to thee; and you shall submit to the IRS because of the subsidies  
15 you receive from it:
- 16 19. In the days preceding your business meetings shall thou study thy Constitution, till thou return unto the true Church;  
17 for out of it did you come: for it is a Christian you claim to be, and unto my Church only should you return.
- 18 20. And the pastor called his Corporation, "First Baptist Church, Inc." because it was the founder of all future Corporate  
19 Churches.
- 20 21. Unto the pastor also and to his Corporate Church did the Lord God allow to be established the Christian Law  
21 Association, to convince Churches that it is better to obey the "Public Policy" that it is to obey the Word of God.
- 22 22. And the Lord God said, Behold, the Pastor thinks he is smarter than us, to know what is good for him and what is not:  
23 and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take over an unregistered Church, and compromise it, and it remains a  
24 Corporation forever:
- 25 23. And God sent the Pastor forth from the true Churches, to preside over his Corporate one which he established.
- 26 24. So he drove out the Pastor; and he placed at the pulpit of the real Church a man of God, with a King James Bible, to  
27 keep Jesus Christ as the Head of His Church.

Pastor Jim Phillips  
Remnant Independent Baptist Church

Our mailing address is  
2934 Bahia Dr. Springfield, Ohio 45503

28 Disclaimer notice: The writer of this article in no way supports the changing of God's word as do all of the Modern translators  
29 of the Bible today. The sole intent of this article is to take a Scripture passage and apply it to a modern day predicament and  
30 to make the scripture relevant to the issue.

31 I do not pretend to speak for God on this issue, but I do not believe that God would allow His Church to be dictated to by IRS  
32 or the State as to its manner of Government, or as to the content of the messages that are preached from it's pulpit. The writer  
33 of this article is in no way against the paying of any lawful taxes due to the IRS

### 34 **21.31 Congress Must Feel the Heat**

35 Hi Dale,

36 You bring out a paradox: How can we peacefully resolve our current situation?

37 Yes, the Christian generally supports peaceful resolution of difficulties. However, Jesus himself warned that he did not bring  
38 peace, but the sword.

39 We're dealing with human nature, so must acknowledge two maxims: Power corrupts, and absolute power corrupts absolutely;  
40 and those who have power rarely if ever voluntarily surrender it.

41 Ronald Reagan hosted a breakfast for Evangelical leaders after there was some kind of victory on a "Moral Majority" issue.  
42 One of the preachers in attendance supposedly asked, "Mr. President, do you think Congress is beginning to see the light?"

1 Reagan's response was reportedly, "Sir, I don't believe it is nearly as important for Congress to see the light as to feel the  
2 heat."

3 Whether we view the situation from the Christian perspective, which is the one I have, or from the more universal Age of  
4 Aquarius "cosmic consciousness" perspective, we see a need for transformation of humanity, whether individual or collective.  
5 In either, we embrace the notion, "The truth will set you free!"

6 However, history and experience have sobering effects. Man is chiefly motivated by his carnal appetites, and by mortal fear.  
7 In fact, most of his reasoning effort is directed to rationalizing his action or inaction.

8 Let's consider the Internal Revenue Service for a moment by asking the question, "Is income tax necessary?" If the answer is  
9 negative, we will ask a second question: Is it necessary to have a substitute for income tax?

10 If the former chairman of the New York Federal Reserve Bank is to be believed, both answers are negative. Once the currency  
11 was allowed to "float" (not backed by anything), there was no need for tax. Government could cover expense by printing  
12 more money. The scheme since 1913 has been to launder "credit" of the United States through Federal Reserve banks. The  
13 effect of increasing money supply relative to goods and services is inflation, which imposes a hidden tax on all working and  
14 production classes.

15 Given this fact, which resulted in 400% inflation on essential goods and services in the 1973-90 period, it is obvious that  
16 there is no need for income tax or a national sales tax. And it should be just as obvious that the Internal Revenue Service  
17 serves some purpose other than replenishing government coffers.

18 Thurston Bell frames the situation nicely: Federalism relies on mass propaganda and terrorization, reinforced by random  
19 victimization, to accomplish its objectives.

20 A friend objects to my use of the term "propaganda", but common contemporary understanding of the word conveys intended  
21 meaning. At any rate, we are dealing with a carefully crafted scheme designed to undermine sovereignty and solvency of the  
22 American people. It serves purposes of a political and wealth nobless oblige, i.e., a privileged ruling class, that has garnered  
23 the power of government for self-serving ends.

24 If we turn to scripture for enlightenment, we find that,

25 *"That which is crooked cannot be made straight..."*  
26 *Ecclesiastes 1:15]*

27 And if we consider the law of nations (Oswald Spengler in "Decline of the West"), we find that no nation or society has ever  
28 voluntarily changed unless or until it suffered economic collapse severe enough that its social institutions failed, or it was  
29 defeated at war on home ground. Through 1935, 19 of the 21 known empires were destroyed from within.

30 Obviously, we have a choice: We can endure corruption until we are destroyed by it, or we can intentionally carve it out. So  
31 long as the system is tainted by the Federalism scheme, we're doomed.

32 The Internal Revenue Service, and the bogus income tax scheme, must be viewed in the context of larger causes and forces.  
33 IRS, as such, is incidental. The tax system, as such, is incidental. Both serve as vehicles to accomplish sinister objectives.  
34 Those who devised the scheme are fully aware of the fraud, its effects, and its vulnerabilities.

35 My perspective of IRS and the income tax system is simply that they are what they are. We don't need either, so both should  
36 be abolished. But the dilemma for entrenched powers is the probable consequence for admitting that neither is necessary.

37 In the meantime, IRS is eroding from the inside as well as the outside. The patriot community has learned enough about  
38 mandatory procedure and the like that people are better able to defend against IRS incursion, and Congressional hearings and  
39 General Accounting Office investigations have exposed widespread agency corruption. Administrative seizures are way  
40 down, criminal and civil prosecution is way down, and IRS is currently having a devil of a time hiring sufficient numbers of  
41 people. We have the example of Joe Banister and other former IRS personnel going public to expose agency corruption, and  
42 there are other incidents such as revenue officer training manuals that mysteriously made their way to me.

1 In a manner of speaking, each of us has a choice: You must choose this day whom you serve.

2 IRS personnel are increasingly choosing to get out of Dodge. As initiatives such as Pat Patton's effort to criminally prosecute  
3 IRS personnel in the Arkansas-Oklahoma district increase, even more will leave, and those who remain will be increasingly  
4 cautious.

5 Had I been Mr. Reagan, I might have qualified the response by saying, "A few may see the light, but most need to feel the  
6 heat."

7 Plato divided mankind into three classes: Those suited to rule should be subjected to strenuous academic rigors until they are  
8 devoid of self-interest. He called the few who have that potential philosopher kings. Whether we agree with Plato or not, it  
9 was his estimation of mankind. Then there is a somewhat larger class he described as "men of spirit." Ideally, men of spirit  
10 have fidelity to truth. Then we have the masses, motivated chiefly by carnal appetites.

11 The example raises a question: What percentage of the population is morally motivated? Or in other terms, what percentage  
12 will seek and embrace truth at the expense of convenience of the moment?

13 Immanuel Kant restated approximately the same thing from a different perspective in his "Preface to the Metaphysics of  
14 Morals". Those who actually shape cultural events and history are divided into two relatively small groups, the truly moral,  
15 and the truly immoral. The first is a social positive, the second is a social negative. The masses occupy space between the  
16 antipodes. However, those who might commonly be viewed as "good people" are still social negatives when they are not  
17 truly moral and willing to defend truth.

18 The Apostle James put it another way:

19 *"But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with*  
20 *the wind and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive any thing of the Lord. A double-*  
21 *minded man is unstable in all his ways."*  
22 *[James 1: 6-8]*

23 As we consider IRS and the Federal income tax system, we need to keep an antecedent fact in mind: Federalism, as European  
24 Communism and Socialism, incorporates a mathematically impossible economic scheme. That which is impossible is  
25 impossible. It is certain to fail. And if we don't have adequate relief mechanisms in place, the nation will be reduced to  
26 anarchy and chaos.

27 To restore national vitality, we must implement systemic change that goes beyond IRS. However, IRS and the fraudulent  
28 Federal income tax system are metaphorically the gates of modern Babylon. While it is impossible for us to segregate IRS  
29 personnel from the system, they can extricate themselves. As you and I are, they are free to choose different pursuits.

30 David Bosset recently transmitted a preliminary announcement relating to two corporations that have employed the Bosset  
31 Marketing gross income source procedure either to secure refunds or notice of pending refunds. The businesses are in revenue  
32 districts other than the one Bosset Marketing is in.

33 To me, at least, the Bosset announcement is significant in that IRS intra-agency communications are probably better than  
34 patriot communications. I would like to be a mouse in the corner at IRS management-level meetings. You can bet Patton's  
35 criminal complaint initiative via the office of the Treasury Inspector General of Tax Administration, Thurston Bell initiatives  
36 via the Taxpayer Advocate (Ombudsman), et al, are subjects of concern. And effect must be demoralizing to IRS field agents  
37 who have front line exposure.

38 Given what we know about the Federalism scheme, it is difficult to rationalize compromise that substitutes one fraud for  
39 another while leaving the major culprit in place. I don't view the functionary such as the IRS officer or agent as more than  
40 incidental. The object is the system itself.

41 Dan Meador

## 42 **21.32 Situational Ethics**

1 December 7th, 1995

2 Mrs. Thompson:

3 Your use of situational ethics in Nicholas' home work is a direct violation of the Supreme Court's rulings (Board of Education  
4 of Kiryas Joel Village School District v. Grumet Decided June 27, 1994) prohibiting establishment of religion or irreligion.  
5 Situational ethics are a product of Secular Humanism which has been declared a religion by the Supreme Court and is also a  
6 product of irreligion since there are no situational ethics in our religion. This violation is unconscionable to our family and is  
7 a violation of our "free exercise" rights. It is no less a violation of the First Amendment's establishment and exercise clauses  
8 than forcing Nicholas to say a prayer written by the State. Furthermore your outline telling us, as Nicholas' parents, that you  
9 will be teaching about interdependence, as a good thing, is also a violation of Nicholas' and our, as his parents, rights.

10 Your questions do not give enough information to form a proper answer for even the most informed of individuals let alone  
11 an impressionable teenager and the Supreme Court has mentioned the lack of a child's ability to be individualistic in a  
12 classroom setting several times in relationship to the school setting. Nicholas is afraid that if he stands up for what he believes  
13 he will be ridiculed and ostracized. This can not and will not continue for you are in violation of law and I demand that you  
14 stop this type of teaching immediately.

15 Question #4 for instance asks: "A band of revolutionaries tries to overthrow the government of a foreign country." The  
16 students are to determine how this would affect them, or Americans in general. I would ask: Is the government tyrannical,  
17 socialistic, mobocratic democracy or a constitutional republic. Without this information it is like asking a child what he thinks  
18 the weather would be like outside in Alaska and not telling him what month of the year it was. This question was asked to  
19 intimidate the child from saying that he would encourage revolutionaries under certain circumstances. I also understand that  
20 Waco, Texas was brought up by the teacher during discussion of this topic. What did this have to do with "foreign  
21 governments"? Were the illegal acts of the BATF and the FBI also discussed? Our government, we must remember was  
22 formed following a revolution by revolutionaries. Was the U.S. revolution discussed in a positive light or did it go  
23 unmentioned. We find every single question on this list offensive, leading, and highly inappropriate for impressionable  
24 thirteen-year-olds. This is at best a list for a college level critical issues course. We fail to see how these questions relate to  
25 where a country falls on a map.

26 These questions have an obvious agenda and that agenda is a one-world government under the United Nations. This is a direct  
27 violation of our First Amendment rights.

28 Question #2 was particularly offensive and upsetting to Nicholas' mother because of her strong beliefs related to the Gulf  
29 conflict.

30 This letter is to put you, as Nicholas' teacher, on notice that we will not allow this type of one world government, trust  
31 government, revolutionaries are bad indoctrination to continue as it is a direct violation of Nicholas' civil rights and is having  
32 a harmful affect on him. I would suggest that you also inform the principal of your unlawful act and seek some sort of remedy.

33 Christopher Holloman Hansen

### 34 **21.33 Americans: Tax Slaves to world**

35 Regarding the Gazette-Journal's Editorial "Good move by the IRS" on Halloween (1999): The IRS is properly Identified as  
36 a "much-hated agency." The IRS has employed fear and intimidation and strong-arm tactics to harass our citizens in efforts  
37 to extort taxes.

38 Does anyone see the irony of the situation?

39 President of the World Bill Clinton and before him Bush ... ad nauseam ... continue to give hundreds of billions of dollars to  
40 foreigners. Nations including North Korea, Russia, Iran, Egypt, Israel, Pakistan, Brazil ... ad nauseam ... receive billions of  
41 dollars while we harass our struggling waitresses, even single mothers, to pay the IRS every last nickel on every gratuity they  
42 receive.

1 Further, Social Security funds are plundered by the politicians to finance unconstitutional no-win wars around the globe.  
2 International Corporations and bankers receive the profits from these "peacekeeping" charades.

3 America is now the biggest debtor nation in the history of the world. Our citizens are tax slaves to the world. No individual,  
4 no nation can be free and in debt.

5 Wake up, slaves.

6 Dan Hansen, Sparks

## 7 **21.34 500 Nations**

8 July 13th, in the year of our Lord, 1995

9 Dear Daniel Hansen,

10 I just finished watching 500 Nations last night. It was the most thought provoking documentary I had ever seen. I had known  
11 that our government and our people had treated the native Americans as sub-human enemies. I had not known the extent of  
12 our treachery and dishonor: Germ warfare, slaughter of women and children, indoctrination in government schools of their  
13 children to strip away their culture and religion, and total disregard for treaties and promises. Our government had no honor.  
14 None. The disgrace of what we did taints our past. What is the difference between what Germany did to the Poles, the Gypsies,  
15 and the Jews and what we did to the Cherokee, the Sioux, and the Apache. I say our sin is far greater. We had the Constitution  
16 and the laws of God to live by and abandoned them both.

17 But the most interesting thing I saw was the parallel between our Government's enemy of yesteryear, the Indians, and its  
18 enemy today, freedom loving, God fearing Americans. We are kept track of like criminals by a government that does not  
19 trust us by using Social Security Numbers that they promised would never be used as an identification number. Open a bank  
20 account, they know. Get a credit card, buy a house, buy a car, buy a gun, they know. Get a job, they know so our wages can  
21 be stolen by the SSA and the IRS who assumes us guilty until we prove we are innocent. Our children are forced by law to  
22 attend government schools or we are effectively "fined" by having to pay for private schools. Our children are not taught  
23 about our history. God is a strictly forbidden subject, even voluntary prayers spoken aloud are forcibly quieted. A culture of  
24 godless evolution, nature worship, blind obedience to authority and sex education has replaced Christianity, Constitutional  
25 law and morality as the governments sanctioned religion is forced upon our children. But most importantly the traitors that  
26 run our government do not trust us, Americans, with guns and they constantly seek to undermine our rights to own weapons  
27 that could effectively resist their increasing tyranny. This is the same thing they told the Indians, "If you give us your lands  
28 and your guns we will be fair. You can trust us." Well, the Indians did trust our Government and after our Government lied  
29 and stole their lands, their culture, and their religion, the Indians could not effectively fight back because they had given up  
30 their guns. If you want to know if you can trust our Federal Government just ask a Native American.

31 There is one other parallel. The people of the united States either agreed with the Government's policies or did nothing to  
32 stop the theft of land and genocide of the Indians. We the People let it happen.

33 Oh Dan, why doesn't America stop electing Democrats and Republicans. They will just give us more of the same. Why don't  
34 they get educated, read materials outside the mainstream news, both right and left; read and study the Constitution and  
35 *Declaration of Independence* and other founding documents of our nation? If they would only learn their rights and duties as  
36 sovereign Americans of these united States we could restore real liberty. If they would study the goals of the Council on  
37 Foreign Relations then they will either abhor them or agree with them. But instead they go through life as ignorant voters. I  
38 wish they would either truly embrace freedom or join with those that want to control us, steal our freedom, strip us of our  
39 religion and destroy our Constitution. The time has come to choose sides. Fence sitters have no honor. I respect my enemy  
40 who says he is out to destroy me much more than the ignorant fool that lets freedom die because he is too lazy to become  
41 educated and choose sides. After all, the only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good people to do nothing.

42 Christopher Holloman Hansen

## 43 **21.35 Senate Prayer**

1 To the Christian Fellowship,

2 I'll betcha this guy won't be asked back soon. Good Lord, can you imagine standing in front of a bunch of politicians and  
3 telling the truth? They must have been apoplectic! Pass this one on.

4 When Minister Joe Wright was asked to open the new sessions of the Kansas Senate, everyone was expecting the usual  
5 generalities, but this is what they heard:

6 Heavenly Father, we come before you today to ask Your forgiveness and to seek Your direction and guidance. We know  
7 Your Word says, "Woe to those who call evil good," but that is exactly what we have done. We have lost our spiritual  
8 equilibrium and reversed our values.

9 We confess:

10 We have ridiculed the absolute truth of Your Word and called it Pluralism. We have worshipped other gods and called it  
11 multiculturalism. We have endorsed perversion and called it alternative lifestyle. We have exploited the poor and called it  
12 the lottery. We have rewarded laziness and called it welfare. We have killed our unborn and called it choice. We have shot  
13 abortionists and called it justifiable. We have neglected to discipline our children and called it building self-esteem. We have  
14 abused power and called it politics. We have coveted our neighbor's possessions and called it ambition. We have polluted the  
15 air with profanity and pornography and called it freedom of expression. We have ridiculed the time-honored values of our  
16 forefathers and called it enlightenment.

17 Search us, Oh God, and know our hearts today; cleanse us from every sin and set us free. Guide and bless these men and  
18 women who have been sent to direct us to the center of your will. I ask it in the Name of Your Son, the living Savior, Jesus  
19 Christ. Amen.

20 The response was immediate. A number of legislators walked out during the prayer in protest. In six short weeks, Central  
21 Christian Church, where Rev. Wright is pastor, logged more than 5,000 phone calls with only 47 of those calls responding  
22 negatively. The church is now receiving international requests for copies of this prayer from India, Africa, and Korea.  
23 Commentator Paul Harvey aired this prayer on The Rest of the Story on the radio and received a larger response to this  
24 program than any other he has ever aired.

25 This letter was sent to our Fellowship from J.A.I.L. (Judicial Accountability Initiative Law) [www.jail4judges.org](http://www.jail4judges.org) or JAIL @  
26 P.O. Box 207, No. Hollywood, CA 91603. We thank them for it. Some of the best letters Christians of all ages have received  
27 have come from jail but this is a new twist.

## 28 **21.36 Love is Our Motivation**

29 Editor:

30 Love is the most powerful force in the world. Love is the great motivator. Therefore, love is the foundation of the petition to  
31 ensure that in Nevada marriage is between a man and a woman. The whole issue is surrounded by love: love of a husband for  
32 a wife, love of a wife for a husband, love of parents for their children - love extending into the future as we work to insure  
33 that generations yet unborn will have the opportunity to experience the love of a family.

34 This petition expresses our love of county, love of our community, our culture and civilization - the foundation of which are  
35 families. The petition is an expression of our love of God, and it is a reflection of God's love for us. God loved us enough to  
36 ordain marriage between a man and a woman and established through procreation the family with the love of a mother and  
37 father.

38 It is because of this great love and its positive influence in our lives and the lives of our children that we gather signatures to  
39 protect marriage. Our Founding Fathers enunciated their love of us by insuring rights not only to "ourselves" but to "our  
40 posterity" as well. We seek to follow their example, as has Congress.

1 What ever same-sex relationships may be, they are not properly designated as marriages. The union of a man and a woman -  
2 husband and wife - constitutes a marriage, and marriage is a cornerstone of society, the foundation upon which the family is  
3 established.

4 The petition for the protection of marriage is not a discrimination issue. It is not a civil rights issue or a statement against  
5 different lifestyles, or the individuals involved. Rather, it is a defense of present law, of the natural order of things, of the  
6 family and of the faith which, through history, has inspired the country's institutions.

7 Love of a husband for a wife, of a wife for a husband, of parents for their children, love of generations yet unborn, love of  
8 country and love of God - these are our motivators.

9 Published in the *Reno Gazette-Journal* on 3/23/2000, by Janine Hansen, the state president of Nevada Eagle Forum and a  
10 member of the Coalition for the Protection of Marriage in Nevada.

## 22 Chapter 22: Inspirational Writings

### 22.1 The Price They Paid

Author unknown

Fifty-six men signed the Declaration of Independence.  
Did you ever wonder what happened to them?

Five signers were captured by the British and brutally tortured as traitors. Nine fought in the War for Independence and died from wounds or from hardships they suffered. Two lost their sons in the Continental Army. Another two had sons captured. At least a dozen of the fifty-six had their homes pillaged and burned.

What kind of men were they? Twenty-five were lawyers or jurists. Eleven were merchants. Nine were farmers or large plantation owners. One was a teacher, one a musician, and one a printer. These were men of means and education who launched the Ship of State which you and I have inherited. Yet they signed the *Declaration of Independence*, knowing full well that the penalty could be death if they were captured.

When these courageous men signed, they pledged their lives, their fortunes, and their sacred honor to the cause of freedom and independence.

In the face of the advancing British Army, the Continental Congress fled from Philadelphia to Baltimore on December 12, 1776. It was an especially anxious time for John Hancock, the President, as his wife had just given birth to a baby girl. Due to the complications stemming from the trip to Baltimore, the child lived only a few months.

William Ellery's signing at the risk of his fortune proved only too realistic. In December 1776, during three days of British occupation of Newport, Rhode Island, Ellery's house was burned, and all his property destroyed.

Richard Stockton, a New Jersey State Supreme Court Justice, had rushed back to his estate near Princeton after signing the *Declaration of Independence* to find that his wife and children were living like refugees with friends. They had been betrayed by a Tory sympathizer who also revealed Stockton's own whereabouts. British troops pulled him from his bed one night, beat him and threw him in jail where he almost starved to death. When he was finally released, he went home to find his estate had been looted, his possessions burned, and his horses stolen. Judge Stockton had been so badly treated in prison that his health was ruined and he died before the war's end. His surviving family had to live the remainder of their lives off charity.

Carter Braxton was a wealthy planter and trader. One by one his ships were captured by the British navy. He loaned a large sum of money to the American cause; it was never paid back. He was forced to sell his plantations and mortgage his other properties to pay his debts.

Thomas McKean was so hounded by the British that he had to move his family almost constantly. He served in the Continental Congress without pay, and kept his family in hiding.

Vandals or soldiers or both looted the properties of Clymer, Hall, Harrison, Hopkinson and Livingston. Seventeen lost everything they owned.

Thomas Heyward, Jr., Edward Rutledge and Arthur Middleton, all of South Carolina, were captured by the British during the Charleston Campaign in 1780. They were kept in dungeons at the St. Augustine Prison until exchanged a year later.

At the Battle of Yorktown, Thomas Nelson, Jr. noted that the British General Cornwallis had taken over the family home for his headquarters. Nelson urged General George Washington to open fire on his own home. This was done, and the home was destroyed. Nelson later died bankrupt.

Francis Lewis also had his home and properties destroyed. The enemy jailed his wife for two months, and that and other hardships from the war so affected her health that she died only two years later.

1 "Honest John" Hart, a New Jersey farmer, was driven from his wife's bedside when she was near death. Their thirteen children  
2 fled for their lives. Hart's fields and his gristmill were laid waste. For over a year he eluded capture by hiding in nearby  
3 forests. He never knew where his bed would be the next night and often slept in caves. When he finally returned home, he  
4 found that his wife had died, his children disappeared, and his farm and stock were completely destroyed. Hart himself died  
5 in 1779 without ever seeing any of his family again.

6 Such were the stories and sacrifices typical of those who risked everything to sign the *Declaration of Independence*. These  
7 men were not wild-eyed, rabble-rousing ruffians. They were soft-spoken men of means and education. They had security, but  
8 they valued liberty more. Standing tall, straight, and unwavering, they pledged:

9 "For the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of the Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to  
10 each other, our lives, our fortunes, and our sacred honor."

11 What have you done for your God and Country today?

## 12 **22.2 Freedom's Bell**

13 Freedom's Bell

14 Joel Hansen, one of the Directors of Citizens for Responsible Government, recently (1985) took a business trip to  
15 Philadelphia. The following is an excerpt from his journal.

16 The best thing about the trip was that I visited Independence Hall, and I saw and actually touched the Liberty Bell. What a  
17 thrill to be in the same room where those giants sat and, under the inspiration of Almighty God, laid the foundations of the  
18 philosophy and the law of freedom for these United States. To see the Rising Sun Chair where Washington presided over the  
19 Constitutional Convention, to hear the words of Franklin echoed in that same chamber by the guide, to behold the tables and  
20 chairs where those inspired founders sat and worked and stood and debated our fate, and to realize that here, probably more  
21 than anywhere else, liberty was born, to do these things, to enjoy that presence was a sacred experience for me. How blessed  
22 I am to be able to enter the place where Jefferson read his immortal words of life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness. I love  
23 this land, I love those men for their love of liberty and their pledge of their lives, their fortunes, and their sacred honors upon  
24 the altar of freedom, before the court of all mankind, and before that Creator who had given them life and had blessed them  
25 with the unalienable rights which they so beautifully articulated, fought for, and subsequently engraved into the Constitution  
26 of our blessed land. God bless those men and protect those hallowed halls wherein they walked.

27 I missed the Liberty Bell on my first visit, and found later that it was moved out of Independence Hall into the Green across  
28 the way. After my depositions on Friday I took a taxi back to that place to see and touch the bell. I thrilled to hear its history  
29 - that it had been cast in 1653 to commemorate the 50th year of the Charter of Wm. Penn, who had granted religious liberty  
30 to the citizens of Pennsylvania at its very founding. Pennsylvania was the first colony to grant that right, and so many  
31 oppressed people flocked there to taste the sweetness of that freedom denied almost everywhere else in the world. Penn  
32 remembered how he had been persecuted for being a Quaker in England and so granted freedom to his Pennsylvania colonists,  
33 thus began a tradition of liberty which has been handed down, over the centuries, to us.

34 Then the bell was rung on July 8, 1776, at the First Public Reading of the *Declaration of Independence*. How fitting that the  
35 inscription on the bell should say, "Proclaim liberty throughout all the land, to all the inhabitants thereof" - a phrase from  
36 Leviticus, an undeniable testimony that our liberties are rooted in our biblical heritage and were revealed to man in early  
37 history by the Creator Himself. To those who would secularize our government, I say, read the Liberty Bell and know that  
38 when you take God out of our government you will take liberty from the people. For you would cut the root of the tree upon  
39 which grow the delicious fruits of liberty, and you would destroy that faith upon which, like a great granite foundation, is  
40 built the self restraint of a Christian people who, because they are able to govern themselves, need no dictator to enforce  
41 order.

42 I listened as the guide told how the bell was named the Bell of Liberty by the abolitionists who recognized the great  
43 contradiction which slavery was to the inscription on the bell- "to all the inhabitants thereof." I heard how the bell had been  
44 sent on tour around the country to remind the inhabitants of their heritage of freedom, and how 50 replicas of it have been  
45 placed in all the State Capitols, that each state may know of its rightful place among these 50 sovereign states, inhabited by  
46 the Sons and Daughters of Liberty, the most blessed people upon the face of the earth. Then we were permitted to touch the

1 bell - to come into actual physical contact, as it were, with the 332 years of freedom's history embodied in that immortal  
2 symbol. I touched the lip, I felt the letters of the inscription, and once again I thrilled to taste the joy of liberty. I prayed that  
3 God would grant that this land would be preserved in righteousness and liberty that our children and grandchildren may also  
4 feast upon the fruits of liberty so dearly won and carefully cultivated by those Founding Fathers and the unnamed citizens  
5 who believed in those principles and gave their all that I today could stand and say, "I AM A FREE MAN!"

6 I thank God that I am an American, and I pledge to Him that I will be worthy of the trust placed in me to bequeath freedom,  
7 and faith, to the next generation.

### 8 **22.3 A Visitor From the Past**

#### 9 A VISITOR FROM THE PAST

10 By Thelan Paulk (1986)

*I had a dream the other night I didn't understand,  
A figure walking through the mist, with flintlock in his hand.  
His clothes were torn and dirty, as he stood there by my bed,  
He took off his three-cornered hat, and speaking low he said:  
We fought a revolution to secure our liberty,  
We wrote the Constitution, as a shield from tyranny.  
For future generations, this legacy we gave,  
In this, the land of the free and home of the brave.  
The freedom we secured for you, we hoped you'd always keep,  
But tyrants labored endlessly while your parents were asleep.  
Your freedom gone - your courage lost - you're no more than a slave,  
In this, the land of the free and the home of the brave.  
You buy permits to travel, and permits to own a gun,  
Permits to start a business, or to build a place for one.  
On land that you believe you own, you pay a yearly rent,  
Although you have no voice in choosing how the money's spent.  
Your children must attend a school that doesn't educate,  
Your moral values can't be taught, according to the state.  
You read about the current news in a very biased press,  
You pay a tax you do not owe, to please the IRS.  
Your money is no longer made of silver or of gold,  
You trade your wealth for paper, so life can be controlled.  
You pay for crimes that make our Nation turn from God to shame,  
You've taken Satan's number, as you've traded in your name.  
You've given government control to those who do you harm,  
So they can padlock churches, and steal the family farm.  
And keep our country deep in debt, put men of God in jail,  
Harass your fellow countryman while corrupted courts prevail.  
Your public servants don't uphold the solemn oath they're sworn,  
Your daughters visit doctors so children won't be born.  
Your leaders ship artillery and guns to foreign shores,  
And send your sons to slaughter, fighting other people's wars.  
Can you regain your Freedom for which we fought and died?  
Or don't you have the courage, or the faith to stand with pride?  
Are there no more values for which you'll fight to save?  
Or do you wish your children live in fear and be a slave?  
Sons of the Republic, arise and take a stand!  
Defend the Constitution, the Supreme Law of the Land!  
Preserve our Republic, and each God-given right!  
And pray to God to keep the torch of freedom burning bright!*

*As I awoke he vanished, in the mist from whence he came,  
His words were true, we are not free, and we have ourselves to blame.  
For even now as tyrants trample each God-given right,  
We only watch and tremble - too afraid to stand and fight.  
If he stood by your bedside in a dream while you're asleep,  
And wonder what remains of your rights he fought to keep.  
What would be your answer if he called out from the grave?  
Is this still the land of the free and home of the brave?*

1 Written and copyrighted by Thelan Paulk

## 2 **22.4 The War Inevitable**

### 3 THE WAR INEVITABLE

4 March 1775

5 Mr. President, it is natural to man to indulge in the illusions of hope. We are apt to shut our eyes against a painful truth - and  
6 listen to the song of that siren, till she transforms us into beasts. Is this the part of wise men, engaged in a great and arduous  
7 struggle for liberty? Are we disposed to be of the number of those who, having eyes, see not, and having ears, hear not, the  
8 things which so nearly concern their temporal salvation? For my part, whatever anguish of spirit it may cost, I am willing to  
9 know the whole truth; to know the worst and to provide for it.

10 I have but one lamp by which my feet are guided; and that is the lamp of experience. I know of no way of judging of the  
11 future but by the past. And judging by the past, I wish to know what there has been in the conduct of the British ministry for  
12 the last ten years to justify those hopes with which gentlemen have been pleased to solace themselves and the House? Is it  
13 that insidious smile with which our petition has been lately received? Trust it not, Sir; it will prove a snare to your feet. Suffer  
14 not yourself to be betrayed with a kiss. Ask yourself how this gracious reception of our petition comports with those warlike  
15 preparations which cover our waters and darken our land. Are fleets and armies necessary to a work of love and reconciliation?  
16 Have we shown ourselves so unwilling to be reconciled that force must be called in to win back our love? Let us not deceive  
17 ourselves, Sir. These are the implements of war and subjugation - the last arguments to which kings resort.

18 I ask gentlemen, Sir, what means this martial array, if its purpose be not to force us to submission? Can gentlemen assign any  
19 other possible motives for it? Has Great Britain any enemy in this quarter of the world, to call for this accumulation of navies  
20 and armies? No, Sir, she has none. They are meant for us; they can be meant for no other. They are sent over to bind and rivet  
21 upon us those chains which the British ministry have been so long forging.

22 And what have we to oppose to them? Shall we try argument? Sir, we have been trying that for the last ten years. Have we  
23 anything new to offer upon the subject? Nothing. We have the subject up in every light of which it is capable; but it has been  
24 all in vain. Shall we resort to entreaty and humble supplication? What terms shall we find which have not been already  
25 exhausted? Let us not, I beseech you, Sir, deceive ourselves longer. Sir, we have done everything that could be done to avert  
26 the storm which is now coming on. We have petitioned - we have remonstrated - we have supplicated - we have prostrated  
27 ourselves before the throne, and have implored its interposition to arrest the tyrannical hands of the ministry and parliament.  
28 Our petitions have been slighted; our remonstrances have produced additional violence and insult; our supplications have  
29 been disregarded; and we have been spurned with contempt from the foot of the throne. In vain, after these things, may we  
30 indulge the fond hope of peace and reconciliation.

31 There is no longer any room for hope; If we wish to be free - if we mean to preserve inviolate those inestimable privileges  
32 for which we have been so long contending - if we mean not basely to abandon the noble struggle in which we have been so  
33 long engaged, and which we have pledged ourselves never to abandon until the glorious object of our contest shall be obtained  
34 - we must fight! - I repeat it, Sir, we must fight; an appeal to arms and to the God of Hosts is all that is left us!

35 They tell us, Sir, that we are weak - unable to cope with so formidable an adversary. But when shall we be stronger? Will it  
36 be the next week or the next year? Will it be when we are totally disarmed, and when a British guard shall be stationed in  
37 every house? Shall we gather strength by irresolution and inaction? Shall we acquire the means of effectual resistance by

1 lying supinely on our backs and hugging the delusive phantom of hope, until our enemy shall have bound us hand and foot?  
2 Sir, we are not weak, if we make a proper use of those forces which the God of nature hath placed in our power. Three  
3 millions of people armed in the holy cause of liberty, and in such a country as that which we possess, are invincible by any  
4 force which our enemy can send against us. Besides, Sir, we shall not fight our battles alone. There is a just God who presides  
5 over the destinies of nations, and who will raise up friends to fight our battles for us. The battle, Sir, is not to the strong alone;  
6 it is to the vigilant, the active, the brave. Besides, Sir, we have no election. If we were base enough to desire it, it is now too  
7 late to retire from the contest. There is no retreat but in submission and slavery! Our chains are forged! Their clanking may  
8 be heard on the plains of Boston! The war is inevitable - and let it come! I repeat, Sir, let it come!

9 It is vain, Sir, to extenuate the matter. Gentlemen may cry, Peace, Peace - but there is no peace. - The war is actually begun!  
10 The next gale that sweeps from the north will bring to our ears the clash of resounding arms! Our brethren are already in the  
11 field! Why stand we here idle? What is it that gentlemen wish? What would they have? Is life so dear, or peace so sweet, as  
12 to be purchased at the price of chains and slavery? Forbid it, Almighty God! I know not what course others may take; but as  
13 for me, give me Liberty, or give me Death!

14 Patrick Henry, of Virginia, May 29, 1736 - June 6, 1799

## 15 **22.5 Be Strong**

*Be strong!  
We are not here to play, to dream, to drift;  
We have hard work to do, and loads to lift;  
Shun not the struggle-face it; 'tis God's gift.*

*Be strong!  
Say not, "The days are evil. Who's to blame?"  
And fold the hands and acquiesce-oh shame!  
Stand up, speak out, and bravely, in God's name.*

*Be strong!  
It matters not how deep entrenched the wrong,  
How hard the battle goes, the day how long;  
Faint not-fight on! To-morrow comes the song.*

16 Maltbie Davenport Babcock (1858-1901)

## 17 **22.6 Proclamation: A National Thanksgiving**

18 PROCLAMATION.  
19 A NATIONAL THANKSGIVING.

20 Whereas it is the duty of all nations to acknowledge the providence of Almighty God, to obey His will, to be grateful for His  
21 benefits, and humbly to implore His protection and favor; and

22 Whereas both Houses of Congress have, by their joint committee, requested me " to recommend to the people of the United  
23 States a day of public thanksgiving and prayer, to be observed by acknowledging with grateful hearts the many and signal  
24 favors of Almighty God, especially by affording them an opportunity peaceably to establish a form of government for their  
25 safety and happiness: "

26 Now, therefore, I do recommend and assign Thursday, the 26th day of November next, to be devoted by the people of these  
27 States to the service of that great and glorious Being who is the beneficent author of all the good that was, that is, or that will  
28 be; that we may then all unite in rendering unto Him our sincere and humble thanks for His kind care and protection of the  
29 people of this country previous to their becoming a nation; for the signal and manifold mercies and the favor, able  
30 interpositions of His providence in the course and conclusion of the late war; for the great degree of tranquillity, union, and

1 plenty which we have since enjoyed; for the peaceable and rational manner in which we have been enabled to establish  
2 constitutions of government for our safety and happiness, and particularly the national one now lately instituted; for the civil  
3 and religious liberty with which we are blessed, and the means we have of acquiring and diffusing useful knowledge; and, in  
4 general, for all the great and various favors which He has been pleased to confer upon us.

5 And also that we may then unite in most humbly offering our prayers and supplications to the great Lord and Ruler of Nations,  
6 and beseech Him to pardon our national and other transgressions; to enable us all, whether in public or private stations, to  
7 perform our several and relative duties properly and punctually; to render our National Government a blessing to all the  
8 people by constantly being a Government of wise, just, and constitutional laws, discreetly and faithfully executed and obeyed;  
9 to protect and guide all sovereigns and nations (especially such as have shown kindness to us), and to bless them with good  
10 governments, peace, and concord; to promote the knowledge and practice of true religion and virtue, and the increase of  
11 science among them and us; and, generally, to grant unto all mankind such a degree of temporal prosperity as He alone knows  
12 to be best.

13 Given under my hand, at the city of New York, the 3d day of October,  
14 A.D. 1789. Geo. WASHINGTON.

15 **22.7 What will you do without freedom?**

16 What will you do without freedom?

17 "What will you do without freedom? Will you fight? Fight and you may die; run, and you'll live, at least a while. And dying  
18 in your beds many years from now, how many of you would be willing to trade all the days, from that one to this, for one  
19 chance, JUST ONE CHANCE, to come back here and tell our enemies that they may take our lives but they'll never take  
20 our freedom? ALBA GU BRA! (FREEDOM FOREVER)" - William Wallace in *Braveheart*

21 **22.8 The Gettysburg Address**

22 The Gettysburg Address

23 On November 19, 1863, President Abraham Lincoln the battlefield at Gettysburg, gave the following speech:

24 Fourscore and seven years ago our fathers brought forth on this continent a new nation, conceived in liberty and dedicated to  
25 the proposition that all men are created equal. Now we are engaged in a great civil war, testing whether that nation or any  
26 nation so conceived and so dedicated can long endure. We are met on a great battlefield of that war. We have come to dedicate  
27 a portion of that field as a final resting-place for those who here gave their lives that that nation might live. It is altogether  
28 fitting and proper that we should do this. But in a larger sense, we cannot dedicate, we cannot consecrate, we cannot hallow  
29 this ground. The brave men, living and dead who struggled here have consecrated it far above our poor power to add or  
30 detract. The world will little note nor long remember what we say here, but it can never forget what they did here. It is for us  
31 the living rather to be dedicated here to the unfinished work which they who fought here have thus far so nobly advanced. It  
32 is rather for us to be here dedicated to the great task remaining before us-that from these honored dead we take increased  
33 devotion to that cause for which they gave the last full measure of devotion-that we here highly resolve that these dead shall  
34 not have died in vain, that this nation under God shall have a new birth of freedom, and that government of the people, by the  
35 people, for the people shall not perish from the earth.

36 **22.9 Saint Crispian Day's Speech**

37 William Shakespeare:  
38 Saint Crispian Day's Speech,  
39 From: KING HENRY V

40 WESTMORELAND:

41 O that we now had here but one ten thousand of those men in England that do no work to-day!

1 KING HENRY V:

2 What's he that wishes so?

3 My cousin Westmoreland? No, my fair cousin: If we are mark'd to die, we are enow to do our country loss; and if to live, the  
4 fewer men, the greater share of honour. God's will! I pray thee, wish not one man more. No, faith, my coz, wish not a man  
5 from England: God's peace! I would not lose so great an honour as one man more, methinks, would share from me. For the  
6 best hope I have. O, do not wish one more! Rather proclaim it, Westmoreland, through my host, that he which hath no stomach  
7 to this fight, let him depart; his passport shall be made and crowns for convoy put into his purse: We would not die in that  
8 man's company that fears his fellowship to die with us.

9 This day is called the feast of Crispian: He that outlives this day, and comes safe home, will stand a tip-toe when the day is  
10 named, and rouse him at the name of Crispian. He that shall live this day, and see old age, will yearly on the vigil feast his  
11 neighbours, and say 'To-morrow is Saint Crispian:' Then will he strip his sleeve and show his scars. and say 'These wounds I  
12 had on Crispin's day.'

13 Old men forget: yet all shall be forgot, but he'll remember with advantages what feats he did that day: then shall our names.  
14 familiar in his mouth as household words Harry the king, Bedford and Exeter, Warwick and Talbot, Salisbury and Gloucester,  
15 be in their flowing cups freshly remember'd. This story shall the good man teach his son; and Crispin Crispian shall ne'er go  
16 by, from this day to the ending of the world, but we in it shall be remember'd; we few, we happy few, we band of brothers;  
17 For he to-day that sheds his blood with me shall be my brother; be he ne'er so vile, this day shall gentle his condition: And  
18 gentlemen in England now a-bed Shall think themselves accursed they were not here, and hold their manhoods cheap whiles  
19 any speaks that fought with us upon Saint Crispin's day.

## 20 **22.10 The Swine Principle**

21 January 2, 2000 AD

22 Dear Cousin Christopher,

23 Salutations:

24 I commend you for your diligence of duty in defining and defending the doctrines of Eternal Sovereignty.

25 Rudyard Kipling penned these lines:

26 ALL I know of Freedom,  
27 ALL I need to know,  
28 THIS my Fathers won for me  
29 Long... Long ago.

30 In your quest of knowledge and with the assistance of what almost amounts to a common man's Urim and Thummim...the  
31 INTERNET, you have discovered documents and deeds of our FATHERS that have been hidden in the dark wallows of  
32 ignorance. Kipling alludes to the great motivating condition of the soul...GRATITUDE. And of course, we must ask, how  
33 can one be grateful if one is unaware.

34 Let me remind you of a little drama in the life of your own family that demonstrates the point. You remember the little patch  
35 of land your brother Dan purchased that was located off the beaten path in a secluded finger of Spanish Springs Valley near  
36 Pyramid Lake, Nevada. There wasn't a tree in sight...only sagebrush. The land was dry and parched with no surface water,  
37 was populated by jackrabbits, coyotes, horny toads, bull snakes, meandering cattle and visited occasionally by a cowboy on  
38 horseback. There was no road, only trails leading to the land.

39 In fact, Dan purchased the land from a map.

1 The land had to be later surveyed, right-of-ways obtained, a road built, a power line on poles constructed, a well sunk, the  
2 land cleared, fences built. ALL this and more had to be done step by step, year by year, dollar by dollar, and with a mortgage  
3 on the land to be paid by Dan who was earning his living as a brick layer and had also the privilege and responsibilities to  
4 provide for a large family of young children.

5 Dan said later, he had two things going for him in his youth...ignorance and confidence. Had he understood what he was up  
6 against when he purchased his dream he would have logically concluded it couldn't have been accomplished. But, with sweat  
7 of the brow, prayer and family help...the plot of land became a little farm or ranchette with a beautiful orchard of fruit trees  
8 and distinguished with scores of shade trees, literally becoming an oasis in the desert.

9 You know this story, Christopher, you were there helping in the beginning, you saw the transformation. What you don't know  
10 is that your wonderful grandmother Caroline Bendixsen Hansen passed on and left a few thousand dollars to her only son  
11 Oliver F. Hansen. At a crucial point when the mortgage was due Uncle Oliver, unaware of Dan's plight, said he was prompted  
12 from beyond the veil to give that money to Dan. The payment was made and Grandma Hansen's contribution became a hidden  
13 part of the farm's legacy and blessing to her posterity beginning immediately for her "baby boy" Oliver. Oliver loved horses,  
14 as a very good judge of horse flesh and a good rider. In his retirement years, often frustrated with the cares and cares of this  
15 old world, he found "recreational therapy" enjoying the horses and the surrounding mountains with family and friends at the  
16 farm. He lived long enough to enjoy the harvest festivity of gathering apples by the wheel barrow and savoring the taste of  
17 juice, hand pressed, from apples plucked freshly from the trees.

18 Dan built a home on the property and his eldest son moved in and is raising a new generation of Hansens on the farm. Part of  
19 their training involved 4-H. A little piglet was brought to the farm. He ran loose in the apple orchard never wanting for  
20 abundance of fallen apples. He swam in the stream of water, supplied from the reservoir, with the great grandchildren. The  
21 children rode on piglet's back, combed and curried and groomed this little swine...In short this little pig, that had no ability  
22 to appreciate the heritage of the farm, lived in HOGHEAVEN...right up and until he was butchered. I call that the swine  
23 principle.

24 Magnify that story a million or even a trillion times (considering the national debt) and you have the story of modern America  
25 with it's great legacy but, populated by inhabitants that consume the fruits of freedom while confusing comfort and abundance  
26 for liberty...and sadly, seem to lack the ability to truly appreciate their heritage.

27 Dear Cousin, keep up the good work.

28 I close this epistle with a quotation from Rudyard Kipling:

29 "As it will be in the future, it was at the birth of Man -  
30 There are only four things certain since social progress began -  
31 That the dog returns to his Vomit and the Sow returns to her Mire,  
32 And the burnt Fool's bandaged finger goes wabbling back to the Fire;  
33 And that after this is accomplished, and the brave new world begins  
34 When all men are paid for existing and no man must pay for his sins,  
35 As surely as Water will wet us, as surely as Fire will burn,  
36 The Gods of the Copybook Headings with terror and slaughter return!"

37 My appreciation,

38 Ian McGavin

### 39 **22.11 Eternal Principles to Ponder**

40 ETERNAL PRINCIPLES TO PONDER

41 Author unknown

- 42 1. You will never outgrow warfare, you simply must learn to fight. (Eph. 6:12)

- 1 2. God's purpose in your crisis is not your survival, but your education. (Deut.8 1-2)
- 2 3. Nothing is ever as bad as it first appears. (Psalms 138:7-8)
- 3 4. All great men attract Satanic attention. (John 1:9-12)
- 4 5. All men fall... Great men get back up. (Psalms 37:23-24)
- 5 6. Satan always attacks what he fears the most. (Matthew 2:3)
- 6 7. Struggle is the proof you have not yet been conquered. (II Cor. 4:8,9)
- 7 8. Satan's favorite entry point will always be through those closest to you. (Micah 7:6)
- 8 9. You will never win a spiritual battle logically. (II Cor. 10:3)
- 9 10. Pain is merely a passage to a miracle. (Psalms 30:5)
- 10 11. Warfare always surrounds the birth of a miracle. (Matt. 2:13)
- 11 12. Crisis always occurs at the curve of change. (Gen. 13:1, 6-7)
- 12 13. Satan always attacks those who are next in line for a promotion. (Job 2:3)
- 13 14. Stop looking at what you can see and start looking at what you can have. (Num. 14:8)
- 14 15. No one has been a loser longer than Satan. (Rev. 12:9)
- 15 16. Never speak words that make Satan think he's winning. (Dan. 3:17)
- 16 17. Battle is your chance for recognition..., both in heaven and hell. (I Tim. 6:12)

#### 17 Two Important Closing Truths

- 18 1. Your battle is always for a reason.
- 19 2. Your battle is always for a reason.

20 Well, go ahead and get back up and going! Something good is enroute from the Father today.

#### 21 **22.12 Round Prints In The Sand**

*One night I had a wondrous dream,  
One set of footprints there were seen,  
The footprints of my precious Lord,  
But mine were not along the shore.  
But then some stranger prints appeared,  
And I asked the Lord, "What have we here?"  
Those prints are large and round and neat,  
"But Lord, they are too big for feet."  
"My child," He said in somber tones,  
"For miles I carried you alone.  
I challenged you to walk in faith,  
But you refused and made me wait."  
"You disobeyed, you would not grow,  
The walk of faith, you would not know,  
I did not tire, but got fed up,  
So there I dropped you on your butt."  
"Because in life, there comes a time,  
When one must fight, and one must climb,  
When one must rise and take a stand,  
Or leave their butt prints in the sand."*

#### 22 **22.13 Shake It Off And Step Up**

23 A parable is told of a farmer who owned an old mule. The mule fell into the farmer's well. The farmer heard the mule 'braying'.  
24 After carefully assessing the situation, the farmer sympathized with the mule, but decided that neither the mule nor the well  
25 was worth the trouble of saving. Instead, he called his neighbors together and told them what had happened and enlisted them  
26 to help haul dirt to bury the old mule in the well and put him out of his misery.

1 Initially, the old mule was hysterical! But as the farmer and his neighbors continued shoveling and the dirt hit his back a  
2 thought struck the mule. It suddenly dawned on him that every time a shovel load of dirt landed on his back...HE SHOULD  
3 SHAKE IT OFF AND STEP UP! This he did, blow after blow. "Shake it off and step up...shake it off and step up!" he  
4 repeated to encourage himself. No matter how painful the blows, or distressing the situation seemed the old mule fought  
5 "panic" and just kept right on SHAKING IT OFF AND STEPPING UP!

6 It wasn't long before the old mule, battered and exhausted, STEPPED TRIUMPHANTLY OVER THE WALL OF THAT  
7 WELL! What seemed like it would bury him, actually blessed him all because of the manner in which he handled his  
8 adversity. THAT'S LIFE! If we face our problems and respond to them positively, and refuse to give in to panic, bitterness,  
9 or self-pity. THE ADVERSITIES THAT COME ALONG TO BURY US USUALLY HAVE WITHIN THEM THE  
10 POTENTIAL TO BENEFIT AND BLESS US!

11 Remember that FORGIVENESS, FAITH, PRAISE and HOPE, all are excellent ways to "SHAKE IT OFF AND STEP UP"  
12 out of the wells in which we find ourselves.

13 ANON

## 14 **22.14 There Are No Guarantees**

15 By Dawn Elise Hansen

16 The past year has been a banner year for those of us in the fight. We have had many successes. Because of the Internet we  
17 have access to many other people across this great country who are out in front with their knuckles bloody from battle. Many  
18 wonderful things have been revealed to those who chose to do battle. The men and women who share a wealth of information  
19 do it freely and without hesitation. They do it because they know the truth and want to set the masses free. They are treating  
20 their neighbors as they would wish to be treated. They do it because they can't help themselves. They do it freely and don't  
21 expect anything in return. They do it even though there are no guarantees. I have observed from a distance, through my  
22 husband, those people who want it now and they want it signed, sealed, and delivered. They do not wish to get their hands  
23 dirty, break a sweat or take any time to advance their own cause. If you ask them if they are prepared to go to jail, they say,  
24 "Of course not." These folks do not want their apple cart or comfort zones interrupted in anyway. They want guarantees and  
25 there simply are none to give.

26 We can search the Bible, the Founding Fathers papers and documents from every period since the beginning of time and we  
27 will have examples of people doing what is right and letting the consequences follow. For doing the right they lost their  
28 possessions, jobs, places in their communities, their families and even their lives. Did they wish that they had not stood tall  
29 and preached the truth? They certainly did not. Many even wished to do it over again.

30 I know from my own experiences that your devotion to the truth does not guarantee anything earthly. I have had many tests  
31 over the years and I can tell you that it hasn't been easy. My family has had financial ups and downs and it seems that the  
32 closer we get to the combinations of those who practice priestcraft that life often times gets much harder. But if you learn  
33 early on in the fight that there are no guarantees you will be much happier. Many times we see those who are doing the work  
34 of the dark one that seem to be blessed with health, money, position in the community and in the world. It is however our job  
35 to see from whom those blessings flow. It is up to us to keep on fighting and watch closely that we do not begin to envy that  
36 which is theirs and in doing so choose the wrong god.

37 More examples of this would be those who fought for our independence from England. There was no clear majority taking  
38 up arms. Many wanted to stay with English rule. They had money; lands, titles and they were far too comfortable to risk any  
39 of it to fight some silly little revolutionary war. But thankful we must be to those brave men and women who had a vision  
40 outside of their comfort zones. Many of these enlightened men died in battle and their families were left with nothing. Even  
41 years later those who had given us our lasting legacy were bankrupt and died penniless. How could we be expected to do  
42 anything less? Who guaranteed us that the road would be paved with gold? Who promised it would be easy? No one, that's  
43 who. Even our King and Creator said it would not be easy. So get real. Most things that we need to do in life to fight for our  
44 liberty and the liberty of our posterity won't be easy because the dark one goes after us in full force. He does not want us to  
45 succeed, but to fail. He is powerful and conniving and he does not like to lose.

1 We can beat him but it may take time. We may never see the fruits of our labor but maybe our children will. It may not be  
2 until long after we have passed from this world to the next that we will be rewarded but till then there are no guarantees.

### 3 **22.15 Alexander's Quest**

4 Alexander's Quest

5 By Nicholas Alexander Hansen

6 Prince Alexander gazed over the wall through the crenels into the courtyard below. The now unseen orange-red cobblestones  
7 were covered with a thick rolling mist drifting in from the eastern bog. It was an odd wind, and evil too, and it dampened his  
8 spirit as well as the castle walls. He peered out, trying to catch a glimpse of the sun but it was hopeless. The gray clouds had  
9 covered it's shining warmth for nearly a week now. The only twinkling was from the ruby eyes of Bill, the stone dragon that  
10 sat as silent sentry over his castle. These clouds had twirled across the sky just two days before princess Ateshea had been  
11 struck deathly ill. The healers had labored over her tirelessly but they had finally informed the prince that they were helpless  
12 as the sickness was not from within but was from without. She was being sucked dry of her essence, her beauty, her will to  
13 live by an unseen power.

14 A scream broke his melancholy as his hand instinctively grasped the sword at his side. This terror, deep within the bowels of  
15 the castle erupted again and Alexander raced for the stairs. He could hear, as he ran, the clatter of weapons and armor on the  
16 run from below and the bellowing of fearful uncertainty wrapped in courage. His knights greeted him in a seldom-used  
17 hallway leading to abandoned storage rooms. Alexander had to suppress a smile when he saw the hodge podge dress of the  
18 gathering. The scream had caught most of them either still sleeping or just getting dressed. Bits of armor were visible where  
19 they had been hastily strapped on. Some others wore only pants while others were attired only in their small clothes. Lord  
20 Brenson, all three hundred or so pounds of him, was clad only in his breastplate and loincloth, it was a sight Alexander could  
21 have lived without his whole life and not felt deprived.

22 The humor of the moment turned grim as the group of seasoned warriors parted to allow their prince a view. It was an awful  
23 sight, what used to be a man lay in a pool of his own gore, not cut from him by honest steel but melted as old candle wax.  
24 Even the skull was sagging and the fluid still steamed.

25 "Who was it?" Alexander choked.

26 "It was Bardoff," Corporal Nim said, "I can tell from the ring. He's carried it since his wife died. They say a witch killed her"

27 Alexander's ears perked, "I thought she died of an illness."

28 "If you can call withering away in but two weeks and going from a young beauty to an old hag an illness."

29 Alexander grabbed Nim and shoved him to the wall. "Why did you not inform me of this before now you fool! This same  
30 affliction is what plagues the princess."

31 Nim's eyes looked up with uncertainty. "It was common knowledge my liege and besides the princess's condition was not  
32 known to me."

33 Alexander's mind was a blur as he considered the possibilities. A witch... Bardoff's wife... but that was years... but what if  
34 she?... and didn't she live here in the castle... yes and it was... but why was Bardoff here? Did he hear of the princess's  
35 malady and go in search of?... Yes!!! With the certainty of truth the solid rock of the hallway quivered ever so slightly to  
36 reveal a door. A door that had never before been here. A door with a shining black pentagram held by a man with the head  
37 of a ram.

38 The smell of fear wafted through the hall as men who had faced death many times trembled. Here was evil, pure evil. The  
39 dread of every child's nightmare stood before them. This was the lair of Hillary, the Witch, sent from Hell to destroy every  
40 child. It was she who had destroyed their religion. It was she who had stolen the knowledge of God from the land and from  
41 their schools. And now she was replenishing her body by sucking the life from his sister, the princess.

1 With a rage so deep that it nearly burst the prince's soul he slammed into the door, shattering it from its hinges. A miasmic  
2 effluvium enveloped him and he spewed his breakfast in immediate response. A crone with snake-like limbs and a face of  
3 rotting flesh turned her startled eyes to glare at him. "Your sister is a strong one, she has fought hard but no one can resist  
4 me. And now I will bring down the full wrath of Hell upon you for disturbing my work."

5 Alexander raised his sword and attacked, but Hillary slithered through a crevasse in the wall. Alexander looked up and saw  
6 the gray sky above. "To the courtyard! she flees!" he commanded.

7 As the warriors broke through to fresh air a fearful sight met them. The stone dragon that had always seemed a friend now  
8 circled in the cloudy sky above. Red-orange flame shot from its lips and broadsword like talons raked the air. Atop its neck  
9 rode Hillary, directing Bill's every move.

10 Shields were raised in defense as Bill dove from the sky to rain fiery death upon its former friends. Men screamed as burning  
11 liquid stuck to skin and clothes alike. The prince turned and ran back to the tunnels, a faint glimmer of hope riding up in his  
12 memory. Alexander threw down his sword as he searched the witch's den, until he found what his heart told him was his only  
13 chance. In his hands he held a mirror with his own face glaring back, but beneath his own eyes were the eyes of his sister and  
14 deeper were a hundred other eyes and below them all were the burning eyes of Hillary. Slamming his fist into the glass the  
15 screams of the captured souls fled to freedom. The screams were soon followed by shouts of victory above. His plan had  
16 worked. Hillary's powers were but illusion and leaching off the lives of others.

17 Within a few days Princess Ateshea was better and the wind had changed, now coming from the west. The plague of the  
18 witch had ended and the books of God had been found. In truth they had never been lost, they were just covered by Illusion  
19 and Lies until the people no longer believed in them. Now that the truth was restored the people no longer believed the lies  
20 taught in the schools controlled by Hillary. Freedom reigned as God was once again worshiped, even in the schools.

## 23 Chapter 23: The Two United States

### 23.1 Introduction

#### The Two United States: Introduction

by Dan Meador

Gail and I share a life calling—Christian ministry. We believe our nation was established in a unique historical moment, and that the *Constitution of the United States* emerged as a divinely inspired compact to serve widely divergent interests. It was not something fabricated out of thin air. Massachusetts Bay Colony established the first American constitution for civil government in 1636, basing it on precepts set out in the Mayflower Compact, signed by Pilgrims when they first arrived at Plymouth Colony in 1620, so the fledgling nation had over a century and a half of experience with written constitutions before the *Constitution of the United States* was drafted in 1787. While the Constitution does not specifically credit God as ultimate authority, many of the men who participated in the Constitutional Convention were also delegates to the Second Continental Congress, and had signed the *Declaration of Independence*, pledging lives, fortunes, and sacred honor to the cause of liberty.

The *Declaration of Independence* justified severance from British rule by the “Laws of Nature and Nature’s God”—physical and moral law man can neither author nor amend. These are the two great branches of natural law, acknowledged since time in memorial even in civilizations that did not worship the Creator God acknowledged by Christian and Jewish religions. The Constitution preserves these principles by recognizing sovereignty of the people and preserving unalienable rights articulated in the *Declaration of Independence*. The Constitution must be understood in this context, the lineage being approximately six prior centuries in which principles of English-American common law were time-tested, proven, and articulated.

Central to this understanding is that nobody is above the law, and no manmade law contrary to the Laws of Nature and Nature’s God is or can be legitimate as it is destructive to the body politic and the cultural fabric. Those who usurp power not enumerated in and specifically delegated by the Constitution are in rebellion against man, nature and God—they are reprobate. As they pursue self-serving ends, they breach public trust, threaten peace and domestic tranquillity, and cause injury to countryman and kin. In the end, they bring destruction on themselves as history has proven time and again that tyranny has no friends.

### 23.2 Why Federal Law Doesn’t Apply to You

By The Watcher on the Wall

The United States and the Union of several States party to the *Constitution of the United States* are constitutional republics. The United States, by way of the Congress of the United States, has certain powers delegated to it by the Constitution. So far as the several States party to the Constitution are concerned, the United States may not exercise power not delegated by the Constitution. All power not delegated to the United States by the Constitution is reserved to the several States within their respective territorial borders, or to the people.

However, Congress is solely responsible for governing territory belonging to the United States. This authority is conferred at Article I, Section 8, clause 17 (Art. I § 8.17) and Art. IV § 3.2 of the Constitution. The responsibility for governing territory belonging to the United States is vested solely in Congress, it is not shared by the other two branches of federal government. Congress has absolute or what is described as plenary power—municipal power, police power, etc.

So far as its role as government for the several States party to the Constitution is concerned, the United States is an abstraction—it exists on paper only. It takes on physical reality after Congress positively activates constitutionally delegated powers through statutes enacted in accordance with Art. I § 7 of the Constitution. When statutes are in place authoring administrative or judicial activity, the “power” of the United States becomes manifest through people carrying out duties prescribed by law Congress has enacted.

1 The second physical aspect of the United States is constitutionally delegated authority to own land and other property. The  
2 only specific mention and direct estate is at Art. I § 8.17 of the Constitution, which specifies that the Congress may acquire  
3 land for the seat of government, and for forts, magazines, arsenals, dockyards, and other needful buildings. States in which  
4 these land purchases are made must cede jurisdiction over the lands in order for the United States to extend federal laws and  
5 judicial authority over them.

6 When the United States acquires land, and secures jurisdiction over it, the United States becomes a geographical entity. In  
7 other words, after Congress [acquired] the present District of Columbia from Virginia and Maryland, and the two state  
8 governments ceded jurisdiction, the United States became a geographical entity. The geographical United States within the  
9 framework of Art. 1 § 8.17 of the Constitution includes the District of Columbia, and all forts, magazines, arsenals, dockyards,  
10 and other needful buildings within the several States.

11 There is a second class of territory belonging to the United States that existed when government of the United States convened  
12 under the Constitution in 1789. This was territory claimed by the several States by way of the treaty of peace with Great  
13 Britain following the American Revolution. The land ceded by King George extended from the Great Lakes on the north to  
14 the Atlantic on the south, except for Florida—approximately everything from Illinois to Mississippi and Alabama. States of  
15 the Union ceded lands beyond their respective original borders to the United States in order to generate revenue to pay debts  
16 accumulated by the Revolution, with the condition that as they were settled and developed, the territories would become  
17 states of the Union.

18 Prior to these lands being admitted to the Union, they were territories of the United States. Under provisions of Art. IV § 3.2  
19 of the Constitution, Congress is charged with responsibility for making all needful rules and regulations for territories  
20 belonging to the United States. Therefore, Congress has historically established territorial governments, providing for law  
21 enforcement, courts, and everything else necessary for a territory to operate in an orderly fashion.

22 The first venture in this enterprise was framed by the Ordinance of 1787, providing for government of the Northwest  
23 territories. The United States was at that time operating under the Articles of Confederation. In 1789, when government of  
24 the United States convened under the Constitution, the Ordinance of 1787 was adopted as an existing covenant obligation,  
25 and was subsequently extended to Kentucky, and as applicable, to southern territories—Alabama and Mississippi included.  
26 The Louisiana Purchase from France, and subsequently acquisition of Florida from Spain, included treaty agreements to  
27 incorporate the land and people under the constitutional scheme, so the Ordinance of 1787 was applied as the development  
28 guide in acquired territories as well.

29 This pattern held until after the Spanish-American War. Islands ceded by Spain in 1898 were not incorporated in the  
30 constitutional scheme. In 1901, the Supreme Court of the United States ruled that while Puerto Rico and other islands ceded  
31 by Spain belonged to the United States, they were for certain purposes foreign to the several States and incorporated territories  
32 of the United States.

33 From the beginning, there were certain distinctions between the Union of States party to the Constitution and territories of  
34 the United States. For the most part, outlying territories were reasonably primitive, so many were first secured under military  
35 authority, then went through an evolution that progressed to representative government to development sufficient for self-  
36 rule. At that point, most territories established their respective constitutions and were admitted to the Union on equal standing  
37 with other States party to the Constitution.

38 Texas and California were two exceptions. Texas became an independent republic following the war of independence from  
39 Mexico, then joined the Union by way of treaty. Some time after Mexico ceded California, California became a state of the  
40 Union without formally going through territorial status. However, this has not been the case for islands ceded by Spain  
41 following the Spanish-American War and other island acquisitions other than Hawaii. With admittance of Hawaii and Alaska  
42 in 1959, the last of the incorporated territories of the United States became states of the Union, leaving only unincorporated  
43 territories, called insular possessions, under Congress' Article IV plenary power.

44 In 1946, the Philippines became an independent commonwealth, exiting the family of United States insular possessions. In  
45 1953, Puerto Rico became a commonwealth for purposes of local government, something on the order of states of the Union,  
46 but remained an insular possession of the United States subject to Congress' Article IV authority.

1 There are a total of five larger United States insular possessions with viable local governments, four of which have courts of  
2 the United States: Puerto Rico, Guam, the Northern Mariana Islands, the Virgin Islands, and American Samoa. The latter  
3 doesn't have a federal court. Smaller insular possessions are for the most part uninhabited, or at best, sparsely populated, or  
4 small enough that populations aren't truly viable small islands, reefs, etc. None are incorporated in the constitutional scheme,  
5 although Puerto Rico in particular has addressed the possibility of becoming a state of the Union.

6 After about 1870, Congress began reserving land for the United States within borders of new states admitted to the Union.  
7 This land fell within two classes: Unappropriated public lands, most of which was designated as national parks, forests, etc.;  
8 Yellowstone National Park was the first, and lands secured in trust for Native American Indians, most of which was used to  
9 establish reservations.

10 The current geographical United States includes the District of Columbia and federal enclaves where jurisdiction over forts,  
11 magazines, arsenals, dockyards and other needful buildings has been ceded by the several States respectively; lands retained  
12 in States admitted to the Union since approximately 1870; and insular possessions, along with territorial waters (12-mile  
13 limit, established under international law).

14 The geographical division determines Congress' power: Congress may exercise constitutionally delegated power, primarily  
15 under Art. I § 8 of the Constitution, throughout the "American empire." This is Congress' "general power."

16 Congress exercises the combined power of state, national, and even local government in territory belonging to the United  
17 States—in the "geographical" United States. This is Congress' special or limited jurisdiction.

18 Within the Union of several States, Congress may exercise only constitutionally delegated authority; within the  
19 "geographical" United States, Congress may exercise all power not explicitly or implicitly prohibited by the Constitution.  
20 Congress' general powers delegated by the Constitution are restricted to those specifically enumerated in the Constitution;  
21 Congress' special plenary power is permissive, limited only by implicit and explicit constitutional prohibitions, but may be  
22 exercised only in territory belonging to the United States.

23 Congress' authority in and over the geographical United States is somewhat on the order of a European government where  
24 what we understand as national government in the American system is also a state government. Where existing insular  
25 possessions are concerned, there is also the distinction that the Constitution applies to them only as Congress chooses to  
26 extend it. Governing principles are more under international than constitutional law.

27 This notion was first judicially framed by Chief Justice Marshall in an 1828 decision involving an incident in Florida while  
28 Florida was yet a territory of the United States.

29 The Constitution extends authority for Congress to declare war and make treaties. It also delegates authority for Congress to  
30 establish new states.

31 Although the Constitution is silent with respect to acquisition of new territory beyond borders of existing States, and implicitly  
32 bringing territories ceded by original States into the Union, these powers were construed to extend territorial acquisition  
33 authority, and vest Congress with authority to govern and determine disposition of acquired territory. Following the Louisiana  
34 Purchase, Thomas Jefferson drafted proposed amendments that would authorize incorporating Louisiana and other future  
35 states included in the Purchase into the constitutional scheme, but Congress elected to proceed without an amendment. Chief  
36 Justice Marshall, writing for the Supreme Court in 1828, was put in a position of having to rationalize a quarter century of  
37 territorial development. In the Article IV framework, he stepped from strict constitutional construction into the forum of  
38 international law. Thus, federal government found a capacity beyond strict constitutional restrictions. There was a whole  
39 separate world to be explored, and subdued, beyond constitutional bounds.

40 To the point of the Spanish-American War, there was an amount of solace for incorporated territories of the United States, as  
41 well as the Union of several States: Once the Constitution has been extended to a territory, it cannot be retracted. The  
42 Ordinance of 1787 provided an amount of protection as it specifies that people of the territories were assured of common law  
43 and due process in the course of the common law, along with most other rights secured in the first ten amendments to the  
44 Constitution. But unincorporated territories did not enjoy these assurances.

1 Insular possessions have gained an amount of ground by way of compacts and agreements, but remain outside the  
2 constitutional scheme. Virtually all of them are subjected to “due process in the course of the civil law” (admiralty/maritime),  
3 and remain within Coast Guard jurisdiction.

4 With the history of United States territorial acquisition and development in place, Congress’ distinct roles, and distinction  
5 between the Union of several States and the geographical United States, are reasonably clear. With this in mind, the reason  
6 precious little federal law applies to the Union of several States and people of the several States will be easier to grasp.

7 The underlying theme—“Follow the money!”

8 Article I § 8.5 of the Constitution provides that Congress shall have power “to coin Money, regulate the Value thereof...” and  
9 at Article I § 10.1, stipulates that, “No State shall ... make any Thing but gold and silver Coin a Tender in Payment of Debts  
10 ...” At Article I §8.6, Congress is granted power, “To provide for the Punishment of counterfeiting and Securities and current  
11 Coin of the United States...”

12 There has been no constitutional amendment to alter these provisions. They remain as firmly in place today as they were in  
13 1789. Yet there is precious little gold and silver coin in the United States or the Union of States—none in general circulation.

14 An old story has it that a woman once found her husband with another woman, but rather than panic, the man calmly got out  
15 of the bed, slipped on his clothes, straightened himself up, then asked his wife, “Are you going to believe me or your lying  
16 eyes?”

17 Does the Constitution mandate gold and silver coin as the national currency? Monetary theories and rationalization are  
18 irrelevant. Either the several States are prohibited from making any thing but gold and silver coin a payment for debt or they  
19 aren’t. Authority to “coin” money and prescribe punishment for counterfeiting “current coin” of the United States pretty well  
20 locks the matter down. Either the several States are prohibited from making any thing but gold and silver coin a payment for  
21 debt or they aren’t. If this prohibition lies against the States, it follows that American founders intended for Congress to  
22 provide gold and silver coin as a uniform monetary system. In fact, George Washington and others threatened not to attend  
23 the Constitutional Convention if the notion of a federal paper currency was going to be considered. The fact that minting gold  
24 and silver coin of the United States was immediately implemented speaks to the matter—the first Congress, so far as possible,  
25 carried out constitutional intent.

26 There was, however, an early glitch. Congress chartered a national bank. Money powers were waiting at the gate from the  
27 beginning. That experience soured, so the charter for the first national bank was terminated shortly after the turn of the  
28 century. Then a second was chartered. Andrew Jackson put an end to the second in 1836 when he vetoed the bill that would  
29 have renewed the charter. Jackson’s reasoning was simple: The Constitution does not delegate authority for Congress to  
30 establish a national bank. Jackson’s rationale has never been seriously challenged, and the Constitution has never been  
31 amended to authorize Congress to establish a national bank. Nor, for that matter, does the Constitution delegate authority for  
32 the United States to establish corporations, particularly private corporations.

33 Development in these areas came primarily during and after the Civil War. National banks were established in territories of  
34 the United States, but no central or national bank was established. Many of the nation’s railroads were also chartered and  
35 incorporated in territories, so were and are United States corporations. The underlying rationale is simple: Where territory of  
36 the United States is concerned, Congress has permissive rather than restrictive power—Congress can do anything not  
37 explicitly or implicitly prohibited by the Constitution.

38 One of the things entrenched powers wanted was authority to print paper money, and by way of paper, to create credit. The  
39 Supreme Court held out on this matter as late as 1880, but in 1884, the court almost completely reversed with the Julliard  
40 decision—the Constitution does not expressly prohibit Congress from printing paper money.

41 It does, however, prohibit the several States from making any thing but gold and silver coin a tender for payment of debt, and  
42 the court generally upheld this prohibition through the balance of the nineteenth century when states such as Washington  
43 demanded payment of taxes in gold and silver coin.

44 Generally speaking, United States paper money was accepted and honored as it was backed 100% by gold. It was more  
45 convenient with respect to weight and bulk, and it had other advantages, particularly as silver coin became less plentiful.

1 In 1913, Congress chartered the Federal Reserve System as a national bank of sorts. Federal Reserve banks provided several  
2 advantages, not the least of which was giving United States government access to ready credit created out of thin air. With  
3 authority to create credit, Federal Reserve banks could effectively manufacture money—or what appeared as money. From  
4 1914 to 1933, United States paper money issued in conjunction with Federal Reserve banks went from 100% backed by gold,  
5 to 40% backed by gold and the other 60% backed by obligations of the United States. Dilution of the currency dramatically  
6 increased money in circulation, which resulted in inflation, and partially fueled the speculative period producing the 1929  
7 equities collapse.

8 The three basic mechanisms the Federal Reserve uses to control credit and money supply, with all “money” generated through  
9 credit issue, are as follows: The percentage of reserve required on deposit by member banks; open window discount rates  
10 (interest charged to member banks, mostly Federal Reserve Banks); and the basic discount or interest rate. Through these  
11 mechanisms, the Federal Reserve maintains “hard money” or “soft money” policy, either shrinking or expanding credit and  
12 money supply and thereby regulating the overall economy. Through these mechanisms the Federal Reserve can single-  
13 handedly collapse the nation’s credit and monetary systems, or if there is perceived benefit, such as an election year might  
14 be, nurse a sick economy along. This is hardly the regulation of value the Constitution delegates to Congress.

15 If the Constitution hasn’t been amended, United States paper money (Federal Reserve [bank] Notes), and the Federal Reserve  
16 System, must be creatures of Congress’ Article IV authority in the geographical United States.

17 The Constitution says what it says—it hasn’t been amended either to authorize the several States to make anything other than  
18 gold and silver coin a tender for payment of debt, or authorizing Congress to take absolute control of the nation’s economic  
19 activity. Consequently, there can be but one conclusion: The Federal Reserve System and the Federal Reserve [bank] Note  
20 are legitimate, or have legitimate authority for use, only in the geographical United States subject to Congress’ Article IV §  
21 3.2 legislative jurisdiction. They are creatures within the scope of Congress’ special rather than general authority.

22 There is far more to the credit and monetary scams than will be treated here since the purpose at hand is to demonstrate proper  
23 application of federal law rather than to address any given subject. It should be obvious, however, that once fraudulent credit  
24 and monetary systems predicated on Congress’ Article IV § 3.2 legislative authority were in place, it was necessary to move  
25 all or nearly all of United States government under the same authority. Where the federal tax system is concerned, that was  
26 done via the revenue act of November 23, 1921—virtually all taxes promulgated under Congress’ Article I and Sixteenth  
27 Amendment authority were repealed. When they were reenacted, they came back in under Congress’ Article IV § 3.2  
28 legislative jurisdiction. No taxing statute in the current Internal Revenue Code (Internal Revenue Code of 1954 (Vol. 68A of  
29 the Statutes at Large), as amended in 1986 and since, evidenced in Title 26 of the United States Code) reaches the several  
30 States and the population at large. The taxes apply in three general categories: Income tax, Social Security tax, and the like  
31 apply only to agencies and employees of the United States; most other taxes, including inheritance, gambling, alcohol,  
32 tobacco, etc., are applicable only in the geographical United States; and some taxes cross over to customs duties.

33 One of the ways to determine geographical application of any given statute or act is by way of definitions contained in the  
34 act. For example, the Buck Act, which allegedly extended authority of “States” to tax on federal territory within a “State”, is  
35 a classical red herring. The Buck Act is reproduced in Title 4 of the United States Code, Sections 105-111. The term “State”  
36 is defined at 4 U.S.C. §111(d), as follows:

37 *(d) The term “State” includes any Territory or possession of the United States.*

38 Compare the above definition to the one in the act that authorized the several States, and eventually federal territories and the  
39 like, to enter cooperative agreements relating to crime. The original act was promulgated in June 1934, then the basis for the  
40 current form was reenacted in May 1949. It has been amended several times since, but no major revision since Alaska and  
41 Hawaii were admitted to the Union. The definition is at 4 U.S.C. §112(b):

42 *(b) For the purposes of this section, the term “State” means the several States and Alaska, Hawaii, the*  
43 *Commonwealth of Puerto Rico, the Virgin Islands, and the District of Columbia.*

44 There are several different principles of law that govern interpretation of the two definitions of “State” set out above, but  
45 probably the more concise is “Inclusio unius est exclusio alterius”, defined in Black’s Law Dictionary, 6th Edition, as  
46 follows:

1 *Inclusio unius est exclusio alterius. The inclusion of one is the exclusion of another. The certain*  
2 *designation of one person is an absolute exclusion of all others. Burgin v. Forbes, 293 Ky. 456, 169*  
3 *S.W.2d, 321, 325. This doctrine decrees that where law expressly describes particular situation to which*  
4 *it shall apply, an irrefutable inference must be drawn that what is omitted or excluded was intended to*  
5 *be omitted or excluded.*

6 *Kevin McC v. Mary A, 123 Misc.2d 148 N.Y.S.2d, 116, 118.*

7 *The definition of “State” at 4 U.S.C. §111(d) clearly applies only within the geographical United States*  
8 *subject to Congress’ Article IV § 3.2 legislative jurisdiction—Congress’ “special” or limited*  
9 *jurisdiction. Therefore, the Buck Act does not apply to the Union of several States party to the*  
10 *Constitution as they are not territories or possessions of the United States. All examples in the definition*  
11 *are of federal territories. When the definition employs the term “includes”, it can be expanded only to*  
12 *the class, not anything outside the class demonstrated by example. Since 4 U.S.C. §111(d) does not*  
13 *mention the several States, and does not name any of the several States as a class example, “[they were]*  
14 *intended to be omitted or excluded.”*

15 On the other hand, 4 U.S.C. §112(d) specifically includes the several States along with the District of Columbia, incorporated  
16 territories and insular possessions of the United States. This particular statute is the underlying authority for uniform laws  
17 relating to extradition, detainers, etc. Congress has legitimate constitutional authority to make these kinds of uniform rules,  
18 and this is one of the few acts classified in the United States Code that appears to issue under Congress’ general legislative  
19 power.

20 Now consider corresponding applications found in Rule 54(c) of the Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure. Per authority of  
21 the Supreme Court to promulgate rules, delegated at 28 U.S.C. §2072, any statute in conflict with the rules is automatically  
22 repealed, so the following applications govern Title 18 of the United States Code, which is entitled, “Crimes and Criminal  
23 Procedure”:

24 *“State” includes District of Columbia, Puerto Rico, territory and insular possession.*

25 *“Act of Congress” includes any act of Congress locally applicable to and in force in the District of*  
26 *Columbia, in Puerto Rico, in a territory or in an insular possession.*

27 Given the Latin principle above, it is clear that these applications do not extend to the Union of several States party to the  
28 Constitution. They address only real estate under Congress’ Article IV § 3.2 municipal authority. Therefore, little or nothing  
29 in Title 18 of the United States Code applies to the Union of several States and the population at large. Since all other penalty  
30 statutes in the United States Code fall back on Title 18 for procedure, the conclusion can be made that few if any criminal  
31 statutes classified in the United States Code are applicable to or within the several States except in federal enclaves such as  
32 military installations and national parks.

33 At 18 U.S.C. §5, the “United States” is defined as follows:

34 *§5. United States defined*

35 *The term “United States”, as used in this title in a territorial sense, includes all places and waters,*  
36 *continental and insular, subject to the jurisdiction of the United States, except the Canal Zone.*

37 There we find the word “territorial” - the territorial or geographical United States. The territorial United States is subject to  
38 Congress’ Article IV § 3.2 plenary power—the combined power of state and national, and in some instances, local  
39 government. The United States definition above, which is controlling for Title 18 of the United States Code, has application  
40 limited to territories and insular possessions of the United States.

41 Another clear clue is in the catchline for the Title 18 jurisdiction section, § 7: “Special maritime and territorial jurisdiction of  
42 the United States defined.” The section defines eight jurisdictions, none of which apply to the several States beyond borders  
43 of federal enclaves. No jurisdiction defined in Title 18 reaches the Union of several States party to the Constitution.

1 It is also important to understand that Congress can enact laws applicable exclusively within Article IV § 3.2 jurisdiction that  
2 fall within Article I delegated power, but not exercise the Article I power for general application. This is basically what  
3 happened following across-the-board repeal of excise taxes via the revenue act of November 23, 1921. Excise tax with general  
4 application were legitimate under Article I § 8 delegated authority, but when they were reenacted, they were promulgated  
5 under Congress' special authority within the geographical United States.

6 To see this, consider definitions of interstate and foreign commerce at 18 U.S.C. §10:

7 *§ 10. Interstate commerce and foreign commerce defined*

8 *The term 'interstate commerce', as used in this title, includes commerce between one State, Territory,*  
9 *Possession, or the District of Columbia and another State, Territory, Possession, or the District of*  
10 *Columbia.*

11 The term "foreign commerce", as used in this title, includes commerce with a foreign country.

12 The term "State" must have the definition or application set out in Rule 54(c) of the Federal Rules of Criminal Procedure in  
13 order to maintain consistency and agreement: "'State' includes the possession." Examples in the 18 U.S.C. §10 definition of  
14 interstate principle set out above governs: That which was omitted or excluded was intended to be omitted or excluded.

15 The Federal Register Act provides a convenient test for the allegation that Title 18 of the United States Code is applicable  
16 only in the geographical United States subject to Congress' Article IV § 3.2 municipal authority. Of particular import, 44  
17 U.S.C. §1505(a)(1) stipulates that all "Presidential proclamations and Executive Orders, except those not having general  
18 applicability and legal effect or effective only against Federal agencies or persons in their capacity as officers, agents, or  
19 employees thereof," must be published in the Federal Register. The subsection concludes, "For the purposes of this chapter  
20 every document or order which prescribes a penalty has general applicability and legal effect."

21 The legalese mumbo-jumbo is designed to make understanding as difficult as possible, but the mandate for publication of  
22 delegations of authority, regulations, etc., is articulated in Note 16, 44 U.S.C.A. §1505, by the following decision:

23 *The Administrative Procedure Act, § 551 et seq., of Title 5, and this chapter [44 U.S.C. §§ 1501 et seq.]*  
24 *require publication, irrespective of actual notice, as a prerequisite to issuance of a regulation making*  
25 *certain acts criminal. Hotch v. U.S., 1954, 212 F.2d. 280, 14 Alaska 594*

26 There are no regulations (see Code of Federal Regulations titles) for Title 18 of the United States Code. Therefore, by terms  
27 of the Federal Register Act, there can be only three applications of penalty statutes classified in Title 18 of the United States  
28 Code: They can apply to, (1) agencies and officers, employees and agents of the United States, (2) territories and insular  
29 possessions of the United States, and (3) United States admiralty and maritime jurisdiction. All of the applications, or  
30 jurisdictions, are special in nature. Congress' authority to regulate government, and to define and punish piracy and other  
31 offenses on the high seas, are Article I § 8 delegated powers, but the special territorial jurisdiction falls under Article IV §  
32 3.2 municipal authority.

33 There is yet another erroneous fly in the ointment to be examined: Virtually all civil litigation and criminal prosecution by  
34 government officials is in the name of the "United States of America", not the "United States."

35 This detail cannot be overlooked. The *Constitution of the United States*, as the Articles of Confederation before, vests  
36 authority in the governmental entity designated as the United States. Article I § 1 of the Constitution vests legislative authority  
37 in the Congress of the United States; Article II establishes the President of the United States; and Article III vests judicial  
38 authority of the United States in the supreme Court of the United States and whatever inferior courts Congress might establish.  
39 The Tenth Amendment prohibits the United States from exercising power not delegated by the Constitution.

40 The "United States of America" is an historically significant name. Article I of the Articles of Confederation established the  
41 several party States as the United States of America, and the people of the United States of America established the  
42 *Constitution of the United States* (Preamble). But each of the several States is sovereign within its borders except for powers  
43 delegated to the United States by the Constitution. The people of this nation have vested no authority in a governmental entity

1 known as the “United States of America”, and state and national constitutions do not delegate authority for officers of the  
2 several States and the United States to unilaterally establish a new national power.

3 Resolving the mystery of who or what the “United States of America” is somewhat like walking through a house of mirrors,  
4 but two conclusions can be drawn from available evidence: (1) the United States of America is a governmental entity foreign  
5 to the United States, and (2) the United States of America is a geographical entity.

6 The first capacity of the Assistant Attorney General is found at 28 C.F.R., Part 0.55. At Part 0.55(b), the delegation order  
7 specifies that the Assistant Attorney General will conduct, supervise, or handle, “Cases involving criminal frauds against the  
8 United States...,” and at Part 0.55(s), the Assistant Attorney General over the Criminal Division of the Department of Justice  
9 is required to conduct, supervise, or handle, “Civil proceedings in which the United States is plaintiff...” In other words, the  
10 “United States” is principal of interest in the basic delegation of authority for the Criminal Division of the Department of  
11 Justice.

12 However, at 28 C.F.R., Part 0.64-1, the delegation to the Assistant Attorney General over the Criminal Division authorizes  
13 him to serve as agent for a distinctly separate entity, the “United States of America.” The delegation also authorizes him to  
14 redelegate this authority to Deputy Assistant Attorney’s General in the Criminal Division, or to the Director and Deputy  
15 Directors of the Office of International Affairs, Criminal Division. The entire delegation order, as it appears in the Code of  
16 Federal Regulations, is as follows:

17 The Assistant Attorney General in charge of the Criminal Division shall have the authority and perform the functions of the  
18 “Central Authority” or “Competent Authority” (or like designation) under treaties and executive agreements between the  
19 United States of America and other countries on mutual assistance in criminal matters which designate the Attorney General  
20 or the Department of Justice as such authority. The Assistant Attorney General, Criminal Division, is authorized to redelegate  
21 this authority to the Deputy Assistant Attorneys General, Criminal Division, and to the Director and Deputy Directors of the  
22 Office of International Affairs, Criminal Division.

23 In order to establish that the “United States of America” is a government or some other form of entity foreign to the “United  
24 States”, it is not necessary to prove the precise who, what or where, it is only necessary to prove that the United States of  
25 America is separate and distinct from the United States. The above delegations of authority to the Assistant Attorney General  
26 over the Criminal Division of the Department of Justice do that—Part 0.55 establishes his capacity in relation to offenses  
27 against the United States; Part 0.64-1 establishes his capacity as agent for the United States of America. They are clear and  
28 distinct capacities. Therefore, the United States of America is a government or political compact established under treaties  
29 and executive agreements which is foreign to the United States; whether geographically or in the sense that a donor heart is  
30 alien and foreign to a heart transplant recipient.

31 Delegations to the Director of the Bureau of Prisons are even clearer. The Director and his officers (wardens) are authorized  
32 to (1) imprison people convicted of offenses against the United States, (2) accept and imprison prisoners transferred from the  
33 United States of America, and (3) accept and imprison prisoners transferred from the District of Columbia. District of  
34 Columbia prisoners will not be considered in this context.

35 The Director of the Bureau of Prisons relating to offenses against the United States is at 28 C.F.R., Part 0.96, reproduced in  
36 relative part:

37 *The Director of the Bureau of Prisons is authorized to exercise or perform any of the authority,*  
38 *functions, or duties conferred or imposed upon the Attorney General by any law relating to the*  
39 *commitment, control or treatment of persons (including insane prisoners and juvenile delinquents)*  
40 *charged with criminal offenses against the United States...*

41 The Director’s capacity as agent of the United States of America is at 28 C.F.R., Part 0.96b:

42 *§ 0.96b Exchange of prisoners*

43 *The Director of the Bureau of Prisons and officers of the Bureau of Prisons designated by him are*  
44 *authorized to receive custody of offenders and to transfer offenders to and from the United States of*  
45 *America under a treaty as referred to in Public Law 95-144; to make arrangements with the States and*

1           to receive offenders from the States for transfer to a foreign country; to act as an agent of the United  
2           States to receive the delivery from a foreign government of any person being transferred to the United  
3           States under such a treaty; to render to foreign countries and to receive from them certifications and  
4           reports required under a treaty; and to receive custody and carry out the sentence and imprisonment  
5           of such a transferred offender as required by that statute and any such treaty.

6           The delegation order above clearly distinguishes between the United State of America and the United States. The Director  
7           and designated officers, wardens, are “...authorized to receive custody of offenders ... from the United States of America ...,”  
8           and “to act as an agent of the United States to receive the delivery from a foreign government of any person transferred to the  
9           United States under such a treaty ...” Once the Director and his designated officers receive custody of offenders from a foreign  
10          government, they become agents of that government by carrying out the sentence imposed by the foreign government.

11          This bit of “hide the truth with legalese mumbo-jumbo” becomes clearer via the Interstate Agreement on Detainers Act  
12          (Pub.L. 91-538, Dec. 9, 1970, 94 Stat. 1397 et seq.). In section 2 of the Act, the United States and the District of Columbia  
13          are made parties to the agreement:

14          The Interstate Agreement on Detainers is hereby enacted into law and entered into by the United States on its own behalf and  
15          on behalf of the District of Columbia with all jurisdictions legally joining in substantially the following form:

16          In Article II (a) of the Act, the “United States of America” is defined as a “State”:

17                   *“State” shall mean a State of the United States; the United States of America; a territory or possession*  
18                   *of the United States; the District of Columbia; the Commonwealth of Puerto Rico.*

19          Delegations of authority at 28 C.F.R., Parts 0.55, 0.64-1, 0.96 and 0.96b, and the above cites from the Interstate Agreement  
20          on Detainers Act clearly demonstrate the two critical elements: The United States of America is an entity defined by act of  
21          Congress as a State, which means it is geographical and territorial, and it is a government foreign to the United States.

22          Finally, the “United States of America, ss, President of the United States”, is principal of interest in courts of Puerto Rico and  
23          the Virgin Islands (48 U.S.C. §§874 & 1406f), and probably other United States courts in the larger insular possessions, those  
24          being located in Guam and the Northern Mariana Islands. There is no statutory authority authorizing the “United States of  
25          America” as principal of interest in courts of the United States situated in the Union of several States party to the Constitution.  
26          In fact, it is reasonably easy to demonstrate that all civil and/or criminal actions prosecuted on behalf of the United States of  
27          America in United States District Courts presume admiralty and maritime jurisdiction of the territorial United States District  
28          Court of the Virgin Islands.

29          Where this discourse serves the limited purpose of demonstrating that precious little current federal law applies in and to the  
30          Union of several States, and people of the several States, whether citizens or aliens lawfully admitted to the several States, it  
31          isn’t necessary to address motive beyond what is necessary to assist with understanding, and accepting, why elected and  
32          appointed public servants left constitutionally delegated authority behind to exit through the Article IV § 3.2 loophole, then  
33          establish a nonconstitutional government entity—a political compact or alliance—foreign to the United States.

34          Motive is ages old—the lust, and greed, for wealth and power. For the first time in history, the alliance behind the scheme is  
35          postured for true global conquest. But the conquest is without authority of law. Perpetrators must step beyond constitutional,  
36          statutory, and regulatory authority in order to impose what is glibly described as private international law—a system which  
37          is slightly more subtle in means, if not effect, than methods employed by Vandals to sack the Roman Empire.

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40  
41  
42

## **24 Chapter 24: Jury Nullification**

### **24.1 The purpose of a jury**

By Christopher Holloman Hansen

Accepting Sovereignty comes with many responsibilities. One of our most important duties is that of Jury Duty for both Petit and Grand Juries. Justice Byron White said this concerning juries, “The purpose of a jury is to guard against the exercise of arbitrary power—to make available the commonsense judgment of the community as a hedge against the over-zealous or mistaken prosecutor and in preference to the professional or perhaps over conditioned or biased response of a judge.” Juries are established in the United States so that twelve Sovereigns (peers, equals, kings and queens) can decide if a fellow Sovereign has violated the laws of God by injuring another Sovereign’s rights. The Servants: Judges, Prosecutors, Sheriffs, Police, etc. cannot convict you. They cannot, without the UNANIMOUS approval of a jury of Sovereigns, take away your property, liberty, or life. These unalienable rights must be defended by every Sovereign as if they were voting concerning their own rights, because they are.

This is very important to understand. One informed Sovereign can vote against an unjust and/or unconstitutional law and keep it from being enforced. Juries are the opportunity for unelected officials, We the People, to vote directly on the laws enacted by our servants (congress, State legislatures). If we feel the laws are unjust or unconstitutional it is not just our right but our duty to cast our vote against that law by voting not guilty. Unjust laws cannot, therefore, be enforced and the bad law or a law that tried to usurp power or authority; or a law that is in violation of eternal Maxims and God’s laws becomes useless and We the People have defended our unalienable rights without firing a single shot. John Adams said it this way:

It is not only the juror’s right, but his duty to find the verdict according to his own best understanding, judgement and conscience, though in direct opposition to the instruction of the court.

Juries are our opportunity to interpret the Constitution. If the Supreme Court of the United States upholds a law enacted by Congress and signed by the President and Juries will not convict people that violate those laws then the law becomes unenforceable. This happened just before the Civil War when juries would not convict Sovereigns that were helping fugitive slaves. The executive, legislative and judicial branches are only servants of the people and only We the People can convict another Sovereign.

Juries give the people the right to rebel without anarchy or blood shed. It is a peaceful alternative to check tyrannical government in its beginning stages. It is unlimited and unrestricted power over government enforcement as the law of the case and can be exercised by one single Sovereign that feels a law is morally wrong or that the government has not demonstrated beyond a reasonable doubt that a Sovereign has violated a just law. Even a Sovereign that is guilty of harming the rights of a fellow Sovereign can be acquitted if the jury feels that the government violated the law in proving him guilty. This is an important and difficult decision but must be made and is the proper choice as no single individual is ever in the position to harm the rights of people like the police and other government agencies. The slightest encroachment on the rights of the most despicable person is an encroachment on the rights of every Sovereign Citizen and must not be tolerated.

Jury duty is the first defense against tyranny. Below are two essays on Juries that will help all to understand this responsibility.

*I consider trial by jury as the only anchor yet imagined by man by which a government can be held to the principles of its constitution.  
[Thomas Jefferson, 1789]*

*Jurors should acquit, even against the judge’s instruction... if exercising their judgement with discretion and honesty they have a clear conviction the charge of the court is wrong.  
[Alexander Hamilton, 1804]*

### **24.2 Juror’s Handbook**

1 **From the Fully Informed Jury Association**

2 Did you know that you qualify for another, much more powerful vote than the one which you cast on election day? This  
3 opportunity comes when you are selected for jury duty, a position of honor for over 700 years.

4 The principle of a Common Law Jury or Trial by the Country was first established on June 15, 1215 at Runnymede, England  
5 when King John signed the Magna Carta, or Great Charter of our Liberties. It created the basis for our Constitutional, system  
6 of Justice.

7 JURY POWER in the system of checks and balances:

8 In a Constitutional system of justice, such as ours, there is a judicial body with more power than Congress, the President, or  
9 even the Supreme Court. Yes, the trial jury protected under our Constitution has more power than all these government  
10 officials. This is because it has the final veto power over all “acts of the legislature” that may come to be called “laws.”

11 In fact, the power of jury nullification predates our Constitution. In November of 1734, a printer named John Peter Zenger  
12 was arrested for seditious libel against his Majesty’s government. At that time, a law of the Colony of New York forbid any  
13 publication without prior government approval. Freedom of the press was not enjoyed by the early colonialists! Zenger,  
14 however, defied this censorship and published articles strongly critical of New York colonial rule.

15 When brought to trial in August of 1735, Zenger admitted publishing the offending articles, but argued that the truth of the  
16 facts stated justified their publication. The judge instructed the jury that truth is not justification for libel. Rather, truth makes  
17 the libel more vicious, for public unrest is more likely to follow true, rather than false claims of bad governance. And since  
18 the defendant had admitted to the “fact” of publication, only a question of “law” remained.

19 Then, as now, the judge said the “issue of law” was for the court to determine, and he instructed the jury to find the defendant  
20 guilty. It took only ten minutes for the jury to disregard the judge’s instructions on the law and find Zenger NOT GUILTY.

21 That is the power of the jury at work; the power to decide the issues of law under which the defendant is charged, as well as  
22 the facts. In our system of checks and balances, the jury is our final check, the people’s last safeguard against unjust law and  
23 tyranny.

24 **A Jury’s Rights, Powers, and Duties:**

25 But does the jury’s power to veto bad laws exist under our Constitution?

26 It certainly does! At the time the Constitution was written, the definition of the term “jury” referred to a group of citizens  
27 empowered to judge both the law and the evidence in the case before it. Then, in the February term of 1794, the Supreme  
28 Court conducted a jury trial in the case of the *State of Georgia v. Brailsford* (3 Dall 1). The instructions to the jury in the first  
29 jury trial before the Supreme Court of the United States illustrate the true power of the jury. Chief Justice John Jay said: “It  
30 is presumed, that juries are the best judges of facts; it is, on the other hand, presumed that courts are the best judges of law.  
31 But still both objects are within your power of decision.” Jay continued, “...you have a right to take it upon yourselves to  
32 judge of both, and to determine the law as well as the fact in controversy”.

33 So you see, in an American courtroom there are in a sense twelve judges in attendance, not just one. And they are there with  
34 the power to review the “law” as well as the “facts”! Actually, the “judge” is there to conduct the proceedings in an orderly  
35 fashion and maintain the safety of all parties involved.

36 As recently as 1972, the U.S. Court of Appeals for the District of Columbia said that the jury has an

37 *“unreviewable and irreversible power... to acquit in disregard of the instructions on the law given by*  
38 *the trial judge...”*

39 *U.S. v. Dougherty, 473 F.2d. 1113, 1139 (1972)]*

40 Or as this same truth was stated in a earlier decision by the United States Court of Appeals for the District of Maryland:

1           *"We recognize, as appellants urge, the undisputed power of the jury to acquit, even if its verdict is*  
2 *contrary to the law as given by the judge, and contrary to the evidence. This is a power that must exist*  
3 *as long as we adhere to the general verdict in criminal cases, for the courts cannot search the minds of*  
4 *the jurors to find the basis upon which they judge. If the jury feels that the law under which the defendant*  
5 *is accused, is unjust, or that exigent circumstances justified the actions of the accused, or for any reason*  
6 *which appeals to their logic of passion, the jury has the power to acquit, and the courts must abide by*  
7 *that decision."*

8           *[U.S. v. Moylan, 417 F.2d. 1002, 1006 (1969)]*

9   YOU, as a juror armed with the knowledge of the purpose of a jury trial, and the knowledge of what your Rights, powers,  
10 and duties really are, can with your single vote of not guilty nullify or invalidate any law involved in that case. Because a  
11 jury's guilty decision must be unanimous, it takes only one vote to effectively nullify a bad "act of the legislature". Your one  
12 vote can "hang" a jury; and although it won't be an acquittal, at least the defendant will not be convicted of violating an unjust  
13 or unconstitutional law.

14   The government cannot deprive anyone of "Liberty" without your consent!

15   If you feel the statute involved in any criminal case being tried before you is unfair, or that it infringes upon the defendant's  
16 God-given inalienable or Constitutional rights, you can affirm that the offending statute is really no law at all and that the  
17 violation of it is no crime; for no man is bound to obey an unjust command. In other words, if the defendant has disobeyed  
18 some man-made criminal statute, and the statute is unjust, the defendant has in substance, committed no crime. Jurors, having  
19 ruled then on the justice of the law involved and finding it opposed in whole or in part to their own natural concept of what  
20 is basically right, are bound to hold for the acquittal of said defendant.

21   It is your responsibility to insist that your vote of not guilty be respected by all other members of the jury. For you are not  
22 there as a fool, merely to agree with the majority, but as a qualified judge in your right to see that justice is done. Regardless  
23 of the pressures or abuse that may be applied to you by any or all members of the jury with whom you may in good conscience  
24 disagree, you can await the reading of the verdict secure in the knowledge you have voted your conscience and convictions,  
25 not those of someone else.

26   So you see, as a juror, you are one of a panel of twelve judges with the responsibility of protecting all innocent Americans  
27 from unjust laws.

### 28   **Jurors Must Know Their Rights:**

29   You must know your rights! Because, once selected for jury duty, nobody will inform you of your power to judge both law  
30 and fact. In fact, the judge's instructions to the jury may be to the contrary. Another quote from *U.S. vs Dougherty* (cited  
31 earlier): "The fact that there is widespread existence of the jury's prerogative, and approval of its existence as a necessary  
32 counter to case-hardened judges and arbitrary prosecutors, does not establish as an imperative that the jury must be informed  
33 by the judge of that power".

34   Look at that quote again. the court ruled jurors have the right to decide the law, but they don't have to be told about it. It may  
35 sound hypocritical, but the Dougherty decision conforms to an 1895 Supreme Court decision that held the same thing. In  
36 *Sparf vs U.S.* (156 U.S. 51), the court ruled that although juries have the right to ignore a judge's instructions on the law, they  
37 don't have to be made aware of the right to do so.

38   Is this Supreme Court ruling as unfair as it appears on the surface? It may be, but the logic behind such a decision is plain  
39 enough.

40   In our Constitutional Republic (note I didn't say democracy) the people have granted certain limited powers to government,  
41 preserving and retaining their God-given inalienable rights. So, if it is indeed the juror's right to decide the law, then the  
42 citizens should know what their rights are. They need not be told by the courts. After all, the Constitution makes us the  
43 masters of the public servants. Should a servant have to tell a master what his rights are? Of course not, it's our responsibility  
44 to know what our rights are!

1 The idea that juries are to judge only the “facts” is absurd and contrary to historical fact and law. Are juries present only as  
2 mere pawns to rubber stamp tyrannical acts of the government? We The People wrote the supreme law of the land, the  
3 Constitution, to “secure the blessings of liberty to ourselves and our posterity.” Who better to decide the fairness of the laws,  
4 or whether the laws conform to the Constitution?

5 Sometime in the future, you may be called upon to sit in judgment of a sincere individual being prosecuted (persecuted?) for  
6 trying to exercise his or her Rights, or trying to defend the Constitution. If so, remember that in 1804, Samuel Chase, Supreme  
7 Court Justice and signer of the *Declaration of Independence* said: “The jury has the Right to judge both the law and the facts”.  
8 And also keep in mind that “either we all hang together, or we most assuredly will all hang separately”.

9 You now understand how the average citizen can help keep in check the power of government and bring to a halt the  
10 enforcement of tyrannical laws. Unfortunately, very few people know or understand this power which they as Americans  
11 possess to nullify oppressive acts of the legislature.

12 America, the Constitution and your individual rights are under attack! Will you defend them? READ THE CONSTITUTION,  
13 KNOW YOUR RIGHTS! Remember, if you don’t know what your Rights are, you haven’t got any!

### 14 **24.3 The Evolution of Jury Power**

#### 15 **The Evolution of Jury Power** 16 **Published in the USABULLETIN, CUMULATIVE INDEX March 1999**

17 David Farnham, Senior Trial Attorney  
18 Office of Consumer Litigation  
19 US Department of Justice—Civil Division

20 **Editor’s note:** If you think that these beliefs, concerning the power of juries, are just extremism, please make note of who  
21 the author is.

22 The idea of jury nullification is generally viewed as an abuse of power by twelve citizens whose only legitimate role is to  
23 apply the law as given to them by a judge to the facts that they find in a case. Yet it has not always been so. There are legal,  
24 historical, and philosophical arguments to justify a jury’s right—as opposed to its inherent power—to nullify the judge’s  
25 instructions on the law.

26 Medieval English juries were not called to sit in impartial judgment of facts passively presented to them. Instead, they were  
27 supposed to render a verdict based upon their own knowledge of the facts. Jurors were called from the location of the crime,  
28 which was the origin of the notion of a trial venue and which is the very opposite of the modern concept of a trial jury ignorant  
29 of the facts, parties, and witnesses. Nonetheless, problems arose with jurors because of the costs involved with serving. Jurors  
30 had to pay for their own transportation to the town where the court was sitting, and had to bear their expenses of room and  
31 board for the duration of the case. Consequently, wealthier litigants were tempted to “help” jurors with these costs. As the  
32 line between assistance and bribery became blurred, there necessarily arose the need to reverse corrupt verdicts. The only  
33 means then available was by a writ of attain, in which a super-jury of twenty-four was summoned not only to reconsider the  
34 facts disputed in the first trial, but also to try the first jury for perjury. If the first judgment was demonstrably false, then the  
35 first panel of jurors must have violated their oath to tell the truth about the facts known to them. If convicted, the original  
36 jurors faced severe penalties for their malfeasance, such as imprisonment and forfeiture of all possessions to the King.

37 The logic for such severe punishment ebbed as the function of the jury changed. With the increased presentation of evidence  
38 and testimony to assist the jury’s fact-finding effort, jurors were no longer expected to act based on their own knowledge.  
39 Thus, a “wrong” verdict was more likely to result from a good faith mistake than from juror “perjury,” and at a time when  
40 there were the beginnings of an appeal process. Although attain fell into disuse, it did not disappear from the law. Instead, it  
41 became viewed as a means of controlling an obstinate jury. Even Draconian punishment could not always guarantee a verdict  
42 in strict accordance with the law when powerful political sympathies were involved. For instance, in 1544 Sir Nicholas  
43 Throckmorton was acquitted on charges of high treason by a London jury, although there was no doubt he played a prominent  
44 role in the offense (Wyatt’s Rebellion),\* and in spite of the judge’s instructions. Sir Nicholas went free and could not be tried  
45 again. However, his twelve jurors were called before the Court of the Star Chamber on a writ of attain. Four of the jurors  
46 recanted their acquittal and went free. The other eight stood by their verdict and were fined and imprisoned. In the next

1 century, the courts' ability to punish an independent jury was relegated to history by Chief Justice Vaughan in *Bushel's Case*,  
2 124 Eng. Rep. 1006 (C.P. 1670). William Penn and another Quaker leader were tried at Old Bailey Courthouse for disturbing  
3 the peace by holding an unlawful assembly. They were acquitted despite undisputed evidence that they preached to several  
4 hundred fellow Quakers in a public street.

5 The Court instructed the jury that a meeting of such size in such a place was legally a disturbance of the peace, and he  
6 instructed the jury to find so. The jury, however, refused to convict, and after being threatened by the judge and imprisoned  
7 without food, drink, or heat, they acquitted the defendants. The jury was imprisoned again, this time on a writ of attain, until  
8 they paid a heavy fine. Four of the jurors refused to pay, and spent several months in jail, until one of them—*Bushel*—  
9 obtained a writ of habeas corpus from the Court of Common Pleas. In discharging the attain and freeing the jurors, Chief  
10 Justice Vaughan reached back to the medieval notion of jurors as quasi-witnesses. He wrote that jurors, as neighbors of the  
11 defendant and the witnesses, might have independent knowledge of the facts or of the credibility of the witnesses.

12 Vaughan also rested his decision on the alternative ground that a criminal acquittal is a general verdict—as opposed to a  
13 special verdict, where the judge applies the law to the facts found by the jury—and it would be impossible to second-guess  
14 the jury's application of the law to the facts, since no one else could know how the jury resolved the facts.

15 *Bushel's Case* found favor with lawyers in the American Colonies, and its impact is known to many through the 1753 libel  
16 trial of John Peter Zenger, the publisher of the *New York Weekly Journal*. Although the Zenger trial is remembered for  
17 establishing truth as a defense to libel, it did so only because defense counsel successfully appealed to the jury to nullify the  
18 controlling law. Nullification was not, however, new to colonial juries. For years colonial juries nullified prosecutions brought  
19 under the Navigation Acts, until jurisdiction was removed to Admiralty Court, which had no juries. So Zenger's attorney,  
20 Alexander Wyatt led a popular Protestant uprising against the hated "Bloody Mary," the Catholic Queen of England whose  
21 name derived from the amount of Protestant blood she shed in her effort to return England to Rome's ambit.

22 Hamilton of Philadelphia, found a receptive audience for his plea. As support for his invitation to nullify the libel law,  
23 Hamilton relied on *Bushel's Case*. See *A Brief Narrative of the Case and Trial of John Peter Zenger* (Notable Trials, 1989),  
24 pp. 75, 91-92. John Adams was another colonial lawyer of note who held an expansive view of the jury's role. His notes of  
25 authorities for a 1771 case contain quotes from *Bushel's Case* and from Blackstone's *Commentaries* to support his planned  
26 argument that the jury could decide the law and find the facts. Thus, at the time of the Revolution, and among the lawyers  
27 who helped to bring it about, the idea of the jury as the conscience of the community with the right and obligation to decide  
28 both the law and the facts was conventional.

29 For the first 60 years of the nation's existence, federal juries had the right to decide the law. In *Georgia v. Brailsford*, Chief  
30 Justice John Jay instructed the jury:

31 *It may not be amiss, here, gentlemen, to remind you of the good old rule, that on questions of fact it is*  
32 *the province of the jury, on questions of law it is the province of the court to decide. But it must be*  
33 *observed that by the same law, which recognized this reasonable distribution of jurisdiction, you have*  
34 *nevertheless a right to take it upon yourselves to judge both, and to determine the law as well as the*  
35 *fact in controversy... [B]oth objects are lawfully within your power of decision.*  
36 *[Georgia v. Brailsford, 3 Dall. 1, 4 (1794)]*

37 In 1798, Congress enacted the Sedition Act, which approved the jury's right to decide the law: "the jury who shall try the  
38 cause shall have a right to determine the law and the fact, under the direction of the court, as in other cases." 1 Stat. 597. As  
39 the last four words suggest, the Federalist legislators did not believe that they were creating a special role for juries in seditious  
40 libel cases. Instead, they adopted the prevailing right of American juries to judge the law. Nullification remained a respectable  
41 legal principle until the Civil War, because it was widely applied to acquit those charged with aiding escaped slaves under  
42 the Fugitive Slave Act. However, nullification's death knell was finally sounded by the Supreme Court's decision in *Sparf*  
43 *and Hanson v. United States*, 156 U.S. 51(1895), where the Court upheld the murder convictions of two sailors. At trial, the  
44 judge instructed the jurors that although they had the power to convict of any lesser included offense, there was no evidence  
45 to support such an offense. Thus, if they found the killing to have been felonious, the jury was required to convict of murder  
46 rather than manslaughter. Justice Gray's dissent pointed out the long history of nullification in the United States, and that the  
47 majority's decision would raise an anomaly whereby the defendant is presumed at his peril to know the law, but the jury is  
48 not considered competent on the law. *Id.* at 168, 174-75.

1 Since Sparf and Hanson, judges do not instruct juries on nullification and counsel cannot argue for it. This also means that  
2 prosecutors cannot argue the grounds against it either. Yet it does not mean that juries do not exercise the power of  
3 nullification in cases that offend their sensibilities.

4 In contrast to pre-Civil War juries that refused to convict individuals who aided escaped slaves, recent juries have refused to  
5 convict KKK members of crimes against black citizens. See Juan Williams, *Eyes on the Prize: America's Civil Rights Years,*  
6 1954, 1965, at 38- 57, 22 1-25 (1987). Likewise, nullification has played a major role in death penalty and battered spouse  
7 cases, and in cases involving minimum mandatory sentences and the newly favored three-strikes laws. For instance, a mistrial  
8 was declared in a California three-strikes case when the jurors refused to deliberate on the validity of the defendant's two  
9 prior convictions. In *People v. Jones*, Cr. No. 15792 (January 1995), a San Francisco jury convicted Jones of attempted  
10 carjacking, but were then told for the first time that it was a three-strikes case. The jurors stated that they felt violated by the  
11 system. Such reluctance by juries to ignore their moral sensibilities and become judicial rubber stamps forced the law to  
12 introduce discretion into death penalty decisions. Legislation followed and codified the fruits of jury activism. See *Woodson*  
13 *v. North Carolina*, 428 U.S. 280, 293 (1976).

## 14 **Conclusion**

15 The concept of jury nullification is currently enjoying a resurgence of popularity. For instance, The Fully Informed Jury  
16 Association, based in Montana, has promoted legislation that would require state judges to instruct juries on their right to  
17 determine the law. Association members have also been charged with jury tampering for passing out leaflets advocating  
18 nullification to a potential jury pool in front of a San Diego courthouse. In Colorado, a juror was held in contempt of court  
19 for concealing her belief in jury nullification, thereby causing a mistrial, and for giving a nullification leaflet to a fellow juror.  
20 *People v. Kriho*, No. 96CR91 (February 1997). It is arguable that conscientious jurors would be better off receiving instruction  
21 on their ability to determine, or nullify, the law from the judge, with elucidating arguments from both the prosecution and the  
22 defense, than from pamphlets written by laymen who may have a hidden political agenda. But the shortcomings of the leaflets  
23 and their information are a byproduct of the consolidation of judicial power begun in the mid-nineteenth Century. The fact is  
24 that juries are exercising this power anyway, for good reasons, for bad reasons, and sometimes for no reason at all. The legal  
25 system might be better served if the jurors were given guidance by the courts and, if the prosecution were allowed to put  
26 forward counter arguments to defense invitations (sometimes only subtly hinted at), to nullify.

## 27 **About the Author**

28 David Farnham is an attorney with the Civil Division, Office of Consumer Litigation. Prior to working for the Civil Division,  
29 he spent thirteen years with the Tax Division, Southern Criminal enforcement Section. He has written extensively for  
30 EOUSA's Office of Legal Education and the American Bar Association. For a more complete historical discussion of the  
31 evolution of jury power, see the author's article "Jury Nullification: History Proves It Is Not a New Idea," in *CRIMINAL*  
32 *JUSTICE*, vol. 11, no. 4 Winter 1997

## 25 Chapter 25: Historical Documents

### 25.1 The Ten Commandments

As found in the Kings James Version of Exodus Chapter 20:

1. And God spake all these words, saying,
2. I am the LORD thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.
3. Thou shalt have no other gods before me.
4. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth:
5. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me;
6. And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments.
7. Thou shalt not take the name of the LORD thy God in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain.
8. Remember the sabbath day, to keep it holy.
9. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work:
10. But the seventh day is the sabbath of the LORD thy God: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates:
11. For in six days the LORD made heaven and earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the sabbath day, and hallowed it.
12. Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the LORD thy God giveth thee.
13. Thou shalt not kill.
14. Thou shalt not commit adultery.
15. Thou shalt not steal.
16. Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.
17. Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's.

### 25.2 Magna Carta 1215

#### Preamble:

John, by the grace of God, king of England, lord of Ireland, duke of Normandy and Aquitaine, and count of Anjou, to the archbishop, bishops, abbots, earls, barons, justiciaries, foresters, sheriffs, stewards, servants, and to all his bailiffs and liege subjects, greetings. Know that, having regard to God and for the salvation of our soul, and those of all our ancestors and heirs, and unto the honor of God and the advancement of his holy Church and for the rectifying of our realm, we have granted as underwritten by advice of our venerable fathers, Stephen, archbishop of Canterbury, primate of all England and cardinal of the holy Roman Church, Henry, archbishop of Dublin, William of London, Peter of Winchester, Jocelyn of Bath and Glastonbury, Hugh of Lincoln, Walter of Worcester, William of Coventry, Benedict of Rochester, bishops; of Master Pandulf, subdeacon and member of the household of our lord the Pope, of brother Aymeric (master of the Knights of the Temple in England), and of the illustrious men William Marshal, earl of Pembroke, William, earl of Salisbury, William, earl of Warenne, William, earl of Arundel, Alan of Galloway (constable of Scotland), Waren Fitz Gerold, Peter Fitz Herbert, Hubert De Burgh (seneschal of Poitou), Hugh de Neville, Matthew Fitz Herbert, Thomas Basset, Alan Basset, Philip d'Aubigny, Robert of Roppesley, John Marshal, John Fitz Hugh, and others, our liegemen.

1. In the first place we have granted to God, and by this our present charter confirmed for us and our heirs forever that the English Church shall be free, and shall have her rights entire, and her liberties inviolate; and we will that it be thus observed; which is apparent from this that the freedom of elections, which is reckoned most important and very essential to the English Church, we, of our pure and unconstrained will, did grant, and did by our charter confirm and did obtain the ratification of the same from our lord, Pope Innocent III, before the quarrel arose between us and our barons: and this we will observe, and our will is that it be observed in good faith by our heirs forever. We have also

- 1 granted to all freemen of our kingdom, for us and our heirs forever, all the underwritten liberties, to be had and held by  
2 them and their heirs, of us and our heirs forever.
- 3 2. If any of our earls or barons, or others holding of us in chief by military service shall have died, and at the time of his  
4 death his heir shall be full of age and owe “relief”, he shall have his inheritance by the old relief, to wit, the heir or  
5 heirs of an earl, for the whole barony of an earl by L100; the heir or heirs of a baron, L100 for a whole barony; the  
6 heir or heirs of a knight, 100s, at most, and whoever owes less let him give less, according to the ancient custom of  
7 fees.
- 8 3. If, however, the heir of any one of the aforesaid has been under age and in wardship, let him have his inheritance  
9 without relief and without fine when he comes of age.
- 10 4. The guardian of the land of an heir who is thus under age, shall take from the land of the heir nothing but reasonable  
11 produce, reasonable customs, and reasonable services, and that without destruction or waste of men or goods; and if we  
12 have committed the wardship of the lands of any such minor to the sheriff, or to any other who is responsible to us for  
13 its issues, and he has made destruction or waster of what he holds in wardship, we will take of him amends, and the  
14 land shall be committed to two lawful and discreet men of that fee, who shall be responsible for the issues to us or to  
15 him to whom we shall assign them; and if we have given or sold the wardship of any such land to anyone and he has  
16 therein made destruction or waste, he shall lose that wardship, and it shall be transferred to two lawful and discreet men  
17 of that fief, who shall be responsible to us in like manner as aforesaid.
- 18 5. The guardian, moreover, so long as he has the wardship of the land, shall keep up the houses, parks, fishponds, stanks,  
19 mills, and other things pertaining to the land, out of the issues of the same land; and he shall restore to the heir, when  
20 he has come to full age, all his land, stocked with ploughs and wainage, according as the season of husbandry shall  
21 require, and the issues of the land can reasonable bear.
- 22 6. Heirs shall be married without disparagement, yet so that before the marriage takes place the nearest in blood to that  
23 heir shall have notice.
- 24 7. A widow, after the death of her husband, shall forthwith and without difficulty have her marriage portion and  
25 inheritance; nor shall she give anything for her dower, or for her marriage portion, or for the inheritance which her  
26 husband and she held on the day of the death of that husband; and she may remain in the house of her husband for forty  
27 days after his death, within which time her dower shall be assigned to her.
- 28 8. No widow shall be compelled to marry, so long as she prefers to live without a husband; provided always that she gives  
29 security not to marry without our consent, if she holds of us, or without the consent of the lord of whom she holds, if  
30 she holds of another.
- 31 9. Neither we nor our bailiffs will seize any land or rent for any debt, as long as the chattels of the debtor are sufficient to  
32 repay the debt; nor shall the sureties of the debtor be distrained so long as the principal debtor is able to satisfy the  
33 debt; and if the principal debtor shall fail to pay the debt, having nothing wherewith to pay it, then the sureties shall  
34 answer for the debt; and let them have the lands and rents of the debtor, if they desire them, until they are indemnified  
35 for the debt which they have paid for him, unless the principal debtor can show proof that he is discharged thereof as  
36 against the said sureties.
- 37 10. If one who has borrowed from the Jews any sum, great or small, die before that loan be repaid, the debt shall not bear  
38 interest while the heir is under age, of whomsoever he may hold; and if the debt fall into our hands, we will not take  
39 anything except the principal sum contained in the bond.
- 40 11. And if anyone die indebted to the Jews, his wife shall have her dower and pay nothing of that debt; and if any children  
41 of the deceased are left under age, necessities shall be provided for them in keeping with the holding of the deceased;  
42 and out of the residue the debt shall be paid, reserving, however, service due to feudal lords; in like manner let it be  
43 done touching debts due to others than Jews.
- 44 12. No scutage not aid shall be imposed on our kingdom, unless by common counsel of our kingdom, except for ransoming  
45 our person, for making our eldest son a knight, and for once marrying our eldest daughter; and for these there shall not  
46 be levied more than a reasonable aid. In like manner it shall be done concerning aids from the city of London.
- 47 13. And the city of London shall have all it ancient liberties and free customs, as well by land as by water; furthermore, we  
48 decree and grant that all other cities, boroughs, towns, and ports shall have all their liberties and free customs.
- 49 14. And for obtaining the common counsel of the kingdom anent the assessing of an aid (except in the three cases  
50 aforesaid) or of a scutage, we will cause to be summoned the archbishops, bishops, abbots, earls, and greater barons,  
51 severally by our letters; and we will moreover cause to be summoned generally, through our sheriffs and bailiffs, and  
52 others who hold of us in chief, for a fixed date, namely, after the expiry of at least forty days, and at a fixed place; and  
53 in all letters of such summons we will specify the reason of the summons. And when the summons has thus been made,  
54 the business shall proceed on the day appointed, according to the counsel of such as are present, although not all who  
55 were summoned have come.

- 1 15. We will not for the future grant to anyone license to take an aid from his own free tenants, except to ransom his person,  
2 to make his eldest son a knight, and once to marry his eldest daughter; and on each of these occasions there shall be  
3 levied only a reasonable aid.
- 4 16. No one shall be distrained for performance of greater service for a knight's fee, or for any other free tenement, than is  
5 due therefrom.
- 6 17. Common pleas shall not follow our court, but shall be held in some fixed place.
- 7 18. Inquests of novel disseisin, of mort d'ancestor, and of darrein presentment shall not be held elsewhere than in their own  
8 county courts, and that in manner following; We, or, if we should be out of the realm, our chief justiciar, will send two  
9 justiciaries through every county four times a year, who shall alone with four knights of the county chosen by the  
10 county, hold the said assizes in the county court, on the day and in the place of meeting of that court.
- 11 19. And if any of the said assizes cannot be taken on the day of the county court, let there remain of the knights and  
12 freeholders, who were present at the county court on that day, as many as may be required for the efficient making of  
13 judgments, according as the business be more or less.
- 14 20. A freeman shall not be amerced for a slight offense, except in accordance with the degree of the offense; and for a  
15 grave offense he shall be amerced in accordance with the gravity of the offense, yet saving always his "contentment";  
16 and a merchant in the same way, saving his "merchandise"; and a villein shall be amerced in the same way, saving his  
17 "wainage" if they have fallen into our mercy: and none of the aforesaid amercedments shall be imposed except by the  
18 oath of honest men of the neighborhood.
- 19 21. Earls and barons shall not be amerced except through their peers, and only in accordance with the degree of the  
20 offense.
- 21 22. A clerk shall not be amerced in respect of his lay holding except after the manner of the others aforesaid; further, he  
22 shall not be amerced in accordance with the extent of his ecclesiastical benefice.
- 23 23. No village or individual shall be compelled to make bridges at river banks, except those who from of old were legally  
24 bound to do so.
- 25 24. No sheriff, constable, coroners, or others of our bailiffs, shall hold pleas of our Crown.
- 26 25. All counties, hundred, wapentakes, and trithings (except our demesne manors) shall remain at the old rents, and  
27 without any additional payment.
- 28 26. If anyone holding of us a lay fief shall die, and our sheriff or bailiff shall exhibit our letters patent of summons for a  
29 debt which the deceased owed us, it shall be lawful for our sheriff or bailiff to attach and enroll the chattels of the  
30 deceased, found upon the lay fief, to the value of that debt, at the sight of law worthy men, provided always that  
31 nothing whatever be thence removed until the debt which is evident shall be fully paid to us; and the residue shall be  
32 left to the executors to fulfill the will of the deceased; and if there be nothing due from him to us, all the chattels shall  
33 go to the deceased, saving to his wife and children their reasonable shares.
- 34 27. If any freeman shall die intestate, his chattels shall be distributed by the hands of his nearest kinsfolk and friends, under  
35 supervision of the Church, saving to every one the debts which the deceased owed to him.
- 36 28. No constable or other bailiff of ours shall take corn or other provisions from anyone without immediately tendering  
37 money therefor, unless he can have postponement thereof by permission of the seller.
- 38 29. No constable shall compel any knight to give money in lieu of castle-guard, when he is willing to perform it in his own  
39 person, or (if he himself cannot do it from any reasonable cause) then by another responsible man. Further, if we have  
40 led or sent him upon military service, he shall be relieved from guard in proportion to the time during which he has  
41 been on service because of us.
- 42 30. No sheriff or bailiff of ours, or other person, shall take the horses or carts of any freeman for transport duty, against the  
43 will of the said freeman.
- 44 31. Neither we nor our bailiffs shall take, for our castles or for any other work of ours, wood which is not ours, against the  
45 will of the owner of that wood.
- 46 32. We will not retain beyond one year and one day, the lands those who have been convicted of felony, and the lands shall  
47 thereafter be handed over to the lords of the fiefs.
- 48 33. All kydells for the future shall be removed altogether from Thames and Medway, and throughout all England, except  
49 upon the seashore.
- 50 34. The writ which is called praecipe shall not for the future be issued to anyone, regarding any tenement whereby a  
51 freeman may lose his court.
- 52 35. Let there be one measure of wine throughout our whole realm; and one measure of ale; and one measure of corn, to  
53 wit, "the London quarter"; and one width of cloth (whether dyed, or russet, or "halberget"), to wit, two ells within the  
54 selvages; of weights also let it be as of measures.
- 55 36. Nothing in future shall be given or taken for awrit of inquisition of life or limbs, but freely it shall be granted, and  
56 never denied.

- 1 37. If anyone holds of us by fee-farm, either by socage or by burage, or of any other land by knight's service, we will not  
2 (by reason of that fee-farm, socage, or burage), have the wardship of the heir, or of such land of his as if of the fief of  
3 that other; nor shall we have wardship of that fee-farm, socage, or burage, unless such fee-farm owes knight's service.  
4 We will not by reason of any small serjeancy which anyone may hold of us by the service of rendering to us knives,  
5 arrows, or the like, have wardship of his heir or of the land which he holds of another lord by knight's service.
- 6 38. No bailiff for the future shall, upon his own unsupported complaint, put anyone to his "law", without credible  
7 witnesses brought for this purposes.
- 8 39. No freemen shall be taken or imprisoned or disseised or exiled or in any way destroyed, nor will we go upon him nor  
9 send upon him, except by the lawful judgment of his peers or by the law of the land.
- 10 40. To no one will we sell, to no one will we refuse or delay, right or justice.
- 11 41. All merchants shall have safe and secure exit from England, and entry to England, with the right to tarry there and to  
12 move about as well by land as by water, for buying and selling by the ancient and right customs, quit from all evil tolls,  
13 except (in time of war) such merchants as are of the land at war with us. And if such are found in our land at the  
14 beginning of the war, they shall be detained, without injury to their bodies or goods, until information be received by  
15 us, or by our chief justiciar, how the merchants of our land found in the land at war with us are treated; and if our men  
16 are safe there, the others shall be safe in our land.
- 17 42. It shall be lawful in future for anyone (excepting always those imprisoned or outlawed in accordance with the law of  
18 the kingdom, and natives of any country at war with us, and merchants, who shall be treated as if above provided) to  
19 leave our kingdom and to return, safe and secure by land and water, except for a short period in time of war, on  
20 grounds of public policy- reserving always the allegiance due to us.
- 21 43. If anyone holding of some escheat (such as the honor of Wallingford, Nottingham, Boulogne, Lancaster, or of other  
22 escheats which are in our hands and are baronies) shall die, his heir shall give no other relief, and perform no other  
23 service to us than he would have done to the baron if that barony had been in the baron's hand; and we shall hold it in  
24 the same manner in which the baron held it.
- 25 44. Men who dwell without the forest need not henceforth come before our justiciaries of the forest upon a general  
26 summons, unless they are in plea, or sureties of one or more, who are attached for the forest.
- 27 45. We will appoint as justices, constables, sheriffs, or bailiffs only such as know the law of the realm and mean to observe  
28 it well.
- 29 46. All barons who have founded abbeys, concerning which they hold charters from the kings of England, or of which they  
30 have long continued possession, shall have the wardship of them, when vacant, as they ought to have.
- 31 47. All forests that have been made such in our time shall forthwith be disafforsted; and a similar course shall be followed  
32 with regard to river banks that have been placed "in defense" by us in our time.
- 33 48. All evil customs connected with forests and warrens, foresters and warreners, sheriffs and their officers, river banks  
34 and their wardens, shall immediately be inquired into in each county by twelve sworn knights of the same county  
35 chosen by the honest men of the same county, and shall, within forty days of the said inquest, be utterly abolished, so  
36 as never to be restored, provided always that we previously have intimation thereof, or our justiciar, if we should not be  
37 in England.
- 38 49. We will immediately restore all hostages and charters delivered to us by Englishmen, as sureties of the peace of faithful  
39 service.
- 40 50. We will entirely remove from their bailiwicks, the relations of Gerard of Athee (so that in future they shall have no  
41 bailiwick in England); namely, Engelard of Cigogne, Peter, Guy, and Andrew of Chanceaux, Guy of Cigogne,  
42 Geoffrey of Martigny with his brothers, Philip Mark with his brothers and his nephew Geoffrey, and the whole brood  
43 of the same.
- 44 51. As soon as peace is restored, we will banish from the kingdom all foreign born knights, crossbowmen, serjeants, and  
45 mercenary soldiers who have come with horses and arms to the kingdom's hurt.
- 46 52. If anyone has been dispossessed or removed by us, without the legal judgment of his peers, from his lands, castles,  
47 franchises, or from his right, we will immediately restore them to him; and if a dispute arise over this, then let it be  
48 decided by the five and twenty barons of whom mention is made below in the clause for securing the peace. Moreover,  
49 for all those possessions, from which anyone has, without the lawful judgment of his peers, been disseised or removed,  
50 by our father, King Henry, or by our brother, King Richard, and which we retain in our hand (or which as possessed by  
51 others, to whom we are bound to warrant them) we shall have respite until the usual term of crusaders; excepting those  
52 things about which a plea has been raised, or an inquest made by our order, before our taking of the cross; but as soon  
53 as we return from the expedition, we will immediately grant full justice therein.
- 54 53. We shall have, moreover, the same respite and in the same manner in rendering justice concerning the disafforestation  
55 or retention of those forests which Henry our father and Richard our brother afforsted, and concerning the wardship of  
56 lands which are of the fief of another (namely, such wardships as we have hitherto had by reason of a fief which

1 anyone held of us by knight's service), and concerning abbeys founded on other fiefs than our own, in which the lord  
2 of the fee claims to have right; and when we have returned, or if we desist from our expedition, we will immediately  
3 grant full justice to all who complain of such things.

4 54. No one shall be arrested or imprisoned upon the appeal of a woman, for the death of any other than her husband.

5 55. All fines made with us unjustly and against the law of the land, and all ameracements, imposed unjustly and against the  
6 law of the land, shall be entirely remitted, or else it shall be done concerning them according to the decision of the five  
7 and twenty barons whom mention is made below in the clause for securing the peace, or according to the judgment of  
8 the majority of the same, along with the aforesaid Stephen, archbishop of Canterbury, if he can be present, and such  
9 others as he may wish to bring with him for this purpose, and if he cannot be present the business shall nevertheless  
10 proceed without him, provided always that if any one or more of the aforesaid five and twenty barons are in a similar  
11 suit, they shall be removed as far as concerns this particular judgment, others being substituted in their places after  
12 having been selected by the rest of the same five and twenty for this purpose only, and after having been sworn.

13 56. If we have disseised or removed Welshmen from lands or liberties, or other things, without the legal judgment of their  
14 peers in England or in Wales, they shall be immediately restored to them; and if a dispute arise over this, then let it be  
15 decided in the marches by the judgment of their peers; for the tenements in England according to the law of England,  
16 for tenements in Wales according to the law of Wales, and for tenements in the marches according to the law of the  
17 marches. Welshmen shall do the same to us and ours.

18 57. Further, for all those possessions from which any Welshman has, without the lawful judgment of his peers, been  
19 disseised or removed by King Henry our father, or King Richard our brother, and which we retain in our hand (or  
20 which are possessed by others, and which we ought to warrant), we will have respite until the usual term of crusaders;  
21 excepting those things about which a plea has been raised or an inquest made by our order before we took the cross;  
22 but as soon as we return (or if perchance we desist from our expedition), we will immediately grant full justice in  
23 accordance with the laws of the Welsh and in relation to the foresaid regions.

24 58. We will immediately give up the son of Llywelyn and all the hostages of Wales, and the charters delivered to us as  
25 security for the peace.

26 59. We will do towards Alexander, king of Scots, concerning the return of his sisters and his hostages, and concerning his  
27 franchises, and his right, in the same manner as we shall do towards our other barons of England, unless it ought to be  
28 otherwise according to the charters which we hold from William his father, formerly king of Scots; and this shall be  
29 according to the judgment of his peers in our court.

30 60. Moreover, all these aforesaid customs and liberties, the observances of which we have granted in our kingdom as far as  
31 pertains to us towards our men, shall be observed by all of our kingdom, as well clergy as laymen, as far as pertains to  
32 them towards their men.

33 61. Since, moreover, for God and the amendment of our kingdom and for the better allaying of the quarrel that has arisen  
34 between us and our barons, we have granted all these concessions, desirous that they should enjoy them in complete  
35 and firm endurance forever, we give and grant to them the underwritten security, namely, that the barons choose five  
36 and twenty barons of the kingdom, whomsoever they will, who shall be bound with all their might, to observe and  
37 hold, and cause to be observed, the peace and liberties we have granted and confirmed to them by this our present  
38 Charter, so that if we, or our justiciar, or our bailiffs or any one of our officers, shall in anything be at fault towards  
39 anyone, or shall have broken any one of the articles of this peace or of this security, and the offense be notified to four  
40 barons of the foresaid five and twenty, the said four barons shall repair to us (or our justiciar, if we are out of the realm)  
41 and, laying the transgression before us, petition to have that transgression redressed without delay. And if we shall not  
42 have corrected the transgression (or, in the event of our being out of the realm, if our justiciar shall not have corrected  
43 it) within forty days, reckoning from the time it has been intimated to us (or to our justiciar, if we should be out of the  
44 realm), the four barons aforesaid shall refer that matter to the rest of the five and twenty barons, and those five and  
45 twenty barons shall, together with the community of the whole realm, distrain and distress us in all possible ways,  
46 namely, by seizing our castles, lands, possessions, and in any other way they can, until redress has been obtained as  
47 they deem fit, saving harmless our own person, and the persons of our queen and children; and when redress has been  
48 obtained, they shall resume their old relations towards us. And let whoever in the country desires it, swear to obey the  
49 orders of the said five and twenty barons for the execution of all the aforesaid matters, and along with them, to molest  
50 us to the utmost of his power; and we publicly and freely grant leave to everyone who wishes to swear, and we shall  
51 never forbid anyone to swear. All those, moreover, in the land who of themselves and of their own accord are  
52 unwilling to swear to the twenty five to help them in constraining and molesting us, we shall by our command compel  
53 the same to swear to the effect foresaid. And if any one of the five and twenty barons shall have died or departed from  
54 the land, or be incapacitated in any other manner which would prevent the foresaid provisions being carried out, those  
55 of the said twenty five barons who are left shall choose another in his place according to their own judgment, and he  
56 shall be sworn in the same way as the others. Further, in all matters, the execution of which is entrusted, to these twenty

1 five barons, if perchance these twenty five are present and disagree about anything, or if some of them, after being  
2 summoned, are unwilling or unable to be present, that which the majority of those present ordain or command shall be  
3 held as fixed and established, exactly as if the whole twenty five had concurred in this; and the said twenty five shall  
4 swear that they will faithfully observe all that is aforesaid, and cause it to be observed with all their might. And we  
5 shall procure nothing from anyone, directly or indirectly, whereby any part of these concessions and liberties might be  
6 revoked or diminished; and if any such things has been procured, let it be void and null, and we shall never use it  
7 personally or by another.

8 62. And all the will, hatreds, and bitterness that have arisen between us and our men, clergy and lay, from the date of the  
9 quarrel, we have completely remitted and pardoned to everyone. Moreover, all trespasses occasioned by the said  
10 quarrel, from Easter in the sixteenth year of our reign till the restoration of peace, we have fully remitted to all, both  
11 clergy and laymen, and completely forgiven, as far as pertains to us. And on this head, we have caused to be made for  
12 them letters testimonial patent of the lord Stephen, archbishop of Canterbury, of the lord Henry, archbishop of Dublin,  
13 of the bishops aforesaid, and of Master Pandulf as touching this security and the concessions aforesaid.

14 63. Wherefore we will and firmly order that the English Church be free, and that the men in our kingdom have and hold all  
15 the aforesaid liberties, rights, and concessions, well and peaceably, freely and quietly, fully and wholly, for themselves  
16 and their heirs, of us and our heirs, in all respects and in all places forever, as is aforesaid. An oath, moreover, has been  
17 taken, as well on our part as on the part of the barons, that all these conditions aforesaid shall be kept in good faith and  
18 without evil intent. Given under our hand - the above named and many others being witnesses - in the meadow which  
19 is called Runnymede, between Windsor and Staines, on the fifteenth day of June, in the seventeenth year of our reign.

### 20 **25.3 The Mayflower Compact**

#### 21 **November 11, 1620**

22 In the name of God, Amen. We, whose names are underwritten, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Sovereign Lord, King  
23 James, by the Grace of God, of Great Britaine, France, and Ireland, King, Defender of the Faith, &c.

24 Having undertaken for the Glory of God, and Advancement of the Christian Faith, and the Honour of our King and Country,  
25 a Voyage to plant the first colony in the Northerne Parts of Virginia; doe, by these Presents, solemnly and mutually in the  
26 Presence of God and one of another, covenant and combine ourselves together into a civill Body Politick, for our better  
27 Ordering and Preservation, and Furtherance of the Ends aforesaid; And by Virtue hereof do enact, constitute, and frame, such  
28 just and equall Laws, Ordinances, Acts, Constitutions, and Offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meete and  
29 convenient for the Generall Good of the Colonie; unto which we promise all due Submission and Obedience.

30 In Witness whereof we have hereunto subscribed our names at Cape Cod the eleventh of November, in the Raigne of our  
31 Sovereign Lord, King James of England, France, and Ireland, the eighteenth, and of Scotland, the fiftie-fourth, Anno.  
32 Domini, 1620.

33  
34 Mr. John Carver  
35 Digery Priest  
36 Mr. William Brewster  
37 Edmund Margesson  
38 John Alden  
39 George Soule  
40 James Chilton  
41 Francis Cooke  
42 Joses Fletcher  
43 John Ridgate  
44 Mr. Christopher Martin  
45 Richard Gardiner  
46 Mr. Richard Warren  
47 Edward Doten  
48 Mr. Stephen Hopkins  
49 Mr. Edward Winslow  
50 Gilbert Winslow

1 Miles Standish  
2 Richard Bitteridge  
3 Francis Eaton  
4 John Tilly  
5 John Billington  
6 Thomas Tinker  
7 Mr. Samuel Fuller  
8 Richard Clark  
9 Mr. William White  
10 Thomas English  
11 Edward Liester  
12 Mr. William Bradford  
13 Thomas Williams  
14 Isaac Allerton  
15 Peter Brown  
16 John Turner  
17 Edward Tilly  
18 John Craxton  
19 Thomas Rogers  
20 John Goodman  
21 Edward Fuller  
22 Mr. William Mullins  
23 Mr. John Allerton  
24 John Howland

#### 25 **25.4 Virginia Declaration of Rights 1776**

- 26 1. That all men are by nature equally free and independent, and have certain inherent rights, of which, when they enter  
27 into a state of society, they cannot, by any compact, deprive or divest their posterity; namely, the enjoyment of life and  
28 liberty, with the means of acquiring and possessing property, and pursuing and obtaining happiness and safety.
- 29 2. That all power is vested in, and consequently derived from, the people; that magistrates are their trustees and servants,  
30 and at all times amenable to them.
- 31 3. That government is, or ought to be, instituted for the common benefit, protection, and security of the people, nation or  
32 community; of all the various modes and forms of government that is best, which is capable of producing the greatest  
33 degree of happiness and safety and is most effectually secured against the danger of maladministration; and that,  
34 whenever any government shall be found inadequate or contrary to these purposes, a majority of the community hath  
35 an indubitable, unalienable, and indefeasible right to reform, alter or abolish it, in such manner as shall be judged most  
36 conducive to the public weal.
- 37 4. That no man, or set of men, are entitled to exclusive or separate emoluments or privileges from the community, but in  
38 consideration of public services; which, not being descendible, neither ought the offices of magistrate, legislator, or  
39 judge be hereditary.
- 40 5. That the legislative and executive powers of the state should be separate and distinct from the judicative; and, that the  
41 members of the two first may be restrained from oppression by feeling and participating the burthens of the people,  
42 they should, at fixed periods, be reduced to a private station, return into that body from which they were originally  
43 taken, and the vacancies be supplied by frequent, certain, and regular elections in which all, or any part of the former  
44 members, to be again eligible, or ineligible, as the laws shall direct.
- 45 6. That elections of members to serve as representatives of the people in assembly ought to be free; and that all men,  
46 having sufficient evidence of permanent common interest with, and attachment to, the community have the right of  
47 suffrage and cannot be taxed or deprived of their property for public uses without their own consent or that of their  
48 representatives so elected, nor bound by any law to which they have not, in like manner, assented, for the public good.
- 49 7. That all power of suspending laws, or the execution of laws, by any authority without consent of the representatives of  
50 the people is injurious to their rights and ought not to be exercised.
- 51 8. That in all capital or criminal prosecutions a man hath a right to demand the cause and nature of his accusation to be  
52 confronted with the accusers and witnesses, to call for evidence in his favor, and to a speedy trial by an impartial jury  
53 of his vicinage, without whose unanimous consent he cannot be found guilty, nor can he be compelled to give evidence  
54 against himself; that no man be deprived of his liberty except by the law of the land or the judgement of his peers.

- 1 9. That excessive bail ought not to be required, nor excessive fines imposed; nor cruel and unusual punishments inflicted.
- 2 10. That general warrants, whereby any officer or messenger may be commanded to search suspected places without
- 3 evidence of a fact committed, or to seize any person or persons not named, or whose offense is not particularly
- 4 described and supported by evidence, are grievous and oppressive and ought not to be granted.
- 5 11. That in controversies respecting property and in suits between man and man, the ancient trial by jury is preferable to
- 6 any other and ought to be held sacred.
- 7 12. That the freedom of the press is one of the greatest bulwarks of liberty and can never be restrained but by despotic
- 8 governments.
- 9 13. That a well regulated militia, composed of the body of the people, trained to arms, is the proper, natural, and safe
- 10 defense of a free state; that standing armies, in time of peace, should be avoided as dangerous to liberty; and that, in all
- 11 cases, the military should be under strict subordination to, and be governed by, the civil power.
- 12 14. That the people have a right to uniform government; and therefore, that no government separate from, or independent
- 13 of, the government of Virginia, ought to be erected or established within the limits thereof.
- 14 15. That no free government, or the blessings of liberty, can be preserved to any people but by a firm adherence to justice,
- 15 moderation, temperance, frugality, and virtue and by frequent recurrence to fundamental principles.
- 16 16. That religion, or the duty which we owe to our Creator and the manner of discharging it, can be directed by reason and
- 17 conviction, not by force or violence; and therefore, all men are equally entitled to the free exercise of religion,
- 18 according to the dictates of conscience; and that it is the mutual duty of all to practice Christian forbearance, love, and
- 19 charity towards each other.

20 Adopted unanimously June 12, 1776 Virginia Convention of Delegates drafted by Mr. George Mason

## 21 **25.5 Articles of Capitulation**

22 Articles of Capitulation settled between his Excellency General Washington Commander in Chief of the combined Forces of  
23 America & France—His Excellency The Count de Rochambeau Lieutenant General of the Armies of the King of France—  
24 Great Cross of the Royal & Military Order of St. Louis—Commanding the Auxiliary Troops of his most Christian Majesty  
25 in America—And His Excellency the Count de Grasse Lieutenant General of the Naval Armies of his Most Christian Majesty,  
26 Commander of the Order of St. Louis, comandg in Chief the Naval Army of France in the Chesapeak—on the One Part—  
27 And His Excellency The Right Honble Earl Cornwallis Lieu. General of His Britannick Majesty’s Forces, Commanding the  
28 Garrisons of York & Gloucester and Thomas Symonds Esqr Commanding his Britannick Majesty’s Naval forces in York  
29 River in Virginia on the other part.

### 30 **Article 1<sup>st</sup>**

31 The Garrisons of York & Gloucester including the Officers and Seamen of his Britannic Majesty’s Ships as well as other  
32 Mariners, to surrender themselves Prisoners of War to the Combined Forces of America & France—The Land Troops to  
33 remain prisoners to the United States. The Navy to the naval Army of his Most Christian Majesty—

34 Article 1<sup>st</sup> Granted—

### 35 **Article 2<sup>nd</sup>**

36 The artillery, Arms, Accoutrements, Military Chest and public Stores of every Denomination, shall be delivered, unimpaired,  
37 to the Heads of Departments appointed to receive them—

38 Article 2<sup>nd</sup> Granted—

### 39 **Article 3<sup>rd</sup>**

40 At 12 oClock this Day the two Redoubts on the left Flank of York to be delivered—the one to a Detachment of American  
41 Infantry—the other to a Detachment of French Grenadiers—The Garrison of York will march out to a place to be appointed  
42 in front of the posts at 2 oClock preciesely, with Shouldered Arms. Colours cased and Drums beating a British or German  
43 March.—they are then to ground their Arms, & return to their Encampment, where they will remain until they are dispatched  
44 to the place of their Destination.— Two Works on the Gloucester Side will be delivered at One oClock to Detachments of  
45 French & American Troops appointed to posses them.— The Garrison will march out at three oClock in the Afternoon—The

1 Cavalry with their Swords drawn, Trumpets soundg & the Infantry in the Manner prescribed for the Garrison of York—they  
2 are likewise to return to their Encampments untill they can be finally marched off.—

3 Article 3<sup>rd</sup> Granted—

4 **Article 4<sup>th</sup>**

5 Officers are to retain their Side Arms—both Officers & Soldiers to keep their private property of every kind, and no part of  
6 their baggage or papers to be at any Time subject to search or Inspection.— The Baggage & papers of officers & Soldiers  
7 taken during the Siege, to be likewise preserved for them. It is understood that any Property obviously belonging to any of  
8 the Inhabitants of these States, in the possession of the Garrison, shall be subject to be reclaime.—

9 Article 4<sup>th</sup> Granted—

10 **Article 5<sup>th</sup>**

11 The Soldiers to be kept in Virginia, Maryland, or Pennsylvania, & as much by Regiments as possible, and supplied with the  
12 same Rations or Provisions as are Allowed to Soldiers in the Service of America:—A field officer from each Nation, viz—  
13 British, Anspach & Hessian, & other Officers on parole, in the proportion of One to fifty Men, to be allowed to reside near  
14 their respective Regiments, to visit them frequently and be witnesses of their Treatment—And that there Officers may receive  
15 & deliver Cloathing and other Necessaries for them for which passports are to be granted when applied for.

16 Article 5<sup>th</sup> Granted—

17 **Article 6<sup>th</sup>**

18 The General, Staff & other Officers not employed as mentioned in the above Article, & who choose it, to be permitted to go  
19 on parole to England Europe, to N York, or to any other American maritime posts, at present in possession of the British  
20 Forces, at their own Option, & proper Vessels to be granted by the Count de Grasse to carry them under flags of Truce to  
21 New York within ten Days from this Date, if possible, & they to reside in a District to be agreed upon hereafter, untill they  
22 embark—The Officers of the civil Departments of the Army & navy to be included in this Article.— passports to go by Land,  
23 to be granted to those, to whom Vessels cannot be furnished.—

24 Article 6<sup>th</sup> Granted.—

25 **Article 7<sup>th</sup>**

26 Officers to be allowed to keep Soldiers as Servants according to the common practice of the Service.— Servants not Soldiers  
27 are not to be considered as prisoners & are to be allowed to attend their Masters.

28 Article 7<sup>th</sup> Granted—

29 **Article 8<sup>th</sup>**

30 The Bonetta Sloop of War to be equipped & navigated by its present Captain and Crew & left entirely at the Disposal of Ld  
31 Cornwallis, from the Hour that the Capitulation is signed, to receive an Aid de Camp to carry Dispatches to Sir Hry Clinton—  
32 and such Soldiers as he may think proper to send to N York to be permitted to sail without Examination, when his Dispatches  
33 are ready. His Lordship engaging on his part, that the Ship shall be delivered to the Order of the Count de Grasse if she  
34 escapes the Dangers of the Seas—that she shall not carry off any public Stores—Any part of the Crew, that may be deficient  
35 on her Return, & the Soldiers passengers, to be accounted for on her Delivery—

36 Article 8<sup>th</sup> Granted—

37 **Article 9<sup>th</sup>**

1 The Traders are to preserve their Property, & to be allowed three Months to dispose of, or remove them—And those Traders  
2 are not to be considered as prisoners of War—

3 Article 9<sup>th</sup>

4 The Traders will be allowed to dispose of their Effects—the Allied Army having the right of preemption—The Traders to be  
5 considered as prisoners of War on parole—

6 **Article 10<sup>th</sup>**

7 Natives or Inhabitants of different parts of this Country at present in York or Gloucester are not to be punished on Account  
8 of having joined the British army—

9 Article 10<sup>th</sup>

10 This article cannot be assented to—being altogether of civil Resort—

11 **Article 11<sup>th</sup>**

12 Proper Hospitals to be furnished for the Sick & Wounded—they are to be attended by their own Surgeons on parole, and they  
13 are to be furnished with Medicines & Stores from the American Hospitals—

14 Article 11<sup>th</sup>

15 The Hospital Stores now in York and Gloucester shall be delivered for the Use of the British Sick & wounded—Passports  
16 will be granted for procuring them further Supplies from N York as Occasion may require—& proper Hospitals will be  
17 furnished for the reception of the Sick & wounded of the two Garrisons—

18 **Article 12<sup>th</sup>**

19 Waggons to be furnished to carry the Baggage of the Officers attending the Soldiers, and to Surgeons when travelling on  
20 Acco (Account) of the Sick—attending the Hospitals at public Expense

21 Article 12<sup>th</sup>

22 They will be furnished if possibl.—

23 **Article 13<sup>th</sup>**

24 The Shipping & Boats in the two Harbours, with all their Stores, Guns, Tackling, & Apparel shall be delivered up in their  
25 present State, to an officer of the Navy, appointed to take possession of them—previously unloading the private property part  
26 of which had been on board for Security during the Siege.

27 Article 13<sup>th</sup> Granted—

28 **Article 14<sup>th</sup>**

29 No Article of the Capitulation to be infringed on pretext of Reprisal, & if there be any doubtful Expressions in it, they are to  
30 be interpreted according to the common Meaning & Acceptation of the Words.—

31 Article 14<sup>th</sup> Granted—

32 Done at York in Virginia this 19<sup>th</sup> day October 1781

1 CORNWALLIS  
2 THOs SYMONDS

3 [Done in the trenches before York Town in Virginia October 19, 1781.  
4 G. WASHINGTON  
5 LE COMTE DE ROCHAMBEAU  
6 LE COMTE DE BARRUS, en mon nom & celui de COMTE DE GRASSE]

## 7 **25.6 King George III's Lament of the Loss of America**

8 America is lost! Must we fall beneath the blow? Or have we resources that may repair the mischief? What are those resources?  
9 Should they be sought in distant Regions held by precarious Tenure, or shall we seek them at home in the exertions of a new  
10 policy?

11 The situation of the Kingdom is novel, the policy that is to govern it must be novel likewise, or neither adapted to the real  
12 evils of the present moment, or the dreaded ones of the future.

13 For a Century past the Colonial Scheme has been the system that has guided the Administration of the British Government.  
14 It was thoroughly known that from every Country there always exists an active emigration of unsettled, discontented, or  
15 unfortunate People, who failing in their endeavours to live at home, hope to succeed better where there is more employment  
16 suitable to their poverty. The establishment of Colonies in America might probably increase the number of this class, but did  
17 not create it; in times anterior to that great speculation, Poland contained near 10,000 Scotch Pedlars; within the last thirty  
18 years not above 100, occasioned by America offering a more advantageous asylum for them.

19 A people spread over an immense tract of fertile land, industrious because free, and rich because industrious, presently became  
20 a market for the Manufactures and Commerce of the Mother Country. An importance was soon generated, which from its  
21 origin to the late conflict was mischievous to Britain, because it created an expence of blood and treasure worth more at this  
22 instant, if it could be at our command, than all we ever received from America. The wars of 1744, of 1756, and 1775, were  
23 all entered into from the encouragements given to the speculations of settling the wilds of North America.

24 It is to be hoped that by degrees it will be admitted that the Northern Colonies, that is those North of Tobacco, were in reality  
25 our very successful rivals in two Articles, the carrying freight trade, and the Newfoundland fishery. While the Sugar Colonies  
26 added above three millions a year to the wealth of Britain, the Rice Colonies near a million, and the Tobacco ones almost as  
27 much; those more to the north, so far from adding anything to our wealth as Colonies, were trading, fishing, farming  
28 Countries, that rivaled us in many branches of our industry, and had actually deprived us of no inconsiderable share of the  
29 wealth we reaped by means of the others. This comparative view of our former territories in America is not stated with any  
30 idea of lessening the consequence of a future friendship and connection with them; on the contrary it is to be hoped we shall  
31 reap more advantages from their trade as friends than ever we could derive from them as Colonies; for there is reason to  
32 suppose we actually gained more by them while in actual rebellion, and the common open connection cut off, than when they  
33 were in obedience to the Crown; the Newfoundland fishery taken into the Account, there is little doubt of it.

34 The East and West Indies are conceived to be the great commercial supports of the Empire; as to the Newfoundland fishery  
35 time must tell us what share we shall reserve of it. But there is one observation which is applicable to all three; they depend  
36 on very distant territorial possessions, which we have little or no hopes of retaining from their internal strength, we can keep  
37 them only by means of a superior Navy. If our marine force sinks, or if in consequence of wars, debts, and taxes, we should  
38 in future find ourselves so debilitated as to be involved in a new War, without the means of carrying it on with vigour, in  
39 these cases, all distant possessions must fall, let them be as valuable as their warmest panegyrists contend.

40 It evidently appears from this slight review of our most important dependencies, that on them we are not to exert that new  
41 policy which alone can be the preservation of the British power and consequence. The more important they are already, the  
42 less are they fit instruments in that work. No man can be hardy enough to deny that they are insecure; to add therefore to their  
43 value by exertions of policy which shall have the effect of directing any stream of capital, industry, or population into those  
44 channels, would be to add to a disproportion already an evil. The more we are convinced of the vast importance of those  
45 territories, the more we must feel the insecurity of our power; our view therefore ought not to be to increase but preserve  
46 them.

1 *Editor's note: The exact date this letter was written is not known.*

2 **25.7 A Contract Between the King of France and Thirteen United States of North America**

3 **The Loan**

4 A Contract Between the King of France and the Thirteen United States of North America, signed at Versailles July 16, 1782.

5 The King having been pleased to attend to the requests made to him in the name and on behalf of the united provinces of  
6 North America for assistance in the war and invasion under which they had for several years groaned; and His Majesty, after  
7 entering into a Treaty of Amity and Commerce with the said confederated provinces on the 6th of February, 1778, having  
8 had the goodness to support them, not only with his forces by land and sea, but also with advances of money, as abundant as  
9 they were effectual in the critical situation to which their affairs were reduced; it has been judged proper and necessary to  
10 state exactly the amount of those advances the conditions on which the King made them, the periods at which the Congress  
11 of the United States have engaged to repay them to His Majesty's royal treasury, and, in fine, to state this matter in such a  
12 way as for the future to prevent all difficulties capable of interrupting the good harmony which His Majesty is resolved to  
13 maintain and pre-serve between him and the said United States. For executing so laudable a purpose, and with a view to  
14 strengthen the bands of amity and commerce which subsist between His Majesty and the said United States, we, Charles  
15 Gravier de Vergennes, etc., Counselor of the King in all his Councils, Commander of his Orders, Minister and Secretary of  
16 State, and of his Commands and Finances, vested with full powers of His Majesty to us given for this purpose-

17 And we, Benjamin Franklin, Minister Plenipotentiary of the United States of North America, in like manner vested with full  
18 powers of the Congress of the said States for the present purpose, after duly communicating our respective powers, have  
19 agreed to the following articles:

20 **ARTICLE 1.**

21 It is agreed and certified that the sums advanced by His Majesty to the Congress of the United States under the title of a loan,  
22 in the years 1778, 1779, 1780, 1781, and the present 1782, amount to the sum of eighteen million of livres, money of France,  
23 according to the following twenty-one receipts of the above-mentioned underwritten Minister of Congress, given in virtue of  
24 his full powers, to wit:

1. 28 February 1778		750,000
2. 19 May	do	750,000
3. 3 August	do	750,000
4. 1 November	do	750,000
<b>Total</b>		<b>3,000,000</b>
5. 10 June 1779		250,000
6. 16 September	do	250,000
7. 4 October	do	250,000
8. 21 December	do	250,000
<b>Total</b>		<b>1,000,000</b>
9. 29 February 1780		750,000
10. 23 May	do	750,000
11. 21 June	do	750,000
12. 5 October	do	750,000
13. 27 November	do	1,000,000
<b>Total</b>		<b>4,000,000</b>

14. 15 February 1781		750,000
15. 15 May	do	750,000
16. 15 August	do	750,000
17. 1 August	do	1,000,000
18. 15 November	do	750,000
<b>Total</b>		<b>4,000,000</b>

19. 10 April 1782		1,500,000
20. 1 July	do	1,500,000
21. 5 of the same month		3,000,000
<b>Total</b>		<b>6,000,000</b>

**Amounting in the whole to eighteen millions, viz** **18,000,000**

1 By which receipts the said Minister has promised, in the name of Congress and in behalf of the thirteen United States, to  
2 cause to be paid and reimbursed to the royal treasury of His Majesty, on the 1st of January, 1788, at the house of his Grand  
3 Banker at Paris, the said sum of eighteen millions, money of France, with interest at five per cent per annum.

4 **ARTICLE 2.**

5 Considering that the payment of so large a capital at the one stipulated period, the 1st of January, 1788, may greatly injure  
6 the finances of the Congress of the United States, and it may perhaps be even impracticable on that footing, His Majesty has  
7 been pleased for that reason to recede in that respect from the tenor of the receipts which the Minister of Congress has given  
8 for the eighteen million livres tournois mentioned in the foregoing article, and has consented that the payment of the capital  
9 in ready money at the royal treasury be in twelve equal payments of 1,500,000 livres each, and in twelve years only, to  
10 commence from the third year after a peace.

11 **ARTICLE 3.**

12 Although the receipts of the Minister of the Congress of the United States specify that the eighteen million of livres above  
13 mentioned are to be paid at the royal treasury, with interest at five per cent per annum, His Majesty, being willing to give the  
14 said United States a new proof of his affection and friendship, has been pleased to make a present of, and to forgive the whole  
15 arrears of interest to this day, and from thence to the date of the treaty of peace; a favor which the Minister of the Congress  
16 of the United States acknowledges to flow from the pure bounty of the King, and which he accepts in the name of the said  
17 United States with profound and lively acknowledgments.

18 **ARTICLE 4.**

19 The payment of the said eighteen millions of livres tournois shall be in ready money at the royal treasury of His Majesty at  
20 Paris, in twelve equal parts and at the terms stipulated in the above second article. The interest of the said sum, at five percent  
21 per annum, shall commence with the date of the treaty of peace, and shall be paid at every period of the partial payments of  
22 the capital, and shall diminish in proportion with the payments; the Congress of the said United States being left, however,  
23 at liberty to free themselves sooner from this obligation by anticipated payments in case the state of their finances will admit.

24 **ARTICLE 5.**

25 Although the loan of five millions of florins of Holland, agreed to by the States General of the United Provinces of the  
26 Netherlands on the terms of the obligation passed on the 5th of November, 1781, between His Majesty and the said States  
27 General, has been made in His Majesty's name and guaranteed by him; it is never the less acknowledged by these presents  
28 that the said loan was made in reality on account and for the service of the United States of North America, and that the  
29 capital, amounting at a moderate valuation to the sum of ten millions livres tournois, has been paid to the said United States,

1 agreeably to a receipt for the payment of the said sum, given by the undersigned Minister of Congress the seventh day of  
2 June last.

3 **ARTICLE 6.**

4 By the convention of the said 5th of November, 1781, the King has been pleased to promise and engage to furnish and pay  
5 at the general counter of the States General of the Netherlands, the capital of the said loan, with the interest at four per cent  
6 per annum, without any charge or deduction whatever to the lenders; so that the said capital shall be wholly repaid after the  
7 space of five years, the payments to be made in ten equal periods, the first of which to commence the sixth year from the date  
8 of the loan, and afterwards from year to year to the final payment of the said sum; but it is in like manner acknowledged by  
9 this act that this engagement was entered into by the King at the request of the undersigned Minister of the United States, and  
10 on the promise by him made in the name of Congress and on behalf of the thirteen United States, to cause to be reimbursed  
11 and paid at the royal treasury of His Majesty at Paris, the capital, interest, and cost of the said loan, according to the conditions  
12 and terms fixed by the said convention of the 5th of November, 1781.

13 **ARTICLE 7.**

14 It is accordingly agreed and settled that the sum of ten million livres tournois, being by a moderate computation the principal  
15 of the loan of five millions of Holland florins above mentioned, shall be reimbursed and paid in ready money at the royal  
16 treasury of His Majesty at Paris, with the interest at four per cent per annum, in ten equal payments of one million each, and  
17 in ten terms, the first of which shall be on the 5th of November, 1787, the second the 5th of November, 1788, and so from  
18 year to year till the final payment of the said sum of ten millions, the interest lessening in proportion with the partial payments  
19 of the capital. But in consequence of the King's affection for the United States, His Majesty has been pleased to charge  
20 himself with the expense of commissions and bank for the said loan, of which expenses His Majesty has made a present to  
21 the United States, and this their undersigned Minister accepts, with thanks, in the name of Congress, as a new proof of His  
22 Majesty's generosity and friendship for the said United States.

23 **ARTICLE 8.**

24 With regard to the interest of the said loan during the five years preceding the first term of payment of the capital, as the King  
25 has engaged to pay it at the general counter of the States General of the Netherlands, at the rate of four per cent yearly, and  
26 every year, counting from the 5th of November, 1781, according to the convention of that day, the Minister of Congress  
27 acknowledges that the repayment of that is due to His Majesty by the United States, and he engages in the name of the said  
28 United States to cause payment thereof to be made, at the same time and I at the same rate, at the royal treasury of His  
29 Majesty; the first year's interest to be paid the 5th of November next, and so yearly during the five years preceding the first  
30 term for the payment of the capital, fixed as above on the 5th of November, 5 1787.

31 The high contracting parties reciprocally bind themselves to the faithful observance of this contract, the ratifications of which  
32 shall be exchanged in the space of nine months from this day, or sooner if possible. In testimony whereof we, the said  
33 Plenipotentiaries of His Most Christian Majesty and of the thirteen United States of North America, in virtue of our respective  
34 powers, have signed these presents and it hereunto fixed the seal of our arms.

35 Done at Versailles the sixteenth day of July, one thousand seven hundred and eighty-two.

36 GRAVIER DE VERGENNES

37 B FRANKLIN

38 **25.8 1783 Paris Peace Treaty**

39 **THE PARIS PEACE TREATY PEACE TREATY of 1783**

40 **In the name of the most holy and undivided Trinity.**

1 It having pleased the Divine Providence to dispose the hearts of the most serene and most potent Prince George the Third, by  
2 the grace of God, king of Great Britain, France, and Ireland, defender of the faith, duke of Brunswick and Lunebourg, arch-  
3 treasurer and prince elector of the Holy Roman Empire etc., and of the United States of America, to forget all past  
4 misunderstandings and differences that have unhappily interrupted the good correspondence and friendship which they  
5 mutually wish to restore, and to establish such a beneficial and satisfactory intercourse, between the two countries upon the  
6 ground of reciprocal advantages and mutual convenience as may promote and secure to both perpetual peace and harmony;  
7 and having for this desirable end already laid the foundation of peace and reconciliation by the Provisional Articles signed at  
8 Paris on the 30th of November 1782, by the commissioners empowered on each part, which articles were agreed to be inserted  
9 in and constitute the Treaty of Peace proposed to be concluded between the Crown of Great Britain and the said United States,  
10 but which treaty was not to be concluded until terms of peace should be agreed upon between Great Britain and France and  
11 his Britannic Majesty should be ready to conclude such treaty accordingly; and the treaty between Great Britain and France  
12 having since been concluded, his Britannic Majesty and the United States of America, in order to carry into full effect the  
13 Provisional Articles above mentioned, according to the tenor thereof, have constituted and appointed, that is to say his  
14 Britannic Majesty on his part, David Hartley, Esqr., member of the Parliament of Great Britain, and the said United States on  
15 their part, John Adams, Esqr., late a commissioner of the United States of America at the court of Versailles, late delegate in  
16 Congress from the state of Massachusetts, and chief justice of the said state, and minister plenipotentiary of the said United  
17 States to their high mightinesses the States General of the United Netherlands; Benjamin Franklin, Esqr., late delegate in  
18 Congress from the state of Pennsylvania, president of the convention of the said state, and minister plenipotentiary from the  
19 United States of America at the court of Versailles; John Jay, Esqr., late president of Congress and chief justice of the state  
20 of New York, and minister plenipotentiary from the said United States at the court of Madrid; to be plenipotentiaries for the  
21 concluding and signing the present definitive treaty; who after having reciprocally communicated their respective full powers  
22 have agreed upon and confirmed the following articles.

### 23 **Article 1**

24 His Brittanic Majesty acknowledges the said United States, viz., New Hampshire, Massachusetts Bay, Rhode Island and  
25 Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South  
26 Carolina and Georgia, to be free sovereign and independent states, that he treats with them as such, and for himself, his heirs,  
27 and successors, relinquishes all claims to the government, propriety, and territorial rights of the same and every part thereof.

### 28 **Article 2**

29 And that all disputes which might arise in future on the subject of the boundaries of the said United States may be prevented,  
30 it is hereby agreed and declared, that the following are and shall be their boundaries, viz.; from the northwest angle of Nova  
31 Scotia, viz., that angle which is formed by a line drawn due north from the source of St. Croix River to the highlands; along  
32 the said highlands which divide those rivers that empty themselves into the river St. Lawrence, from those which fall into the  
33 Atlantic Ocean, to the northwesternmost head of Connecticut River; thence down along the middle of that river to the forty-  
34 fifth degree of north latitude; from thence by a line due west on said latitude until it strikes the river Iroquois or Catarauy;  
35 thence along the middle of said river into Lake Ontario; through the middle of said lake until it strikes the communication by  
36 water between that lake and Lake Erie; thence along the middle of said communication into Lake Erie, through the middle of  
37 said lake until it arrives at the water communication between that lake and Lake Huron; thence along the middle of said water  
38 communication into Lake Huron, thence through the middle of said lake to the water communication between that lake and  
39 Lake Superior; thence through Lake Superior northward of the Isles Royal and Phelipeaux to the Long Lake; thence through  
40 the middle of said Long Lake and the water communication between it and the Lake of the Woods, to the said Lake of the  
41 Woods; thence through the said lake to the most northwesternmost point thereof, and from thence on a due west course to the  
42 river Mississippi; thence by a line to be drawn along the middle of the said river Mississippi until it shall intersect the  
43 northernmost part of the thirty-first degree of north latitude, South, by a line to be drawn due east from the determination of  
44 the line last mentioned in the latitude of thirty-one degrees of the equator, to the middle of the river Apalachicola or  
45 Catahouche; thence along the middle thereof to its junction with the Flint River, thence straight to the head of Saint Mary's  
46 River; and thence down along the middle of Saint Mary's River to the Atlantic Ocean; east, by a line to be drawn along the  
47 middle of the river Saint Croix, from its mouth in the Bay of Fundy to its source, and from its source directly north to the  
48 aforesaid highlands which divide the rivers that fall into the Atlantic Ocean from those which fall into the river Saint  
49 Lawrence; comprehending all islands within twenty leagues of any part of the shores of the United States, and lying between  
50 lines to be drawn due east from the points where the aforesaid boundaries between Nova Scotia on the one part and East  
51 Florida on the other shall, respectively, touch the Bay of Fundy and the Atlantic Ocean, excepting such islands as now are or  
52 heretofore have been within the limits of the said province of Nova Scotia.

1 **Article 3**

2 It is agreed that the people of the United States shall continue to enjoy unmolested the right to take fish of every kind on the  
3 Grand Bank and on all the other banks of Newfoundland, also in the Gulf of Saint Lawrence and at all other places in the sea,  
4 where the inhabitants of both countries used at any time heretofore to fish. And also that the inhabitants of the United States  
5 shall have liberty to take fish of every kind on such part of the coast of Newfoundland as British fishermen shall use, (but not  
6 to dry or cure the same on that island) and also on the coasts, bays and creeks of all other of his Brittanic Majesty's dominions  
7 in America; and that the American fishermen shall have liberty to dry and cure fish in any of the unsettled bays, harbors, and  
8 creeks of Nova Scotia, Magdalen Islands, and Labrador, so long as the same shall remain unsettled, but so soon as the same  
9 or either of them shall be settled, it shall not be lawful for the said fishermen to dry or cure fish at such settlement without a  
10 previous agreement for that purpose with the inhabitants, proprietors, or possessors of the ground.

11 **Article 4**

12 It is agreed that creditors on either side shall meet with no lawful impediment to the recovery of  
13 the full value in sterling money of all bona fide debts heretofore contracted.

14 **Article 5**

15 It is agreed that Congress shall earnestly recommend it to the legislatures of the respective states to provide for the restitution  
16 of all estates, rights, and properties, which have been confiscated belonging to real British subjects; and also of the estates,  
17 rights, and properties of persons resident in districts in the possession on his Majesty's arms and who have not borne arms  
18 against the said United States. And that persons of any other decription shall have free liberty to go to any part or parts of any  
19 of the thirteen United States and therein to remain twelve months unmolested in their endeavors to obtain the restitution of  
20 such of their estates, rights, and properties as may have been confiscated; and that Congress shall also earnestly recommend  
21 to the several states a reconsideration and revision of all acts or laws regarding the premises, so as to render the said laws or  
22 acts perfectly consistent not only with justice and equity but with that spirit of conciliation which on the return of the blessings  
23 of peace should universally prevail. And that Congress shall also earnestly recommend to the several states that the estates,  
24 rights, and properties, of such last mentioned persons shall be restored to them, they refunding to any persons who may be  
25 now in possession the bona fide price (where any has been given) which such persons may have paid on purchasing any of  
26 the said lands, rights, or properties since the confiscation.

27 And it is agreed that all persons who have any interest in confiscated lands, either by debts, marriage settlements, or otherwise,  
28 shall meet with no lawful impediment in the prosecution of their just rights.

29 **Article 6**

30 That there shall be no future confiscations made nor any prosecutions commenced against any person or persons for, or by  
31 reason of, the part which he or they may have taken in the present war, and that no person shall on that account suffer any  
32 future loss or damage, either in his person, liberty, or property; and that those who may be in confinement on such charges at  
33 the time of the ratification of the treaty in America shall be immediately set at liberty, and the prosecutions so commenced  
34 be discontinued.

35 **Article 7**

36 There shall be a firm and perpetual peace between his Brittanic Majesty and the said states, and between the subjects of the  
37 one and the citizens of the other, wherefore all hostilities both by sea and land shall from henceforth cease. All prisoners on  
38 both sides shall be set at liberty, and his Brittanic Majesty shall with all convenient speed, and without causing any destruction,  
39 or carrying away any Negroes or other property of the American inhabitants, withdraw all his armies, garrisons, and fleets  
40 from the said United States, and from every post, place, and harbor within the same; leaving in all fortifications, the American  
41 artillery that may be therein; and shall also order and cause all archives, records, deeds, and papers belonging to any of the  
42 said states, or their citizens, which in the course of the war may have fallen into the hands of his officers, to be forthwith  
43 restored and delivered to the proper states and persons to whom they belong.

44 **Article 8**

1 The navigation of the river Mississippi, from its source to the ocean, shall forever remain free and open to the subjects of  
2 Great Britain and the citizens of the United States.

3 **Article 9**

4 In case it should so happen that any place or territory belonging to Great Britain or to the United States should have been  
5 conquered by the arms of either from the other before the arrival of the said Provisional Articles in America, it is agreed that  
6 the same shall be restored without difficulty and without requiring any compensation.

7 **Article 10**

8 The solemn ratifications of the present treaty expedited in good and due form shall be exchanged between the contracting  
9 parties in the space of six months or sooner, if possible, to be computed from the day of the signatures of the present treaty.  
10 In witness whereof we the undersigned, their ministers plenipotentiary, have in their name and in virtue of our full powers,  
11 signed with our hands the present definitive treaty and caused the seals of our arms to be affixed thereto.

12 Done at Paris, this third day of September in the year of our Lord, one thousand seven hundred and eighty-three.

13 D. Hartley  
14 John Adams  
15 B. Franklin  
16 John Jay

17 **25.9 Articles of Confederation and perpetual Union**

18 TO ALL TO WHOM these Presents shall come, we the undersigned Delegates of the States affixed to our Names send  
19 greeting. Whereas the Delegates of the United States of America in Congress assembled, did, on the fifteenth day of  
20 November in the Year of our Lord One Thousand Seven Hundred and Seventy seven, and in the Second Year of the  
21 Independence of America, agree to certain articles of Confederation and perpetual Union between the States of New  
22 Hampshire, Massachusetts bay, Rhode Island and Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey,  
23 Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina, South Carolina and Georgia in the words following, viz.:  
24 Articles of Confederation and perpetual Union between the States of New Hampshire, Massachusetts bay, Rhode Island and  
25 Providence Plantations, Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Delaware, Maryland, Virginia, North Carolina,  
26 South Carolina and Georgia.

27 **Article I.**

28 The Style of this confederacy shall be “The United States of America.”

29 **Article II.**

30 Each state retains its sovereignty, freedom and independence, and every Power, jurisdiction and right, which is not by this  
31 Confederation expressly delegated to the United States, in Congress assembled.

32 **Article III.**

33 The said states hereby severally enter into a firm league of friendship with each other, for their common defence, the security  
34 of their Liberties, and their mutual and general welfare, binding themselves to assist each other, against all force offered to,  
35 or attacks made upon them, or any of them, on account of religion, sovereignty, trade, or any other pretence whatever.

36 **Article IV.**

37 The better to secure and perpetuate mutual friendship and intercourse among the people of the different states in this union,  
38 the free inhabitants of each of these states, paupers, vagabonds and fugitives from Justice excepted, shall be entitled to all  
39 privileges and immunities of free citizens in the several states; and the people of each state shall have free ingress and regress

1 to and from any other state, and shall enjoy therein all the privileges of trade and commerce, subject to the same duties,  
2 impositions and restrictions as the inhabitants thereof respectively, provided that such restriction shall not extend so far as to  
3 prevent the removal of property imported into any state, to any other state of which the Owner is an inhabitant; provided also  
4 that no imposition, duties or restriction shall be laid by any state, on the property of the united states, or either of them.

5 If any Person guilty of, or charged with treason, felony, or other high misdemeanor in any state, shall flee from Justice, and  
6 be found in any of the united states, he shall, upon demand of the Governor or executive power of the state from which he  
7 fled, be delivered up and removed to the state having jurisdiction of his offence.

8 Full faith and credit shall be given in each of these states to the records, acts and judicial proceedings of the courts and  
9 magistrates of every other state.

10 **Article V.**

11 For the most convenient management of the general interests of the united states, delegates shall be annually appointed in  
12 such manner as the legislatures of each state shall direct, to meet in Congress on the first Monday in November, in every  
13 year, with a power reserved to each state, to recall its delegates, or any of them, at any time within the year, and to send others  
14 in their stead, for the remainder of the Year.

15 No state shall be represented in Congress by less than two, nor more than seven Members; and no person shall be capable of  
16 being a delegate for more than three years in any term of six years; nor shall any person, being a delegate, be capable of  
17 holding any office under the united states, for which he, or another for his benefit receives any salary, fees or emolument of  
18 any kind.

19 Each state shall maintain its own delegates in a meeting of the states, and while they act as members of the committee of the  
20 states.

21 In determining questions in the united states, in Congress assembled, each state shall have one vote.

22 Freedom of speech and debate in Congress shall not be impeached or questioned in any Court, or place out of Congress, and  
23 the members of congress shall be protected in their persons from arrests and imprisonments, during the time of their going to  
24 and from, and attendance on congress, except for treason, felony, or breach of the peace.

25 **Article VI.**

26 No state without the Consent of the united states in congress assembled, shall send any embassy to, or receive any embassy  
27 from, or enter into any conference, agreement, or alliance or treaty with any King prince or state; nor shall any person holding  
28 any office of profit or trust under the united states, or any of them, accept any present, emolument, office or title of any kind  
29 whatever from any king, prince or foreign state; nor shall the united states in congress assembled, or any of them, grant any  
30 title of nobility.

31 No two or more states shall enter into any treaty, confederation or alliance whatever between them, without the consent of  
32 the united states in congress assembled, specifying accurately the purposes for which the same is to be entered into, and how  
33 long it shall continue.

34 No state shall lay any imposts or duties, which may interfere with any stipulations in treaties, entered into by the united states  
35 in congress assembled, with any king, prince or state, in pursuance of any treaties already proposed by congress, to the courts  
36 of France and Spain.

37 No vessels of war shall be kept up in time of peace by any state, except such number only, as shall be deemed necessary by  
38 the united states in congress assembled, for the defence of such state, or its trade; nor shall any body of forces be kept up by  
39 any state, in time of peace, except such number only, as in the judgment of the united states, in congress assembled, shall be  
40 deemed requisite to garrison the forts necessary for the defence of such state; but every state shall always keep up a well  
41 regulated and disciplined militia, sufficiently armed and accoutered, and shall provide and constantly have ready for use, in  
42 public stores, a due number of field pieces and tents, and a proper quantity of arms, ammunition and camp equipage.

1 No state shall engage in any war without the consent of the united states in congress assembled, unless such state be actually  
2 invaded by enemies, or shall have received certain advice of a resolution being formed by some nation of Indians to invade  
3 such state, and the danger is so imminent as not to admit of a delay till the united states in congress assembled can be  
4 consulted; nor shall any state grant commissions to any ships or vessels of war, nor letters of marque or reprisal, except it be  
5 after a declaration of war by the united states in congress assembled, and then only against the kingdom or state and the  
6 subjects thereof, against which war has been so declared, and under such regulations as shall be established by the united  
7 states in congress assembled, unless such state be infested by pirates, in which case vessels of war may be fitted out for that  
8 occasion, and kept so long as the danger shall continue, or until the united states in congress assembled shall determine  
9 otherwise.

10 **Article VII.**

11 When land forces are raised by any state for the common defence, all officers of or under the rank of colonel, shall be  
12 appointed by the legislature of each state respectively, by whom such forces shall be raised, or in such manner as such state  
13 shall direct, and all vacancies shall be filled up by the state which first made the appointment.

14 **Article VIII.**

15 All charges of war, and all other expenses that shall be incurred for the common defence or general welfare, and allowed by  
16 the united states in congress assembled, shall be defrayed out of a common treasury, which shall be supplied by the several  
17 states, in proportion to the value of all land within each state, granted to or surveyed for any Person, as such land and the  
18 buildings and improvements thereon shall be estimated according to such mode as the united states in congress assembled,  
19 shall from time to time direct and appoint. The taxes for paying that proportion shall be laid and levied by the authority and  
20 direction of the legislatures of the several states within the time agreed upon by the united states in congress assembled.

21 **Article IX.**

22 The united states in congress assembled, shall have the sole and exclusive right and power of determining on peace and war,  
23 except in the cases mentioned in the sixth article—of sending and receiving ambassadors—entering into treaties and alliances,  
24 provided that no treaty of commerce shall be made whereby the legislative power of the respective states shall be restrained  
25 from imposing such imposts and duties on foreigners, as their own people are subjected to, or from prohibiting the exportation  
26 or importation of any species of goods or commodities whatsoever—of establishing rules for deciding in all cases, what  
27 captures on land or water shall be legal, and in what manner prizes taken by land or naval forces in the service of the united  
28 states shall be divided or appropriated—of granting letters of marque and reprisal in times of peace—appointing courts for  
29 the trial of piracies and felonies committed on the high seas and establishing courts for receiving and determining finally  
30 appeals in all cases of captures, provided that no member of Congress shall be appointed a judge of any of the said courts.

31 The united states in congress assembled shall also be the last resort on appeal in all disputes and differences now subsisting  
32 or that hereafter may arise between two or more states concerning boundary, jurisdiction or any other cause whatever; which  
33 authority shall always be exercised in the manner following. Whenever the legislative or executive authority or lawful agent  
34 of any state in controversy with another shall present a petition to congress stating the matter in question and praying for a  
35 hearing, notice thereof shall be given by order of congress to the legislative or executive authority of the other state in  
36 controversy, and a day assigned for the appearance of the parties by their lawful agents, who shall then be directed to appoint  
37 by joint consent, commissioners or judges to constitute a court for hearing and determining the matter in question; but if they  
38 cannot agree, congress shall name three persons out of each of the united states, and from the list of such persons each party  
39 shall alternately strike out one, the petitioners beginning, until the number shall be reduced to thirteen; and from that number  
40 not less than seven, nor more than nine names as congress shall direct, shall in the presence of congress be drawn out by lot,  
41 and the persons whose names shall be so drawn or any five of them, shall be commissioners or judges, to hear and finally  
42 determine the controversy, so always as a major part of the judges who shall hear the cause shall agree in the determination;  
43 and if either party shall neglect to attend at the day appointed, without showing reasons, which congress shall judge sufficient,  
44 or being present shall refuse to strike, the congress shall proceed to nominate three persons out of each state, and the secretary  
45 of congress shall strike in behalf of such party absent or refusing; and the judgment and sentence of the court to be appointed,  
46 in the manner before prescribed, shall be final and conclusive; and if any of the parties shall refuse to submit to the authority  
47 of such court, or to appear or defend their claim or cause, the court shall nevertheless proceed to pronounce sentence, or  
48 judgment, which shall in like manner be final and decisive, the judgment or sentence and other proceedings being in either  
49 case transmitted to congress, and lodged among the acts of congress for the security of the parties concerned; provided that

1 every commissioner, before he sits in judgment, shall take an oath to be administered by one of the judges of the supreme or  
2 superior court of the state, where the cause shall be tried, “well and truly to hear and determine the matter in question,  
3 according to the best of his judgement, without favor, affection or hope of reward;” provided also, that no state shall be  
4 deprived of territory for the benefit of the united states.

5 All controversies concerning the private right of soil claimed under different grants of two or more states, whose jurisdictions  
6 as they may respect such lands, and the states which passed such grants are adjusted, the said grants or either of them being  
7 at the same time claimed to have originated antecedent to such settlement of jurisdiction, shall on the petition of either party  
8 to the congress of the united states, be finally determined as near as may be in the same manner as is before prescribed for  
9 deciding disputes respecting territorial jurisdiction between different states.

10 The united states in congress assembled shall also have the sole and exclusive right and power of regulating the alloy and  
11 value of coin struck by their own authority, or by that of the respective states—fixing the standards of weights and measures  
12 throughout the united states—regulating the trade and managing all affairs with the Indians, not members of any of the states,  
13 provided that the legislative right of any state within its own limits be not infringed or violated—establishing or regulating  
14 post offices from one state to another, throughout all the united states, and exacting such postage on the papers passing  
15 through the same as may be requisite to defray the expenses of the said office—appointing all officers of the land forces, in  
16 the service of the united states, excepting regimental officers—appointing all the officers of the naval forces, and  
17 commissioning all officers whatever in the service of the united states—making rules for the government and regulation of  
18 the said land and naval forces, and directing their operations.

19 The united states in congress assembled shall have authority to appoint a committee, to sit in the recess of congress, to be  
20 denominated “A Committee of the States,” and to consist of one delegate from each state; and to appoint such other  
21 committees and civil officers as may be necessary for managing the general affairs of the united states under their direction—  
22 to appoint one of their members to preside, provided that no person be allowed to serve in the office of president more than  
23 one year in any term of three years; to ascertain the necessary sums of Money to be raised for the service of the united states,  
24 and to appropriate and apply the same for defraying the public expenses—to borrow money, or emit bills on the credit of the  
25 united states, transmitting every half year to the respective states an account of the sums of money so borrowed or emitted—  
26 to build and equip a navy—to agree upon the number of land forces, and to make requisitions from each state for its quota,  
27 in proportion to the number of white inhabitants in such state; which requisition shall be binding, and thereupon the legislature  
28 of each state shall appoint the regimental officers, raise the men and clothe, arm and equip them in a soldier like manner, at  
29 the expense of the united states; and the officers and men so clothed, armed and equipped shall march to the place appointed,  
30 and within the time agreed on by the united states in congress assembled. But if the united states in congress assembled shall,  
31 on consideration of circumstances judge proper that any state should not raise men, or should raise a smaller number than its  
32 quota, such extra number shall be raised, officered, clothed, armed and equipped in the same manner as the quota of such  
33 state, unless the legislature of such state shall judge that such extra number cannot be safely spared out of the same, in which  
34 case they shall raise, officer, clothe, arm and equip as many of such extra number as they judge can be safely spared. And the  
35 officers and men so clothed, armed and equipped, shall march to the place appointed, and within the time agreed on by the  
36 united states in congress assembled.

37 The united states in congress assembled shall never engage in a war, nor grant letters of marque or reprisal in time of peace,  
38 nor enter into any treaties or alliances, nor coin money, nor regulate the value thereof, nor ascertain the sums and expenses  
39 necessary for the defence and welfare of the united states, or any of them, nor emit bills, nor borrow money on the credit of  
40 the united states, nor appropriate money, nor agree upon the number of vessels of war, to be built or purchased, or the number  
41 of land or sea forces to be raised, nor appoint a commander in chief of the army or navy, unless nine states assent to the same:  
42 nor shall a question on any other point, except for adjourning from day to day be determined, unless by the votes of the  
43 majority of the united states in congress assembled.

44 The congress of the united states shall have power to adjourn to any time within the year, and to any place within the united  
45 states, so that no period of adjournment be for a longer duration than the space of six Months, and shall publish the Journal  
46 of their proceedings monthly, except such parts thereof relating to treaties, alliances or military operations, as in their  
47 judgment require secrecy; and the yeas and nays of the delegates of each state on any question shall be entered on the Journal,  
48 when it is desired by any delegate; and the delegates of a state, or any of them, at his or their request shall be furnished with  
49 a transcript of the said Journal, except such parts as are above excepted, to lay before the legislatures of the several states.

50 **Article X.**

1 The committee of the states, or any nine of them, shall be authorized to execute, in the recess of congress, such of the powers  
2 of congress as the united states in congress assembled, by the consent of nine states, shall from time to time think expedient  
3 to vest them with; provided that no power be delegated to the said committee, for the exercise of which, by the articles of  
4 confederation, the voice of nine states in the congress of the united states assembled is requisite.

5 **Article XI.**

6 Canada acceding to this confederation, and joining in the measures of the united states, shall be admitted into, and entitled to  
7 all the advantages of this union; but no other colony shall be admitted into the same, unless such admission be agreed to by  
8 nine states.

9 **Article XII.**

10 All bills of credit emitted, monies borrowed and debts contracted by, or under the authority of congress, before the assembling  
11 of the united states, in pursuance of the present confederation, shall be deemed and considered as a charge against the united  
12 states, for payment and satisfaction whereof the said united states, and the public faith are hereby solemnly pledged.

13 **Article XIII.**

14 Every state shall abide by the determination of the united states in congress assembled, on all questions which by this  
15 confederation are submitted to them. And the Articles of this confederation shall be inviolably observed by every state, and  
16 the union shall be perpetual; nor shall any alteration at any time hereafter be made in any of them; unless such alteration be  
17 agreed to in a congress of the united states, and be afterwards confirmed by the legislatures of every state.

18 AND WHEREAS it hath pleased the Great Governor of the World to incline the hearts of the legislatures we respectively  
19 represent in congress, to approve of, and to authorize us to ratify the said articles of confederation and perpetual union.  
20 KNOW YE that we the undersigned delegates, by virtue of the power and authority to us given for that purpose, do by these  
21 presents, in the name and in behalf of our respective constituents, fully and entirely ratify and confirm each and every of the  
22 said articles of confederation and perpetual union, and all and singular the matters and things therein contained: And we do  
23 further solemnly plight and engage the faith of our respective constituents, that they shall abide by the determinations of the  
24 united states in congress assembled, on all questions, which by the said confederation are submitted to them. And that the  
25 articles thereof shall be inviolably observed by the states we respectively represent, and that the union shall be perpetual. In  
26 Witness whereof we have hereunto set our hands in Congress. Done at Philadelphia in the State of Pennsylvania the ninth  
27 day of July in the Year of our Lord one Thousand seven Hundred and Seventy-eight, and in the third year of the independence  
28 of America.

29 On the part & behalf of the:

30 **State of New Hampshire**

31 Josiah Bartlett

32 John Wentworth Junr.

33 August 8th 1778

34 Francis Dana

35 James Lovell

36 Samuel Holten

37 **State of Rhode Island and Providence Plantations**

38 William Ellery

1 Henry Marchant

2 John Collins

3 Titus Hosmer

4 Andrew Adams

5 **State of New York**

6 James Duane

7 Francis Lewis

8 Wm Duer

9 Gouv Morris

10 **State of Pennsylvania**

11 Robt Morris

12 Daniel Roberdeau

13 John Bayard Smith

14 William Clingan

15 Joseph Reed

16 22nd July 1778

17 **State of Maryland**

18 John Hanson

19 March 1 1781

20 Daniel Carroll

21 Jno Harvie

22 Francis Lightfoot Lee

23 **State of No Carolina**

24 John Penn

25 July 21st 1778

26 Corns Harnett

27 Jno Williams

28 Thos Heyward Junr

1 State of Georgia

2 Jno Walton

3 24th July 1778

4 Edwd Telfair

5 Edwd Langworthy

6 **25.10 The Northwest Ordinance**

7 July 13, in the year of our Lord 1787

8 **An Ordinance for the government of the Territory of the United States northwest of the River**  
9 **Ohio.**

10 **Section 1**

11 *Be it ordained by the United States in Congress assembled,* That the said territory, for the purposes of temporary government,  
12 be one district, subject, however, to be divided into two districts, as future circumstances may, in the opinion of Congress,  
13 make it expedient.

14 **Section 2**

15 *Be it ordained by the authority aforesaid,* That the estates, both of resident and nonresident proprietors in the said territory,  
16 dying intestate, shall descent to, and be distributed among their children, and the descendants of a deceased child, in equal  
17 parts; the descendants of a deceased child or grandchild to take the share of their deceased parent in equal parts among them:  
18 And where there shall be no children or descendants, then in equal parts to the next of kin in equal degree; and among  
19 collaterals, the children of a deceased brother or sister of the intestate shall have, in equal parts among them, their deceased  
20 parents' share; and there shall in no case be a distinction between kindred of the whole and half blood; saving, in all cases, to  
21 the widow of the intestate her third part of the real estate for life, and one third part of the personal estate; and this law relative  
22 to descents and dower, shall remain in full force until altered by the legislature of the district. And until the governor and  
23 judges shall adopt laws as hereinafter mentioned, estates in the said territory may be devised or bequeathed by wills in writing,  
24 signed and sealed by him or her in whom the estate may be (being of full age), and attested by three witnesses; and real estates  
25 may be conveyed by lease and release, or bargain and sale, signed, sealed and delivered by the person being of full age, in  
26 whom the estate may be, and attested by two witnesses, provided such wills be duly proved, and such conveyances be  
27 acknowledged, or the execution thereof duly proved, and be recorded within one year after proper magistrates, courts, and  
28 registers shall be appointed for that purpose; and personal property may be transferred by delivery; saving, however to the  
29 French and Canadian inhabitants, and other settlers of the Kaskaskies, St. Vincents and the neighboring villages who have  
30 heretofore professed themselves citizens of Virginia, their laws and customs now in force among them, relative to the descent  
31 and conveyance, of property.

32 **Section 3**

33 *Be it ordained by the authority aforesaid,* That there shall be appointed from time to time by Congress, a governor, whose  
34 commission shall continue in force for the term of three years, unless sooner revoked by Congress; he shall reside in the  
35 district, and have a freehold estate therein in 1,000 acres of land, while in the exercise of his office.

36 **Section 4**

37 There shall be appointed from time to time by Congress, a secretary, whose commission shall continue in force for four years  
38 unless sooner revoked; he shall reside in the district, and have a freehold estate therein in 500 acres of land, while in the  
39 exercise of his office. It shall be his duty to keep and preserve the acts and laws passed by the legislature, and the public  
40 records of the district, and the proceedings of the governor in his executive department, and transmit authentic copies of such

1 acts and proceedings, every six months, to the Secretary of Congress: There shall also be appointed a court to consist of three  
2 judges, any two of whom to form a court, who shall have a common law jurisdiction, and reside in the district, and have each  
3 therein a freehold estate in 500 acres of land while in the exercise of their offices; and their commissions shall continue in  
4 force during good behavior.

5 **Section 5**

6 The governor and judges, or a majority of them, shall adopt and publish in the district such laws of the original States, criminal  
7 and civil, as may be necessary and best suited to the circumstances of the district, and report them to Congress from time to  
8 time: which laws shall be in force in the district until the organization of the General Assembly therein, unless disapproved  
9 of by Congress; but afterwards the Legislature shall have authority to alter them as they shall think fit.

10 **Section 6**

11 The governor, for the time being, shall be commander in chief of the militia, appoint and commission all officers in the same  
12 below the rank of general officers; all general officers shall be appointed and commissioned by Congress.

13 **Section 7**

14 Previous to the organization of the general assembly, the governor shall appoint such magistrates and other civil officers in  
15 each county or township, as he shall find necessary for the preservation of the peace and good order in the same: After the  
16 general assembly shall be organized, the powers and duties of the magistrates and other civil officers shall be regulated and  
17 defined by the said assembly; but all magistrates and other civil officers not herein otherwise directed, shall during the  
18 continuance of this temporary government, be appointed by the governor.

19 **Section 8**

20 For the prevention of crimes and injuries, the laws to be adopted or made shall have force in all parts of the district, and for  
21 the execution of process, criminal and civil, the governor shall make proper divisions thereof; and he shall proceed from time  
22 to time as circumstances may require, to lay out the parts of the district in which the Indian titles shall have been extinguished,  
23 into counties and townships, subject, however, to such alterations as may thereafter be made by the legislature.

24 **Section 9**

25 So soon as there shall be five thousand free male inhabitants of full age in the district, upon giving proof thereof to the  
26 governor, they shall receive authority, with time and place, to elect a representative from their counties or townships to  
27 represent them in the general assembly: Provided, That, for every five hundred free male inhabitants, there shall be one  
28 representative, and so on progressively with the number of free male inhabitants shall the right of representation increase,  
29 until the number of representatives shall amount to twenty five; after which, the number and proportion of representatives  
30 shall be regulated by the legislature: Provided, That no person be eligible or qualified to act as a representative unless he shall  
31 have been a citizen of one of the United States three years, and be a resident in the district, or unless he shall have resided in  
32 the district three years; and, in either case, shall likewise hold in his own right, in fee simple, two hundred acres of land within  
33 the same; Provided, also, That a freehold in fifty acres of land in the district, having been a citizen of one of the states, and  
34 being resident in the district, or the like freehold and two years residence in the district, shall be necessary to qualify a man  
35 as an elector of a representative.

36 **Section 10**

37 The representatives thus elected, shall serve for the term of two years; and, in case of the death of a representative, or removal  
38 from office, the governor shall issue a writ to the county or township for which he was a member, to elect another in his stead,  
39 to serve for the residue of the term.

40 **Section 11**

41 The general assembly or legislature shall consist of the governor, legislative council, and a house of representatives. The  
42 Legislative Council shall consist of five members, to continue in office five years, unless sooner removed by Congress; any

1 three of whom to be a quorum: and the members of the Council shall be nominated and appointed in the following manner,  
2 to wit: As soon as representatives shall be elected, the Governor shall appoint a time and place for them to meet together;  
3 and, when met, they shall nominate ten persons, residents in the district, and each possessed of a freehold in five hundred  
4 acres of land, and return their names to Congress; five of whom Congress shall appoint and commission to serve as aforesaid;  
5 and, whenever a vacancy shall happen in the council, by death or removal from office, the house of representatives shall  
6 nominate two persons, qualified as aforesaid, for each vacancy, and return their names to Congress; one of whom congress  
7 shall appoint and commission for the residue of the term. And every five years, four months at least before the expiration of  
8 the time of service of the members of council, the said house shall nominate ten persons, qualified as aforesaid, and return  
9 their names to Congress; five of whom Congress shall appoint and commission to serve as members of the council five years,  
10 unless sooner removed. And the governor, legislative council, and house of representatives, shall have authority to make laws  
11 in all cases, for the good government of the district, not repugnant to the principles and articles in this ordinance established  
12 and declared. And all bills, having passed by a majority in the house, and by a majority in the council, shall be referred to the  
13 governor for his assent; but no bill, or legislative act whatever, shall be of any force without his assent. The governor shall  
14 have power to convene, prorogue, and dissolve the general assembly, when, in his opinion, it shall be expedient.

## 15 **Section 12**

16 The governor, judges, legislative council, secretary, and such other officers as Congress shall appoint in the district, shall  
17 take an oath or affirmation of fidelity and of office; the governor before the president of congress, and all other officers before  
18 the Governor. As soon as a legislature shall be formed in the district, the council and house assembled in one room, shall  
19 have authority, by joint ballot, to elect a delegate to Congress, who shall have a seat in Congress, with a right of debating but  
20 not voting during this temporary government.

## 21 **Section 13**

22 And, for extending the fundamental principles of civil and religious liberty, which form the basis whereon these republics,  
23 their laws and constitutions are erected; to fix and establish those principles as the basis of all laws, constitutions, and  
24 governments, which forever hereafter shall be formed in the said territory: to provide also for the establishment of States, and  
25 permanent government therein, and for their admission to a share in the federal councils on an equal footing with the original  
26 States, at as early periods as may be consistent with the general interest:

## 27 **Section 14**

28 It is hereby ordained and declared by the authority aforesaid, That the following articles shall be considered as articles of  
29 compact between the original States and the people and States in the said territory and forever remain unalterable, unless by  
30 common consent, to wit:

### 31 **Article 1**

32 **No person, demeaning himself in a peaceable and orderly manner, shall ever be molested on account of his mode of**  
33 **worship or religious sentiments, in the said territory.**

### 34 **Article 2**

35 The inhabitants of the said territory shall always be entitled to the benefits of the writ of *habeas corpus*, and of the trial by  
36 jury; of a proportionate representation of the people in the legislature; and of judicial proceedings according to the course of  
37 the common law. All persons shall be bailable, unless for capital offenses, where the proof shall be evident or the presumption  
38 great. All fines shall be moderate; and no cruel or unusual punishments shall be inflicted. No man shall be deprived of his  
39 liberty or property, but by the judgment of his peers or the law of the land; and, should the public exigencies make it necessary,  
40 for the common preservation, to take any person's property, or to demand his particular services, full compensation shall be  
41 made for the same. And, in the just preservation of rights and property, it is understood and declared, that no law ought ever  
42 to be made, or have force in the said territory, that shall, in any manner whatever, interfere with or affect private contracts or  
43 engagements, *bona fide*, and without fraud, previously formed.

### 44 **Article 3**

1 **Religion, morality, and knowledge, being necessary to good government and the happiness of mankind, schools and**  
2 **the means of education shall forever be encouraged.** The utmost good faith shall always be observed towards the Indians;  
3 their lands and property shall never be taken from them without their consent; and, in their property, rights, and liberty, they  
4 shall never be invaded or disturbed, unless in just and lawful wars authorized by Congress; but laws founded in justice and  
5 humanity, shall from time to time be made for preventing wrongs being done to them, and for preserving peace and friendship  
6 with them.

#### 7 **Article 4**

8 The said territory, and the States which may be formed therein, shall forever remain a part of this Confederacy of the United  
9 States of America, subject to the Articles of Confederation, and to such alterations therein as shall be constitutionally made;  
10 and to all the acts and ordinances of the United States in Congress assembled, conformable thereto. The inhabitants and  
11 settlers in the said territory shall be subject to pay a part of the federal debts contracted or to be contracted, and a proportional  
12 part of the expenses of government, to be apportioned on them by Congress according to the same common rule and measure  
13 by which apportionments thereof shall be made on the other States; and the taxes for paying their proportion shall be laid and  
14 levied by the authority and direction of the legislatures of the district or districts, or new States, as in the original States,  
15 within the time agreed upon by the United States in Congress assembled. The legislatures of those districts or new States,  
16 shall never interfere with the primary disposal of the soil by the United States in Congress assembled, nor with any regulations  
17 Congress may find necessary for securing the title in such soil to the *bona fide* purchasers. No tax shall be imposed on lands  
18 the property of the United States; and, in no case, shall nonresident proprietors be taxed higher than residents. The navigable  
19 waters leading into the Mississippi and St. Lawrence, and the carrying places between the same, shall be common highways  
20 and forever free, as well to the inhabitants of the said territory as to the citizens of the United States, and those of any other  
21 States that may be admitted into the confederacy, without any tax, impost, or duty therefor.

#### 22 **Article 5**

23 There shall be formed in the said territory, not less than three nor more than five States; and the boundaries of the States, as  
24 soon as Virginia shall alter her act of cession, and consent to the same, shall become fixed and established as follows, to wit:  
25 The western State in the said territory, shall be bounded by the Mississippi, the Ohio, and Wabash Rivers; a direct line drawn  
26 from the Wabash and Post Vincents, due North, to the territorial line between the United States and Canada; and, by the said  
27 territorial line, to the Lake of the Woods and Mississippi. The middle State shall be bounded by the said direct line, the  
28 Wabash from Post Vincents to the Ohio, by the Ohio, by a direct line, drawn due north from the mouth of the Great Miami,  
29 to the said territorial line, and by the said territorial line. The eastern State shall be bounded by the last mentioned direct line,  
30 the Ohio, Pennsylvania, and the said territorial line: *Provided, however,* and it is further understood and declared, that the  
31 boundaries of these three States shall be subject so far to be altered, that, if Congress shall hereafter find it expedient, they  
32 shall have authority to form one or two States in that part of the said territory which lies north of an east and west line drawn  
33 through the southerly bend or extreme of Lake Michigan. And, whenever any of the said States shall have sixty thousand free  
34 inhabitants therein, **such State shall be admitted,** by its delegates, into the Congress of the United States, **on an equal**  
35 **footing with the original States in all respects whatever,** and shall be at liberty to form a permanent constitution and State  
36 government: *Provided,* the constitution and government so to be formed, shall be republican, and in conformity to the  
37 principles contained in these articles; and, so far as it can be consistent with the general interest of the confederacy, such  
38 admission shall be allowed at an earlier period, and when there may be a less number of free inhabitants in the State than  
39 sixty thousand.

#### 40 **Article 6**

41 There shall be neither slavery nor involuntary servitude in the said territory, otherwise than in the punishment of crimes  
42 whereof the party shall have been duly convicted: *Provided, always,* That any person escaping into the same, from whom  
43 labor or service is lawfully claimed in any one of the original States, such fugitive may be lawfully reclaimed and conveyed  
44 to the person claiming his or her labor or service as aforesaid.

45 *Be it ordained by the authority aforesaid,* That the resolutions of the 23rd of April, 1784, relative to the subject of this  
46 ordinance, be, and the same are hereby repealed and declared null and void.

47 Done by the United States, in Congress assembled, the 13th day of July, in the year of our Lord 1787, and of their sovereignty  
48 and independence the twelfth.

## 25.11 Virginia Resolution

RESOLVED, That the General Assembly of Virginia, doth unequivocally express a firm resolution to maintain and defend the *Constitution of the United States*, and the Constitution of this State, against every aggression either foreign or domestic, and that they will support the government of the United States in all measures warranted by the former.

That this assembly most solemnly declares a warm attachment to the Union of the States, to maintain which it pledges all its powers; and that for this end, it is their duty to watch over and oppose every infraction of those principles which constitute the only basis of that Union, because a faithful observance of them, can alone secure it's existence and the public happiness.

That this Assembly doth explicitly and peremptorily declare, that it views the powers of the federal government, as resulting from the compact, to which the states are parties; as limited by the plain sense and intention of the instrument constituting the compact; as no further valid that they are authorized by the grants enumerated in that compact; and that in case of a deliberate, palpable, and dangerous exercise of other powers, not granted by the said compact, the states who are parties thereto, have the right, and are in duty bound, to interpose for arresting the progress of the evil, and for maintaining within their respective limits, the authorities, rights and liberties appertaining to them.

That the General Assembly doth also express its deep regret, that a spirit has in sundry instances, been manifested by the federal government, to enlarge its powers by forced constructions of the constitutional charter which defines them; and that implications have appeared of a design to expound certain general phrases (which having been copied from the very limited grant of power, in the former articles of confederation were the less liable to be misconstrued) so as to destroy the meaning and effect, of the particular enumeration which necessarily explains and limits the general phrases; and so as to consolidate the states by degrees, into one sovereignty, the obvious tendency and inevitable consequence of which would be, to transform the present republican system of the United States, into an absolute, or at best a mixed monarchy.

That the General Assembly doth particularly protest against the palpable and alarming infractions of the Constitution, in the two late cases of the "Alien and Sedition Acts" passed at the last session of Congress; the first of which exercises a power no where delegated to the federal government, and which by uniting legislative and judicial powers to those of executive, subverts the general principles of free government; as well as the particular organization, and positive provisions of the federal constitution; and the other of which acts, exercises in like manner, a power not delegated by the constitution, but on the contrary, expressly and positively forbidden by one of the amendments thereto; a power, which more than any other, ought to produce universal alarm, because it is levelled against that right of freely examining public characters and measures, and of free communication among the people thereon, which has ever been justly deemed, the only effectual guardian of every other right.

That this state having by its Convention, which ratified the federal Constitution, expressly declared, that among other essential rights, "the Liberty of Conscience and of the Press cannot be cancelled, abridged, restrained, or modified by any authority of the United States," and from its extreme anxiety to guard these rights from every possible attack of sophistry or ambition, having with other states, recommended an amendment for that purpose, which amendment was, in due time, annexed to the Constitution; it would mark a reproachable inconsistency, and criminal degeneracy, if an indifference were now shewn, to the most palpable violation of one of the Rights, thus declared and secured; and to the establishment of a precedent which may be fatal to the other.

That the good people of this commonwealth, having ever felt, and continuing to feel, the most sincere affection for their brethren of the other states; the truest anxiety for establishing and perpetuating the union of all; and the most scrupulous fidelity to that constitution, which is the pledge of mutual friendship, and the instrument of mutual happiness; the General Assembly doth solemnly appeal to the like dispositions of the other states, in confidence that they will concur with this commonwealth in declaring, as it does hereby declare, that the acts aforesaid, are unconstitutional; and that the necessary and proper measures will be taken by each, for co-operating with this state, in maintaining the Authorities, Rights, and Liberties, referred to the States respectively, or to the people.

That the Governor be desired, to transmit a copy of the foregoing Resolutions to the executive authority of each of the other states, with a request that the same may be communicated to the Legislature thereof; and that a copy be furnished to each of the Senators and Representatives representing this state in the Congress of the United States.

Agreed to by the Senate, December 24, 1798.

1 **25.12 Kentucky Resolution of 1799**

2 **RESOLUTIONS IN GENERAL ASSEMBLY**

3 THE representatives of the good people of this commonwealth in general assembly convened, having maturely considered  
4 the answers of sundry states in the Union, to their resolutions passed at the last session, respecting certain unconstitutional  
5 laws of Congress, commonly called the alien and sedition laws, would be faithless indeed to themselves, and to those they  
6 represent, were they silently to acquiesce in principles and doctrines attempted to be maintained in all those answers, that of  
7 Virginia only excepted. To again enter the field of argument, and attempt more fully or forcibly to expose the  
8 unconstitutionality of those obnoxious laws, would, it is apprehended be as unnecessary as unavailing.

9 We cannot however but lament, that in the discussion of those interesting subjects, by sundry of the legislatures of our sister  
10 states, unfounded suggestions, and uncandid insinuations, derogatory of the true character and principles of the good people  
11 of this commonwealth, have been substituted in place of fair reasoning and sound argument. Our opinions of those alarming  
12 measures of the general government, together with our reasons for those opinions, were detailed with decency and with  
13 temper, and submitted to the discussion and judgment of our fellow citizens throughout the Union. Whether the decency and  
14 temper have been observed in the answers of most of those states who have denied or attempted to obviate the great truths  
15 contained in those resolutions, we have now only to submit to a candid world. Faithful to the true principles of the federal  
16 union, unconscious of any designs to disturb the harmony of that Union, and anxious only to escape the fangs of despotism,  
17 the good people of this commonwealth are regardless of censure or calumny.

18 Least however the silence of this commonwealth should be construed into an acquiescence in the doctrines and principles  
19 advanced and attempted to be maintained by the said answers, or least those of our fellow citizens throughout the Union, who  
20 so widely differ from us on those important subjects, should be deluded by the expectation, that we shall be deterred from  
21 what we conceive our duty; or shrink from the principles contained in those resolutions: therefore.

22 RESOLVED, That this commonwealth considers the federal union, upon the terms and for the purposes specified in the late  
23 compact, as conducive to the liberty and happiness of the several states: That it does now unequivocally declare its attachment  
24 to the Union, and to that compact, agreeable to its obvious and real intention, and will be among the last to seek its dissolution:  
25 That if those who administer the general government be permitted to transgress the limits fixed by that compact, by a total  
26 disregard to the special delegations of power therein contained, annihilation of the state governments, and the erection upon  
27 their ruins, of a general consolidated government, will be the inevitable consequence: That the principle and construction  
28 contended for by sundry of the state legislatures, that the general government is the exclusive judge of the extent of the powers  
29 delegated to it, stop nothing short of despotism; since the discretion of those who administer the government, and not the  
30 constitution, would be the measure of their powers: That the several states who formed that instrument, being sovereign and  
31 independent, have the unquestionable right to judge of its infraction; and that a nullification, by those sovereignties, of all  
32 unauthorized acts done under colour of that instrument, is the rightful remedy: That this commonwealth does upon the most  
33 deliberate reconsideration declare, that the said alien and sedition laws, are in their opinion, palpable violations of the said  
34 constitution; and however cheerfully it may be disposed to surrender its opinion to a majority of its sister states in matters of  
35 ordinary or doubtful policy; yet, in momentous regulations like the present, which so vitally wound the best rights of the  
36 citizen, it would consider a silent acquiescence as highly criminal: That although this commonwealth as a party to the federal  
37 compact; will bow to the laws of the Union, yet it does at the same time declare, that it will not now, nor ever hereafter, cease  
38 to oppose in a constitutional manner, every attempt from what quarter soever offered, to violate that compact:

39 AND FINALLY, in order that no pretexts or arguments may be drawn from a supposed acquiescence on the part of this  
40 commonwealth in the constitutionality of those laws, and be thereby used as precedents for similar future violations of federal  
41 compact; this commonwealth does now enter against them, its SOLEMN PROTEST.

42 Approved December 3rd, 1799.

43 **25.13 Draft Declaration of Protest of the Commonwealth of Virginia**

44 Draft Declaration and Protest of the Commonwealth of Virginia 1825 on the Principles of the *Constitution of the United*  
45 *States of America*, and on the Violations of them.

1 We, the General Assembly of Virginia, on behalf, and in the name of the people thereof, do declare as follows:

2 The States in North America which confederated to establish their independence of the government of Great Britain, of which  
3 Virginia was one, became, on that acquisition, free and independent States, and as such, authorized to constitute governments,  
4 each for itself, in such form as it thought best.

5 They entered into a compact, (which is called the *Constitution of the United States of America*,) by which they agreed to unite  
6 in a single government as to their relations with each other, and with foreign nations, and as to certain other articles  
7 particularly specified. They retained at the same time, each to itself, the other rights of independent government,  
8 comprehending mainly their domestic interests.

9 For the administration of their federal branch, they agreed to appoint, in conjunction, a distinct set of functionaries, legislative,  
10 executive, and judiciary, in the manner settled in that compact: while to each, severally, and of course, remained its original  
11 right of appointing, each for itself, a separate set of functionaries, legislative, executive, and judiciary, also, for administering  
12 the domestic branch of their respective governments.

13 These two sets of officers, each independent of the other, constitute thus a whole of government, for each State separately;  
14 the powers ascribed to the one, as specifically made federal, exercised over the whole, the residuary powers, retained to the  
15 other, exercisable exclusively over its particular State, foreign herein, each to the others, as they were before the original  
16 compact.

17 To this construction of government and distribution of its powers, the **Commonwealth of Virginia does religiously** and  
18 affectionately adhere, opposing, with equal fidelity and firmness, the usurpation of either set of functionaries on the rightful  
19 powers of the other.

20 But the federal branch has assumed in some cases, and claimed in others, a right of enlarging its own powers by constructions,  
21 inferences, and indefinite deductions from those directly given, which this assembly does declare to be usurpations of the  
22 powers retained to the independent branches, mere interpolations into the compact, and direct infractions of it.

23 They claim, for example, and have commenced the exercise of a right to construct roads, open canals, and effect other internal  
24 improvements within the territories and jurisdictions exclusively belonging to the several States, which this assembly does  
25 declare has not been given to that branch by the constitutional compact, but remains to each State among its domestic and  
26 unalienated powers, exercisable within itself and by its domestic authorities alone.

27 This assembly does further disavow and declare to be most false and unfounded, the doctrine that the compact, in authorizing  
28 its federal branch to lay and collect taxes, duties, imposts and excises to pay the debts and provide for the common defence  
29 and general welfare of the United States, has given them thereby a power to do whatever they may think, or pretend, would  
30 promote the general welfare, which construction would make that, of itself, a complete government, without limitation of  
31 powers; but that the plain sense and obvious meaning were, that they might levy the taxes necessary to provide for the general  
32 welfare, by the various acts of power therein specified and delegated to them, and by no others.

33 Nor is it admitted, as has been said, that the people of these States, by not investing their federal branch with all the means of  
34 bettering their condition, have denied to themselves any which may effect that purpose; since, in the distribution of these  
35 means they have given to that branch those which belong to its department, and to the States have reserved separately the  
36 residue which belong to them separately. And thus by the organization of the two branches taken together, have completely  
37 secured the first object of human association, the full improvement of their condition, and reserved to themselves all the  
38 faculties of multiplying their own blessings.

39 Whilst the General Assembly thus declares the rights retained by the States, rights which they have never yielded, and which  
40 this State will never voluntarily yield, they do not mean to raise the banner of disaffection, or of separation from their sister  
41 States, co-parties with themselves to this compact. They know and value too highly the blessings of their Union as to foreign  
42 nations and questions arising among themselves, to consider every infraction as to be met by actual resistance. They respect  
43 too affectionately the opinions of those possessing the same rights under the same instrument, to make every difference of  
44 construction a ground of immediate rupture. They would, indeed, consider such a rupture as among the greatest calamities  
45 which could befall them; but not the greatest. There is yet one greater, submission to a government of unlimited powers. It is  
46 only when the hope of avoiding this shall become absolutely desperate, that further forbearance could not be indulged.

1 Should a majority of the co-parties, therefore, contrary to the expectation and hope of this assembly, prefer, at this time,  
2 acquiescence in these assumptions of power by the federal member of the government, we will be patient and suffer much,  
3 under the confidence that time, ere it be too late, will prove to them also the bitter consequences in which that usurpation will  
4 involve us all. In the meanwhile, we will breast with them, rather than separate from them, every misfortune, save that only  
5 of living under a government of unlimited powers. We owe every other sacrifice to ourselves, to our federal brethren, and to  
6 the world at large, to pursue with temper and perseverance the great experiment which shall prove that man is capable of  
7 living in society, governing itself by laws self-imposed, and securing to its members the enjoyment of life, liberty, property,  
8 and peace; and further to show, that even when the government of its choice shall manifest a tendency to degeneracy, we are  
9 not at once to despair but that the will and the watchfulness of its sounder parts will reform its aberrations, recall it to original  
10 and legitimate principles, and restrain it within the rightful limits of self-government. And these are the objects of this  
11 Declaration and Protest.

12 Supposing then, that it might be for the good of the whole, as some of its co-States seem to think, that the power of making  
13 roads and canals should be added to those directly given to the federal branch, as more likely to be systematically and  
14 beneficially directed, than by the independent action of the several States, this commonwealth, from respect to these opinions,  
15 and a desire of conciliation with its co-States, will consent, in concurrence with them, to make this addition, provided it be  
16 done regularly by an amendment of the compact, in the way established by that instrument, and provided also, it be sufficiently  
17 guarded against abuses, compromises, and corrupt practices, not only of possible, but of probable occurrence.

18 And as a further pledge of the sincere and cordial attachment of this commonwealth to the union of the whole, so far as has  
19 been consented to by the compact called “The *Constitution of the United States of America*,” (constructed according to the  
20 plain and ordinary meaning of its language, to the common intendment of the time, and of those who framed it;) to give also  
21 to all parties and authorities, time for reflection and for consideration, whether, under a temperate view of the possible  
22 consequences, and especially of the constant obstructions which an equivocal majority must ever expect to meet, they will  
23 still prefer the assumption of this power rather than its acceptance from the free will of their constituents; and to preserve  
24 peace in the meanwhile, we proceed to make it the duty of our citizens, until the legislature shall otherwise and ultimately  
25 decide, to acquiesce under those acts of the federal branch of our government which we have declared to be usurpations, and  
26 against which, in point of right, we do protest as null and void, and never to be quoted as precedents of right.

27 We therefore do enact, and be it enacted by the General Assembly of Virginia, that all citizens of this commonwealth, and  
28 persons and authorities within the same, shall pay full obedience at all times to the acts which may be passed by the Congress  
29 of the United States, the object of which shall be the construction of post roads, making canals of navigation, and maintaining  
30 the same in any part of the United States, in like manner as if said acts were, totidem verbis, passed by the legislature of this  
31 commonwealth.

## 32 **25.14 Declaration of Intergovernmental Dependence 1937**

### 33 **Introduction by Dan Meador**

34 The declaration of intergovernmental dependence that follows is published on pages 142 & 143 of *The Book of the States*,  
35 Volume 2, Book 2. Delegates who attended the third general assembly of the Council of State Governments signed it. The  
36 Council of State Governments, which now has headquarters in Lexington, Kentucky, was incorporated in 1933 as the product  
37 primarily of members of the Council of State Legislators. Both were financed to a great extent by the Spelman Fund, which  
38 was and possibly still is a fund of the Rockefeller Foundation. A declaration of intergovernmental dependence was signed at  
39 the general assembly held in Denver in 1935, but a limited number of states were represented. Representatives of the several  
40 states have since signed at least one similar declaration. The Council of State Governments is among the coordinating agencies  
41 for uniform laws adopted by state legislatures. The Council of State Governments is contemporaneously classified as a  
42 government entity, albeit a third tier of “nonconstitutional” government. Most funding is currently appropriated by state  
43 governments. The following declaration provided the early ideological framework and rationalization for the state and local  
44 government side of Federalism, also known as Cooperative Federalism.

### 45 **Declaration of Interdependence of the Governments within the United States of America in** 46 **Common Council**

47 Signed at Washington, District of Columbia, on January 22, 1937 by delegates to the Third General Assembly of the Council  
48 of State Governments.

1 When, in the course of human events, it becomes necessary for a nation to repair the fabric which unites its many agencies  
2 of government, and to restore the solidarity which is vital to orderly growth, it is the duty of responsible officials to define  
3 the need and to find a way to meet it.

4 A way does not come of itself. The maintenance of just and efficient government is as intricate, as arduous, and as inoperative  
5 as any human endeavor. One hundred and fifty years ago our forefathers faced their necessity and formed a new union. The  
6 found a way.

7 And from that beginning in 1787 sprang history's finest example of the democratic form of government—a government  
8 dedicated to the preservation of every man's endowment of life, liberty, and happiness.

9 Inevitable changes have come. The fundamental patten of states united for the benefit of all the people remains the same as it  
10 was when the Founding Fathers wove it. But the far-flung tapestry of our many governments has stretched so taut that the  
11 fabric has weakened. The essential thread of cooperation too often is lacking.

12 Now, for the first time since the memorable day when the form of our Constitution was determined, official delegates of the  
13 states are gathered together with representatives of their local governments, as good neighbors, seeking to revive the original  
14 purpose—"to form a more perfect union."

15 It was meant that the states, while creating a nation, should yet preserve their own sovereignties and a maximum of self-  
16 government. But now if the claim of states' rights is to prevail, it must be justified by a demonstration of states' competence.  
17 When our union was formed, there was no land transportation, nor any remote communication, except by the plodding foot  
18 of horse or man. But since that time our society has been revolutionized by the advent of transportation as swift as the wind  
19 and of communication more rapid than lightning. Our area has trebled. The number of our people has increased beyond belief.

20 How have our governments met their mutual problems brought by this modern era?

21 They have developed a "No Man's Land" of jurisdiction.

22 In thousands of instances their laws are in conflict, their practices are discordant, their regulations are antagonistic, and their  
23 policies are either competitive or repugnant to one another.

24 In taxation alone, scores of conflicts between federal and state laws exist.

25 The interstate criminal is a standing headline on Page One of every newspaper.

26 The forty-eight states pass laws on crime, labor, taxation, relief, corporations, parole, domestic relations, and other questions  
27 momentous to our social and economic system, with no thought of harmony. And this discord has been further stitched into  
28 our pattern of life by all other agencies possessing the power of legislation.

29 This is not as it should be.

30 The trend of federal-state projects, exemplified by social security, demands immediate action if those projects are to succeed  
31 completely.

32 All officials should conduct their own governments properly. But we hold that they must act with earnest regard also to the  
33 other units of government. The bonds of good will and the lines of communication which connect our many interdependent  
34 governments must be immeasurably strengthened.

35 Through established agencies of cooperation, through uniform and reciprocal laws and regulations, through compacts under  
36 the Constitution, through informal collaboration, and through all other means possible, our nation, our states, and our localities  
37 must fuse their activities with a new fervor of national unity.

38 We, therefore, as representatives of the officers of government here assembled, do solemnly pledge our loyal efforts to the  
39 accomplishment of such purposes.

1 As our forefathers by the *Declaration of Independence* affirmed their purpose to improve government for us, so do we by  
2 this Declaration of Interdependence affirm our purpose to improve government for our contemporaries and for our posterity.

### 3 **25.15 State of Nevada State Joint Resolution No. 1**

4 Introduced by Senators Rhoads, O’Connell, James, McGinness, Lowden and Regan

5 WHEREAS, The 10th Amendment to the Constitution of the United States states that the “powers not delegated to the United  
6 States by the Constitution, nor prohibited by it to the States, are reserved to the States respectively, or to the people”; and

7 WHEREAS, The 10th Amendment confirms that the scope of power of the Federal Government is no more than that which  
8 is specifically enumerated and delegated to the Federal Government by the Constitution of the United States; and

9 WHEREAS, The power of the states, as stated in the 10th Amendment, indicates that the Federal Government was created  
10 by the several states specifically to act as an agent of the states; and

11 WHEREAS, By requiring the various states to carry out certain federal mandates, the Federal Government is demonstrably  
12 treating the states as agents of the Federal Government; and

13 WHEREAS, Many federal mandates may be in direct violation of the Constitution of the United States, and may, therefore,  
14 infringe upon the powers reserved to the states or to the people by the 10th Amendment; and

15 WHEREAS, In the case of *New York v. United States*, 112 S.Ct. 2408 (1992), the Supreme Court of the United States stated  
16 that the Congress of the United States may not simply commandeer the legislative and regulatory processes of the states, and  
17 that Congress exercises its conferred powers subject to the limitations contained in the Constitution; and

18 WHEREAS, Numerous proposals from previous presidential administrations and some now proposed by the current  
19 presidential administration and Congress may further violate the 10th Amendment and other provisions of the Constitution  
20 of the United States; now, therefore, be it

21 RESOLVED BY THE SENATE AND ASSEMBLY OF THE STATE OF NEVADA, JOINTLY, That the State of Nevada  
22 hereby claims sovereignty pursuant to the 10th Amendment to the Constitution of the United States over all powers not  
23 otherwise enumerated and delegated to the Federal Government by the Constitution of the United States; and be it further

24 RESOLVED, That this resolution serve as a notice and demand to the Federal Government, as the agent of the State of  
25 Nevada, to cease and desist immediately the enactment and enforcement of mandates which are beyond the scope of the  
26 enumerated powers delegated to the Federal Government by the Constitution of the United States; and be it further

27 RESOLVED, That the Secretary of the Senate prepare and transmit a copy of this resolution to the President of the United  
28 States, the Vice President of the United States as presiding officer of the Senate, the Speaker of the House of Representatives  
29 and each member of the Nevada Congressional Delegation; and be if further

30 RESOLVED, That this resolution becomes effective upon passage and approval.

31 ADOPTED BY THE SENATE—March 1, 1995

32 ADOPTED BY THE ASSEMBLY—April 28, 1995

### 33 **25.16 The Jarbidge Declaration of Sovereignty**

34 July 4, 2000 A.D.

35 We the Sovereign americans of Elko County, Nevada, endowed by our Creator with the unalienable rights of Life, Liberty,  
36 and Property, have peacefully assembled this day in Jarbidge, Nevada, in league with our fellow Sovereign americans of the  
37 State of Nevada, a sovereign Republic in her own right, and her sister Western States, indeed of all the 50 united States of  
38 America, here in person or here via spirit symbolized by thousands upon thousands of shovels gathered by friends and

1 compatriots throughout our nation and thus represented by those actually present do hereby exercise legal control and assert  
2 our Rights as Freemen and Freewomen to be self-governing under God, under the Declaration of Independence, the national  
3 Constitution, and the Constitutions of the individual sovereign Republic States: To be possessed of Individual and State  
4 Rights of ownership of land and property to be controlled, used, governed and possessed by “We the People”. Indeed: Without  
5 the benefits of property derived from labor and enterprise of man as stewards of the earth there can be no Life, Liberty or  
6 Pursuit of Happiness; That man is commanded by our Creator to Labor in bringing forth and harvesting the fruits of the earth  
7 via mining, agricultural pursuits, lumbering, hunting, organizing, manufacturing, distributing and marketing to provide food,  
8 clothing and shelter for mankind to sustain life, to please the heart and gladden the eye and allow man to achieve economic  
9 independence for himself, his family, and his posterity; that mankind cannot obey the Creator’s commands without the rights  
10 of Life, Liberty, and control of Property; that To Secure these Rights and Liberties, governments are instituted of God with  
11 the consent of the governed; that He holds men accountable for their acts in making laws and administering them; that no  
12 government can exist in peace except such laws are framed and held inviolate as will secure to each individual the free  
13 exercise of Conscience, the right and control of Property, and the protection of Life.

14 As so eloquently expressed in the Declaration of Independence: “... That whenever any Form of Government becomes  
15 destructive of these ends, it is the Right of the People to alter or to abolish it... Prudence indeed will dictate that Governments  
16 long established should not be changed for light and transient causes; and accordingly mankind are more disposed to suffer,  
17 while evils are sufferable, than to right themselves by abolishing the forms to which they are accustomed. But when a long  
18 train of abuses and usurpations, pursuing invariably the same Object evinces a design to reduce them under absolute  
19 Despotism, it is their duty to throw off such Government, and to provide new Guards for their future security.”

20 History records several indisputable facts: That most men and generations of men have been slaves to the institutions of  
21 government under Pharaohs, Kings, Czars, Dictators and Tyrants; that Tyranny by definition is the combining together of  
22 unrestrained Executive, Judicial and Legislative powers; that the extent of tyranny is determined not only by the form of  
23 government but by the size and scope of government. The Federal Government is now a virtual Empire, being the largest and  
24 most extensive government in the history of the world.

25 Reflecting upon the lessons of history, George Washington, Father of our Republic, observed: “Government is not reason; it  
26 is not eloquence; it is force! Like fire, it is a dangerous servant and a fearful master.”

27 In order to contain the fire the founders established a contractual government of Law under the CONSTITUTION: Separating  
28 the Executive, Judicial and Legislative powers, specifying and limiting the duties so designated.

29 Fearful of the nature of government to usurp power from the People and their Posterity, The Founders refused to ratify the  
30 Creation of The Constitutional Convention unless the “BILL OF RIGHTS” was added thereto.

31 The Preamble of the Bill of Rights declares: The convention of a number of States having at the time of their adopting The  
32 Constitution, expressed a desire, IN ORDER TO PREVENT MISCONSTRUCTION OR ABUSE OF ITS POWERS, THAT  
33 FURTHER DECLARATORY AND RESTRICTIVE CLAUSES SHOULD BE ADDED: (Emphasis added).

34 It is self-evident that the Federal Government has escaped the confines of the Constitution. A decent respect to the opinions  
35 of mankind requires that we should declare some of the compelling causes which provoke this DECLARATION of  
36 SOVEREIGNTY:

37 The recent history of the Federal Government is a history of repeated injuries and usurpations, all having in direct object the  
38 establishment of an absolute tyranny over these States.

39 The Feds have erected a multitude of New Offices and sent hither swarms of Officers to harass our people, and eat out their  
40 substance. Appropriately, the alphabet is heavily taxed to list some of these federal bureaucracies—BLM, BATF, OSHA,  
41 IRS, FSA, EPA, SSA, DEA, LEA, LSC, NEA, WSA, NRCS, CNCS, FBI, FHA, HUD, BIA, EEO, AAHPI, LEO, MMD,  
42 NRLPD, SSD, GSB, IRM, WHABNP, BOF, USF&WS, CIA, BA&T, VETS, FHA, CFSA, A&PHIS, ADC, RDA, NRCS,  
43 ITA, NANG, FPD, FDA, GSA, PBS, FSSB, OOEH&E, TDD-H, FAO, MMD, NRLP, BOAT, SSS, FAA, SS, VA, VBIAA.

44 These alphabet bureaucracies are not authorized by the Constitution, and violate the 1st, 2nd 4th, 5th, 6th, 7th, 8th, 9th and  
45 10th Amendments. They combine powers in unelected bureaucracies and boards which in turn deprive sovereign Americans  
46 of life, liberty and property (Ruby Ridge, Idaho, and Waco, Texas are examples) without due process of law. These same

1 bureaucrats deprive the peaceful and law-abiding citizens of their Rights: to Keep and Bear Arms; their Free Exercise of  
2 Religion; their Right to Be Secure in their persons, papers, and effects against unreasonable searches and seizures; and their  
3 Right to trial by a jury of their peers according to rules of common law.

4 These same unlawful alphabet boards and bureaucracies impose arbitrary and capricious rules, regulations and excessive  
5 fines upon the people, placing “We the People” in the deplorable condition of involuntary servitude.

6 Having surreptitiously deprived us, the sovereign Americans, of our property via excessive taxation and regulations and  
7 yoking us and our posterity with trillion dollar debt, the Federal Government unabashedly and relentlessly continues its  
8 assault upon private property. Propagandizing the unwary and uninformed with a continual barrage of unfounded and  
9 preposterous suppositions and theories under color of science and in the name of spotted owls, wild horses, bull trout, global  
10 cooling or warming, ozone, asbestos, ecology, ad infinitum: All of which suppositions and theories assume and assert that  
11 individual property owners such as ranchers, farmers, fishermen, campers, travelers, hunters, loggers, miners and  
12 businessmen are exploiters of the earth and enemies of the people and that the government is the beneficent protector of these  
13 “endangered species and habitats.” Consequently, hundreds of thousands of jobs have been lost as the BLM, FS, EPA, etc.  
14 close down farms, mines, ranches, saw mills, water resources, and business enterprises, further impoverishing our people and  
15 making us dependent upon foreign imports for our sustenance. In reality, the productive Free American Citizen has become  
16 the real “Endangered Species.”

17 According to Article I section 8 of the Constitution, The Federal Government is to exercise control over Washington D.C.  
18 (not to exceed ten Miles square) and “to exercise like Authority over all Places purchased by the Consent of the  
19 Legislature of the State in which the Same shall be for (as specified) The Erection of Forts, Magazines, Arsenals, dock-yards,  
20 and other needful Buildings.”

21 Under color of law the Federal Government currently has de facto control of over one third of the land mass of our nation  
22 situated within the borders of the 50 sovereign States. More than Eighty-seven percent of Nevada’s land mass (98.4% of  
23 Lincoln County!) for example is under de facto control of the Federal Government.

24 Ostensibly philanthropic and private organizations such as the Sierra Club and Nature Conservancy are actually Federally  
25 subsidized entities and constitute, in conspiracy with each other, the greatest threat to private property extant in America  
26 today. The Feds harass, intimidate, sue at law, and generally make unprofitable private enterprise and private property  
27 ownership. The Ecological Do-Gooders then move in to buy out ranchers, etc. and establish “reserves” and “wilderness areas”  
28 accessible only to politically correct elitists. Removing private property from County tax roles in Nevada further weakens  
29 and impoverishes local government entities and private enterprise.

30 Driving livestock off the range in Elko County, the Feds have established more tax consuming jobs for the bureaucrats to  
31 fight fires as the uneaten regenerating plants and grasses burn in vast and raging infernos that coincidentally destroy habitat  
32 for all wildlife.

33 The Feds, using myriad schemes, including Presidential Executive Orders, designate vast acreages as wetlands, wilderness  
34 areas, National Monuments, etc., grab vast areas of land illegally and/or unlawfully assert Federal control. For example:

- 35 • As recently as of Jan. 9, 2000, Clinton designated well over a million acres in Arizona and California as “National  
36 Monuments”.
- 37 • In 1996, 1.7 million acres of land in Utah was decreed “The Grand Staircase-Escalante National Monument”.
- 38 • The Black Rock Desert in Washoe, Pershing and Humboldt Counties is now under Federal assault.
- 39 • Churchill County families have had their lives shattered by Federal barrages of lawsuits and regulations that  
40 encumber their precious Water Rights.
- 41 • Even Native American Indians are being harassed by “environmental” controls on their reservations.

42 The Feds have also combined with others to subject us to jurisdictions (United Nations, UNESCO, IMF, WTO, GATT,  
43 NAFTA, etc.) foreign to our constitutions, and unacknowledged by our laws; giving Assent to their Acts of pretended  
44 Legislation: National Parks and much of the land mass under de facto control of the Feds and even overt territorial possessions  
45 such as the Panama Canal are being transferred to the control of these foreign tyrannies and to foreign nations such as  
46 Communist China.

1 In recognition of these Oppressions We have Petitioned for Redress. We have and will continue to importune before  
2 Commissioners, Judges, Legislatures, Governors, The United States House of Representatives and Senate, and before  
3 Presidents.

4 Official statements and petitions have been drafted by our County Governments, by our Legislatures and by our  
5 States strong and clear laws and resolutions such as the Nevada Public Lands Ownership Act and The Tenth  
6 Amendment Resolution adopted by Nevada and many of her sister States which positively assert our Constitutional Rights.

7 We have also asserted our rights at Jefferson Canyon, Nye County; Kelly Springs, Elko County; and Yucca Mountain, Clark  
8 County, Nevada.

9 These and similar protests and petitions from many organizations of the people and from Sister States have been essentially  
10 ignored by the establishment media and by our Federal servants as the long train of abuses advances on track to a New World  
11 Order.

12 Consequently, We here, peacefully assembled in Jarbidge, Nevada on July 4, 2000 in actuality and as representatives of  
13 Sovereign heirs of the American Heritage, appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world for the rectitude of our intentions,  
14 do, in the Name, and by the Authority of the good people of this community, County, State and Nation, figuratively and  
15 literally dig our shovels into our free soil to re-open this road, this land, these resources to the people to be utilized, directed  
16 controlled and governed by established local and State Governments created and sustained by Sovereign americans imbued  
17 with God given authority to be self-governing and free of illegal Federal control and ownership, foreign jurisdictions or any  
18 other manifestations of tyranny: That, government of the people, by the people and for the people shall not perish from the  
19 earth, but have a new birth of freedom; and, for the support of this Declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of  
20 Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other our Lives, our Fortunes, and our sacred Honor.

21 Declaration prepared by Committee of 56, Committee of Correspondence:

22 Thomas Jefferson, Chairman  
23 P.O. Box 5242  
24 Elko, Nevada

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27  
28  
29  
30  
31  
32  
33  
34  
35  
36  
37  
38  
39  
40  
41  
42  
43  
44  
45  
46  
47  
48  
49

## 26 Chapter 26: Historical Speeches

### 26.1 George Washington’s First Inaugural Address

City of New York—Thursday, April 30, 1789

Fellow-Citizens of the Senate and of the House of Representatives:

AMONG the vicissitudes incident to life no event could have filled me with greater anxieties than that of which the notification was transmitted by your order, and received on the 14th day of the present month. On the one hand, I was summoned by my country, whose voice I can never hear but with veneration and love, from a retreat which I had chosen with the fondest predilection, and, in my flattering hopes, with an immutable decision, as the asylum of my declining years—a retreat which was rendered every day more necessary as well as more dear to me by the addition of habit to inclination, and of frequent interruptions in my health to the gradual waste committed on it by time. On the other hand, the magnitude and difficulty of the trust to which the voice of my country called me, being sufficient to awaken in the wisest and most experienced of her citizens a distrustful scrutiny into his qualifications, could not but overwhelm with despondence one who (inheriting inferior endowments from nature and unpracticed in the duties of civil administration) ought to be peculiarly conscious of his own deficiencies. In this conflict of emotions all I dare aver is that it has been my faithful study to collect my duty from a just appreciation of every circumstance by which it might be affected. All I dare hope is that if, in executing this task, I have been too much swayed by a grateful remembrance of former instances, or by an affectionate sensibility to this transcendent proof of the confidence of my fellow-citizens, and have thence too little consulted my incapacity as well as disinclination for the weighty and untried cares before me, my error will be palliated by the motives which mislead me, and its consequences be judged by my country with some share of the partiality in which they originated.

Such being the impressions under which I have, in obedience to the public summons, repaired to the present station, it would be peculiarly improper to omit in this first official act my fervent supplications to that Almighty Being who rules over the universe, who presides in the councils of nations, and whose providential aids can supply every human defect, that His benediction may consecrate to the liberties and happiness of the people of the United States a Government instituted by themselves for these essential purposes, and may enable every instrument employed in its administration to execute with success the functions allotted to his charge. **In tendering this homage to the Great Author of every public and private good, I assure myself that it expresses your sentiments not less than my own, nor those of my fellow-citizens at large less than either. No people can be bound to acknowledge and adore the Invisible Hand which conducts the affairs of men more than those of the United States. Every step by which they have advanced to the character of an independent nation seems to have been distinguished by some token of providential agency; and in the important revolution just accomplished in the system of their united government the tranquil deliberations and voluntary consent of so many distinct communities from which the event has resulted can not be compared with the means by which most governments have been established without some return of pious gratitude, along with an humble anticipation of the future blessings which the past seem to presage.** These reflections, arising out of the present crisis, have forced themselves too strongly on my mind to be suppressed. You will join with me, I trust, in thinking that there are none under the influence of which the proceedings of a new and free government can more auspiciously commence.

By the article establishing the executive department it is made the duty of the President “to recommend to your consideration such measures as he shall judge necessary and expedient.” The circumstances under which I now meet you will acquit me from entering into that subject further than to refer to the great constitutional charter under which you are assembled, and which, in defining your powers, designates the objects to which your attention is to be given. It will be more consistent with those circumstances, and far more congenial with the feelings which actuate me, to substitute, in place of a recommendation of particular measures, the tribute that is due to the talents, the rectitude, and the patriotism which adorn the characters selected to devise and adopt them. In these honorable qualifications I behold the surest pledges that as on one side no local prejudices or attachments, no separate views nor party animosities, will misdirect the comprehensive and equal eye which ought to watch over this great assemblage of communities and interests, so, on another, that the foundation of our national policy will be laid in the pure and immutable principles of private morality, and the preeminence of free government be exemplified by all the attributes which can win the affections of its citizens and command the respect of the world. I dwell on this prospect with every satisfaction which an ardent love for my country can inspire, since there is no truth more thoroughly established than that there exists in the economy and course of nature an indissoluble union between virtue and happiness; between duty

1 and advantage; between the genuine maxims of an honest and magnanimous policy and the solid rewards of public prosperity  
2 and felicity; **since we ought to be no less persuaded that the propitious smiles of Heaven can never be expected on a**  
3 **nation that disregards the eternal rules of order and right which Heaven itself has ordained; and since the preservation**  
4 **of the sacred fire of liberty and the destiny of the republican model of government are justly considered, perhaps, as**  
5 **deeply, as finally, staked on the experiment entrusted to the hands of the American people.**

6 Besides the ordinary objects submitted to your care, it will remain with your judgment to decide how far an exercise of the  
7 occasional power delegated by the fifth article of the Constitution is rendered expedient at the present juncture by the nature  
8 of objections which have been urged against the system, or by the degree of inquietude which has given birth to them. Instead  
9 of undertaking particular recommendations on this subject, in which I could be guided by no lights derived from official  
10 opportunities, I shall again give way to my entire confidence in your discernment and pursuit of the public good; for I assure  
11 myself that whilst you carefully avoid every alteration which might endanger the benefits of an united and effective  
12 government, or which ought to await the future lessons of experience, a reverence for the characteristic rights of freemen and  
13 a regard for the public harmony will sufficiently influence your deliberations on the question how far the former can be  
14 impregnably fortified or the latter be safely and advantageously promoted.

15 To the foregoing observations I have one to add, which will be most properly addressed to the House of Representatives. It  
16 concerns myself, and will therefore be as brief as possible. When I was first honored with a call into the service of my country,  
17 then on the eve of an arduous struggle for its liberties, the light in which I contemplated my duty required that I should  
18 renounce every pecuniary compensation. From this resolution I have in no instance departed; and being still under the  
19 impressions which produced it, I must decline as inapplicable to myself any share in the personal emoluments which may be  
20 indispensably included in a permanent provision for the executive department, and must accordingly pray that the pecuniary  
21 estimates for the station in which I am placed may during my continuance in it be limited to such actual expenditures as the  
22 public good may be thought to require.

23 Having thus imparted to you my sentiments as they have been awakened by the occasion which brings us together, I shall  
24 take my present leave; but not without resorting once more to the benign Parent of the Human Race in humble supplication  
25 that, since He has been pleased to favor the American people with opportunities for deliberating in perfect tranquillity, and  
26 dispositions for deciding with unparalleled unanimity on a form of government for the security of their union and the  
27 advancement of their happiness, so His divine blessing may be equally conspicuous in the enlarged views, the temperate  
28 consultations, and the wise measures on which the success of this Government must depend.

## 29 **26.2 George Washington's Second Inaugural Address**

30 I AM again called upon by the voice of my country to execute the functions of its Chief Magistrate. When the occasion proper  
31 for it shall arrive, I shall endeavor to express the high sense I entertain of this distinguished honor, and of the confidence  
32 which has been reposed in me by the people of united America.

33 Previous to the execution of any official act of the President the Constitution requires an oath of office. This oath I am now  
34 about to take, and in your presence: That if it shall be found during my administration of the Government I have in any  
35 instance violated willingly or knowingly the injunctions thereof, I may (besides incurring constitutional punishment) be  
36 subject to the upbraids of all who are now witnesses of the present solemn ceremony.

## 37 **26.3 George Washington's Farewell Address**

38 Philadelphia—Saturday, March 4, 1797

39 WHEN it was first perceived, in early times, that no middle course for America remained between unlimited submission to a  
40 foreign legislature and a total independence of its claims, men of reflection were less apprehensive of danger from the  
41 formidable power of fleets and armies they must determine to resist than from those contests and dissensions which would  
42 certainly arise concerning the forms of government to be instituted over the whole and over the parts of this extensive country.  
43 Relying, however, on the purity of their intentions, the justice of their cause, and the integrity and intelligence of the people,  
44 under an overruling Providence which had so signally protected this country from the first, the representatives of this nation,  
45 then consisting of little more than half its present number, not only broke to pieces the chains which were forging and the rod  
46 of iron that was lifted up, but frankly cut asunder the ties which had bound them, and launched into an ocean of uncertainty.

1 The zeal and ardor of the people during the Revolutionary war, supplying the place of government, commanded a degree of  
2 order sufficient at least for the temporary preservation of society. The Confederation which was early felt to be necessary  
3 was prepared from the models of the Batavian and Helvetic confederacies, the only examples which remain with any detail  
4 and precision in history, and certainly the only ones which the people at large had ever considered. But reflecting on the  
5 striking difference in so many particulars between this country and those where a courier may go from the seat of government  
6 to the frontier in a single day, it was then certainly foreseen by some who assisted in Congress at the formation of it that it  
7 could not be durable.

8 Negligence of its regulations, inattention to its recommendations, if not disobedience to its authority, not only in individuals  
9 but in States, soon appeared with their melancholy consequences—universal languor, jealousies and rivalries of States,  
10 decline of navigation and commerce, discouragement of necessary manufactures, universal fall in the value of lands and their  
11 produce, contempt of public and private faith, loss of consideration and credit with foreign nations, and at length in  
12 discontents, animosities, combinations, partial conventions, and insurrection, threatening some great national calamity.

13 In this dangerous crisis the people of America were not abandoned by their usual good sense, presence of mind, resolution,  
14 or integrity. Measures were pursued to concert a plan to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic  
15 tranquillity, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty. The public  
16 disquisitions, discussions, and deliberations issued in the present happy Constitution of Government.

17 Employed in the service of my country abroad during the whole course of these transactions, I first saw the *Constitution of*  
18 *the United States* in a foreign country. Irritated by no literary altercation, animated by no public debate, heated by no party  
19 animosity, I read it with great satisfaction, as the result of good heads prompted by good hearts, as an experiment better  
20 adapted to the genius, character, situation, and relations of this nation and country than any which had ever been proposed or  
21 suggested. In its general principles and great outlines it was conformable to such a system of government as I had ever most  
22 esteemed, and in some States, my own native State in particular, had contributed to establish. Claiming a right of suffrage, in  
23 common with my fellow-citizens, in the adoption or rejection of a constitution which was to rule me and my posterity, as  
24 well as them and theirs, I did not hesitate to express my approbation of it on all occasions, in public and in private. It was not  
25 then, nor has been since, any objection to it in my mind that the Executive and Senate were not more permanent. Nor have I  
26 ever entertained a thought of promoting any alteration in it but such as the people themselves, in the course of their experience,  
27 should see and feel to be necessary or expedient, and by their representatives in Congress and the State legislatures, according  
28 to the Constitution itself, adopt and ordain.

29 Returning to the bosom of my country after a painful separation from it for ten years, I had the honor to be elected to a station  
30 under the new order of things, and I have repeatedly laid myself under the most serious obligations to support the Constitution.  
31 The operation of it has equaled the most sanguine expectations of its friends, and from an habitual attention to it, satisfaction  
32 in its administration, and delight in its effects upon the peace, order, prosperity, and happiness of the nation I have acquired  
33 an habitual attachment to it and veneration for it.

34 What other form of government, indeed, can so well deserve our esteem and love?

35 There may be little solidity in an ancient idea that congregations of men into cities and nations are the most pleasing objects  
36 in the sight of superior intelligences, but this is very certain, that to a benevolent human mind there can be no spectacle  
37 presented by any nation more pleasing, more noble, majestic, or august, than an assembly like that which has so often been  
38 seen in this and the other Chamber of Congress, of a Government in which the Executive authority, as well as that of all the  
39 branches of the Legislature, are exercised by citizens selected at regular periods by their neighbors to make and execute laws  
40 for the general good. Can anything essential, anything more than mere ornament and decoration, be added to this by robes  
41 and diamonds? Can authority be more amiable and respectable when it descends from accidents or institutions established in  
42 remote antiquity than when it springs fresh from the hearts and judgments of an honest and enlightened people? For it is the  
43 people only that are represented. It is their power and majesty that is reflected, and only for their good, in every legitimate  
44 government, under whatever form it may appear. The existence of such a government as ours for any length of time is a full  
45 proof of a general dissemination of knowledge and virtue throughout the whole body of the people. And what object or  
46 consideration more pleasing than this can be presented to the human mind? If national pride is ever justifiable or excusable  
47 it is when it springs, not from power or riches, grandeur or glory, but from conviction of national innocence, information, and  
48 benevolence.

1 In the midst of these pleasing ideas we should be unfaithful to ourselves if we should ever lose sight of the danger to our  
2 liberties if anything partial or extraneous should infect the purity of our free, fair, virtuous, and independent elections. If an  
3 election is to be determined by a majority of a single vote, and that can be procured by a party through artifice or corruption,  
4 the Government may be the choice of a party for its own ends, not of the nation for the national good. If that solitary suffrage  
5 can be obtained by foreign nations by flattery or menaces, by fraud or violence, by terror, intrigue, or venality, the Government  
6 may not be the choice of the American people, but of foreign nations. It may be foreign nations who govern us, and not we,  
7 the people, who govern ourselves; and candid men will acknowledge that in such cases choice would have little advantage to  
8 boast of over lot or chance.

9 Such is the amiable and interesting system of government (and such are some of the abuses to which it may be exposed)  
10 which the people of America have exhibited to the admiration and anxiety of the wise and virtuous of all nations for eight  
11 years under the administration of a citizen who, by a long course of great actions, regulated by prudence, justice, temperance,  
12 and fortitude, conducting a people inspired with the same virtues and animated with the same ardent patriotism and love of  
13 liberty to independence and peace, to increasing wealth and unexampled prosperity, has merited the gratitude of his fellow-  
14 citizens, commanded the highest praises of foreign nations, and secured immortal glory with posterity.

15 In that retirement which is his voluntary choice may he long live to enjoy the delicious recollection of his services, the  
16 gratitude of mankind, the happy fruits of them to himself and the world, which are daily increasing, and that splendid prospect  
17 of the future fortunes of this country which is opening from year to year. His name may be still a rampart, and the knowledge  
18 that he lives a bulwark, against all open or secret enemies of his country's peace. This example has been recommended to the  
19 imitation of his successors by both Houses of Congress and by the voice of the legislatures and the people throughout the  
20 nation.

21 On this subject it might become me better to be silent or to speak with diffidence; but as something may be expected, the  
22 occasion, I hope, will be admitted as an apology if I venture to say that if a preference, upon principle, of a free republican  
23 government, formed upon long and serious reflection, after a diligent and impartial inquiry after truth; if an attachment to the  
24 *Constitution of the United States*, and a conscientious determination to support it until it shall be altered by the judgments  
25 and wishes of the people, expressed in the mode prescribed in it; if a respectful attention to the constitutions of the individual  
26 States and a constant caution and delicacy toward the State governments; if an equal and impartial regard to the rights, interest,  
27 honor, and happiness of all the States in the Union, without preference or regard to a northern or southern, an eastern or  
28 western, position, their various political opinions on unessential points or their personal attachments; if a love of virtuous  
29 men of all parties and denominations; if a love of science and letters and a wish to patronize every rational effort to encourage  
30 schools, colleges, universities, academies, and every institution for propagating knowledge, virtue, and religion among all  
31 classes of the people, not only for their benign influence on the happiness of life in all its stages and classes, and of society  
32 in all its forms, but as the only means of preserving our Constitution from its natural enemies, the spirit of sophistry, the spirit  
33 of party, the spirit of intrigue, the profligacy of corruption, and the pestilence of foreign influence, which is the angel of  
34 destruction to elective governments; if a love of equal laws, of justice, and humanity in the interior administration; if an  
35 inclination to improve agriculture, commerce, and manufacturers for necessity, convenience, and defense; if a spirit of equity  
36 and humanity toward the aboriginal nations of America, and a disposition to meliorate their condition by inclining them to  
37 be more friendly to us, and our citizens to be more friendly to them; if an inflexible determination to maintain peace and  
38 inviolable faith with all nations, and that system of neutrality and impartiality among the belligerent powers of Europe which  
39 has been adopted by this Government and so solemnly sanctioned by both Houses of Congress and applauded by the  
40 legislatures of the States and the public opinion, until it shall be otherwise ordained by Congress; if a personal esteem for the  
41 French nation, formed in a residence of seven years chiefly among them, and a sincere desire to preserve the friendship which  
42 has been so much for the honor and interest of both nations; if, while the conscious honor and integrity of the people of  
43 America and the internal sentiment of their own power and energies must be preserved, an earnest endeavor to investigate  
44 every just cause and remove every colorable pretense of complaint; if an intention to pursue by amicable negotiation a  
45 reparation for the injuries that have been committed on the commerce of our fellow-citizens by whatever nation, and if success  
46 can not be obtained, to lay the facts before the Legislature, that they may consider what further measures the honor and  
47 interest of the Government and its constituents demand; if a resolution to do justice as far as may depend upon me, at all  
48 times and to all nations, and maintain peace, friendship, and benevolence with all the world; if an unshaken confidence in the  
49 honor, spirit, and resources of the American people, on which I have so often hazarded my all and never been deceived; if  
50 elevated ideas of the high destinies of this country and of my own duties toward it, founded on a knowledge of the moral  
51 principles and intellectual improvements of the people deeply engraven on my mind in early life, and not obscured but exalted  
52 by experience and age; and, with humble reverence, **I feel it to be my duty to add, if a veneration for the religion of a  
53 people who profess and call themselves Christians, and a fixed resolution to consider a decent respect for Christianity**

1 **among the best recommendations for the public service, can enable me in any degree to comply with your wishes, it**  
2 **shall be my strenuous endeavor that this sagacious injunction of the two Houses shall not be without effect.**

3 **With this great example before me, with the sense and spirit, the faith and honor, the duty and interest, of the same**  
4 **American people pledged to support the *Constitution of the United States*, I entertain no doubt of its continuance in all its**  
5 **energy, and my mind is prepared without hesitation to lay myself under the most solemn obligations to support it to the utmost**  
6 **of my power.**

7 **And may that Being who is supreme over all, the Patron of Order, the Fountain of Justice, and the Protector in all**  
8 **ages of the world of virtuous liberty, continue His blessing upon this nation and its Government and give it all possible**  
9 **success and duration consistent with the ends of His providence.**

## 10 **26.4 John Adams' Inaugural Address**

11 Philadelphia—Saturday, March 4, 1797

12 WHEN it was first perceived, in early times, that no middle course for America remained between unlimited submission to a  
13 foreign legislature and a total independence of its claims, men of reflection were less apprehensive of danger from the  
14 formidable power of fleets and armies they must determine to resist than from those contests and dissensions which would  
15 certainly arise concerning the forms of government to be instituted over the whole and over the parts of this extensive country.  
16 Relying, however, on the purity of their intentions, the justice of their cause, and the integrity and intelligence of the people,  
17 under an overruling Providence which had so signally protected this country from the first, the representatives of this nation,  
18 then consisting of little more than half its present number, not only broke to pieces the chains which were forging and the rod  
19 of iron that was lifted up, but frankly cut asunder the ties which had bound them, and launched into an ocean of uncertainty.

20 The zeal and ardor of the people during the Revolutionary war, supplying the place of government, commanded a degree of  
21 order sufficient at least for the temporary preservation of society. The Confederation which was early felt to be necessary  
22 was prepared from the models of the Batavian and Helvetic confederacies, the only examples which remain with any detail  
23 and precision in history, and certainly the only ones which the people at large had ever considered. But reflecting on the  
24 striking difference in so many particulars between this country and those where a courier may go from the seat of government  
25 to the frontier in a single day, it was then certainly foreseen by some who assisted in Congress at the formation of it that it  
26 could not be durable.

27 Negligence of its regulations, inattention to its recommendations, if not disobedience to its authority, not only in individuals  
28 but in States, soon appeared with their melancholy consequences—universal languor, jealousies and rivalries of States,  
29 decline of navigation and commerce, discouragement of necessary manufactures, universal fall in the value of lands and their  
30 produce, contempt of public and private faith, loss of consideration and credit with foreign nations, and at length in  
31 discontents, animosities, combinations, partial conventions, and insurrection, threatening some great national calamity.

32 In this dangerous crisis the people of America were not abandoned by their usual good sense, presence of mind, resolution,  
33 or integrity. Measures were pursued to concert a plan to form a more perfect union, establish justice, insure domestic  
34 tranquillity, provide for the common defense, promote the general welfare, and secure the blessings of liberty. The public  
35 disquisitions, discussions, and deliberations issued in the present happy Constitution of Government.

36 Employed in the service of my country abroad during the whole course of these transactions, I first saw the *Constitution of*  
37 *the United States* in a foreign country. Irritated by no literary altercation, animated by no public debate, heated by no party  
38 animosity, I read it with great satisfaction, as the result of good heads prompted by good hearts, as an experiment better  
39 adapted to the genius, character, situation, and relations of this nation and country than any which had ever been proposed or  
40 suggested. In its general principles and great outlines it was conformable to such a system of government as I had ever most  
41 esteemed, and in some States, my own native State in particular, had contributed to establish. Claiming a right of suffrage, in  
42 common with my fellow-citizens, in the adoption or rejection of a constitution which was to rule me and my posterity, as  
43 well as them and theirs, I did not hesitate to express my approbation of it on all occasions, in public and in private. It was not  
44 then, nor has been since, any objection to it in my mind that the Executive and Senate were not more permanent. Nor have I  
45 ever entertained a thought of promoting any alteration in it but such as the people themselves, in the course of their experience,  
46 should see and feel to be necessary or expedient, and by their representatives in Congress and the State legislatures, according  
47 to the Constitution itself, adopt and ordain.

1 Returning to the bosom of my country after a painful separation from it for ten years, I had the honor to be elected to a station  
2 under the new order of things, and I have repeatedly laid myself under the most serious obligations to support the Constitution.  
3 The operation of it has equaled the most sanguine expectations of its friends, and from an habitual attention to it, satisfaction  
4 in its administration, and delight in its effects upon the peace, order, prosperity, and happiness of the nation I have acquired  
5 an habitual attachment to it and veneration for it.

6 What other form of government, indeed, can so well deserve our esteem and love?

7 There may be little solidity in an ancient idea that congregations of men into cities and nations are the most pleasing objects  
8 in the sight of superior intelligences, but this is very certain, that to a benevolent human mind there can be no spectacle  
9 presented by any nation more pleasing, more noble, majestic, or august, than an assembly like that which has so often been  
10 seen in this and the other Chamber of Congress, of a Government in which the Executive authority, as well as that of all the  
11 branches of the Legislature, are exercised by citizens selected at regular periods by their neighbors to make and execute laws  
12 for the general good. Can anything essential, anything more than mere ornament and decoration, be added to this by robes  
13 and diamonds? Can authority be more amiable and respectable when it descends from accidents or institutions established in  
14 remote antiquity than when it springs fresh from the hearts and judgments of an honest and enlightened people? For it is the  
15 people only that are represented. It is their power and majesty that is reflected, and only for their good, in every legitimate  
16 government, under whatever form it may appear. The existence of such a government as ours for any length of time is a full  
17 proof of a general dissemination of knowledge and virtue throughout the whole body of the people. And what object or  
18 consideration more pleasing than this can be presented to the human mind? If national pride is ever justifiable or excusable  
19 it is when it springs, not from power or riches, grandeur or glory, but from conviction of national innocence, information, and  
20 benevolence.

21 In the midst of these pleasing ideas we should be unfaithful to ourselves if we should ever lose sight of the danger to our  
22 liberties if anything partial or extraneous should infect the purity of our free, fair, virtuous, and independent elections. If an  
23 election is to be determined by a majority of a single vote, and that can be procured by a party through artifice or corruption,  
24 the Government may be the choice of a party for its own ends, not of the nation for the national good. If that solitary suffrage  
25 can be obtained by foreign nations by flattery or menaces, by fraud or violence, by terror, intrigue, or venality, the Government  
26 may not be the choice of the American people, but of foreign nations. It may be foreign nations who govern us, and not we,  
27 the people, who govern ourselves; and candid men will acknowledge that in such cases choice would have little advantage to  
28 boast of over lot or chance.

29 Such is the amiable and interesting system of government (and such are some of the abuses to which it may be exposed)  
30 which the people of America have exhibited to the admiration and anxiety of the wise and virtuous of all nations for eight  
31 years under the administration of a citizen who, by a long course of great actions, regulated by prudence, justice, temperance,  
32 and fortitude, conducting a people inspired with the same virtues and animated with the same ardent patriotism and love of  
33 liberty to independence and peace, to increasing wealth and unexampled prosperity, has merited the gratitude of his fellow-  
34 citizens, commanded the highest praises of foreign nations, and secured immortal glory with posterity.

35 In that retirement which is his voluntary choice may he long live to enjoy the delicious recollection of his services, the  
36 gratitude of mankind, the happy fruits of them to himself and the world, which are daily increasing, and that splendid prospect  
37 of the future fortunes of this country which is opening from year to year. His name may be still a rampart, and the knowledge  
38 that he lives a bulwark, against all open or secret enemies of his country's peace. This example has been recommended to the  
39 imitation of his successors by both Houses of Congress and by the voice of the legislatures and the people throughout the  
40 nation.

41 On this subject it might become me better to be silent or to speak with diffidence; but as something may be expected, the  
42 occasion, I hope, will be admitted as an apology if I venture to say that if a preference, upon principle, of a free republican  
43 government, formed upon long and serious reflection, after a diligent and impartial inquiry after truth; if an attachment to the  
44 *Constitution of the United States*, and a conscientious determination to support it until it shall be altered by the judgments  
45 and wishes of the people, expressed in the mode prescribed in it; if a respectful attention to the constitutions of the individual  
46 States and a constant caution and delicacy toward the State governments; if an equal and impartial regard to the rights, interest,  
47 honor, and happiness of all the States in the Union, without preference or regard to a northern or southern, an eastern or  
48 western, position, their various political opinions on unessential points or their personal attachments; if a love of virtuous  
49 men of all parties and denominations; if a love of science and letters and a wish to patronize every rational effort to encourage  
50 schools, colleges, universities, academies, and every institution for propagating knowledge, virtue, and religion among all

1 classes of the people, not only for their benign influence on the happiness of life in all its stages and classes, and of society  
2 in all its forms, but as the only means of preserving our Constitution from its natural enemies, the spirit of sophistry, the spirit  
3 of party, the spirit of intrigue, the profligacy of corruption, and the pestilence of foreign influence, which is the angel of  
4 destruction to elective governments; if a love of equal laws, of justice, and humanity in the interior administration; if an  
5 inclination to improve agriculture, commerce, and manufacturers for necessity, convenience, and defense; if a spirit of equity  
6 and humanity toward the aboriginal nations of America, and a disposition to meliorate their condition by inclining them to  
7 be more friendly to us, and our citizens to be more friendly to them; if an inflexible determination to maintain peace and  
8 inviolable faith with all nations, and that system of neutrality and impartiality among the belligerent powers of Europe which  
9 has been adopted by this Government and so solemnly sanctioned by both Houses of Congress and applauded by the  
10 legislatures of the States and the public opinion, until it shall be otherwise ordained by Congress; if a personal esteem for the  
11 French nation, formed in a residence of seven years chiefly among them, and a sincere desire to preserve the friendship which  
12 has been so much for the honor and interest of both nations; if, while the conscious honor and integrity of the people of  
13 America and the internal sentiment of their own power and energies must be preserved, an earnest endeavor to investigate  
14 every just cause and remove every colorable pretense of complaint; if an intention to pursue by amicable negotiation a  
15 reparation for the injuries that have been committed on the commerce of our fellow-citizens by whatever nation, and if success  
16 can not be obtained, to lay the facts before the Legislature, that they may consider what further measures the honor and  
17 interest of the Government and its constituents demand; if a resolution to do justice as far as may depend upon me, at all  
18 times and to all nations, and maintain peace, friendship, and benevolence with all the world; if an unshaken confidence in the  
19 honor, spirit, and resources of the American people, on which I have so often hazarded my all and never been deceived; if  
20 elevated ideas of the high destinies of this country and of my own duties toward it, founded on a knowledge of the moral  
21 principles and intellectual improvements of the people deeply engraven on my mind in early life, and not obscured but exalted  
22 by experience and age; and, with humble reverence, **I feel it to be my duty to add, if a veneration for the religion of a  
23 people who profess and call themselves Christians, and a fixed resolution to consider a decent respect for Christianity  
24 among the best recommendations for the public service, can enable me in any degree to comply with your wishes, it  
25 shall be my strenuous endeavor that this sagacious injunction of the two Houses shall not be without effect.**

26 **With this great example before me, with the sense and spirit, the faith and honor, the duty and interest, of the same  
27 American people pledged to support the *Constitution of the United States*, I entertain no doubt of its continuance in all its  
28 energy, and my mind is prepared without hesitation to lay myself under the most solemn obligations to support it to the utmost  
29 of my power.**

30 **And may that Being who is supreme over all, the Patron of Order, the Fountain of Justice, and the Protector in all  
31 ages of the world of virtuous liberty, continue His blessing upon this nation and its Government and give it all possible  
32 success and duration consistent with the ends of His providence.**

## 33 **26.5 Thomas Jefferson's First Inaugural Address**

34 Washington D.C.—Wednesday, March 4, 1801

35 FRIENDS AND FELLOW-CITIZENS,

36 Called upon to undertake the duties of the first executive office of our country, I avail myself of the presence of that portion  
37 of my fellow-citizens which is here assembled to express my grateful thanks for the favor with which they have been pleased  
38 to look toward me, to declare a sincere consciousness that the task is above my talents, and that I approach it with those  
39 anxious and awful presentiments which the greatness of the charge and the weakness of my powers so justly inspire. A rising  
40 nation, spread over a wide and fruitful land, traversing all the seas with the rich productions of their industry, engaged in  
41 commerce with nations who feel power and forget right, advancing rapidly to destinies beyond the reach of mortal eye—  
42 when I contemplate these transcendent objects, and see the honor, the happiness, and the hopes of this beloved country  
43 committed to the issue and the auspices of this day, I shrink from the contemplation, and humble myself before the magnitude  
44 of the undertaking. Utterly, indeed, should I despair did not the presence of many whom I here see remind me that in the  
45 other high authorities provided by our Constitution I shall find resources of wisdom, of virtue, and of zeal on which to rely  
46 under all difficulties. To you, then, gentlemen, who are charged with the sovereign functions of legislation, and to those  
47 associated with you, I look with encouragement for that guidance and support which may enable us to steer with safety the  
48 vessel in which we are all embarked amidst the conflicting elements of a troubled world.

1 **During the contest of opinion through which we have passed the animation of discussions and of exertions has**  
2 **sometimes worn an aspect which might impose on strangers unused to think freely and to speak and to write what**  
3 **they think;** but this being now decided by the voice of the nation, announced according to the rules of the Constitution, all  
4 will, of course, arrange themselves under the will of the law, and unite in common efforts for the common good. All, too,  
5 will bear in mind this sacred principle, that though the will of the majority is in all cases to prevail, that will to be rightful  
6 must be reasonable; that the minority possess their equal rights, which equal law must protect, and to violate would be  
7 oppression. Let us, then, fellow-citizens, unite with one heart and one mind. Let us restore to social intercourse that harmony  
8 and affection without which liberty and even life itself are but dreary things. And let us reflect that, having banished from  
9 our land that religious intolerance under which mankind so long bled and suffered, we have yet gained little if we countenance  
10 a political intolerance as despotic, as wicked, and capable of as bitter and bloody persecutions. During the throes and  
11 convulsions of the ancient world, during the agonizing spasms of infuriated man, seeking through blood and slaughter his  
12 long-lost liberty, it was not wonderful that the agitation of the billows should reach even this distant and peaceful shore; that  
13 this should be more felt and feared by some and less by others, and should divide opinions as to measures of safety. But every  
14 difference of opinion is not a difference of principle. We have called by different names brethren of the same principle. We  
15 are all Republicans, we are all Federalists. If there be any among us who would wish to dissolve this Union or to change its  
16 republican form, let them stand undisturbed as monuments of the safety with which error of opinion may be tolerated where  
17 reason is left free to combat it. I know, indeed, that some honest men fear that a republican government can not be strong,  
18 that this Government is not strong enough; but would the honest patriot, in the full tide of successful experiment, abandon a  
19 government which has so far kept us free and firm on the theoretic and visionary fear that this Government, the world's best  
20 hope, may by possibility want energy to preserve itself? I trust not. I believe this, on the contrary, the strongest Government  
21 on earth. I believe it the only one where every man, at the call of the law, would fly to the standard of the law, and would  
22 meet invasions of the public order as his own personal concern. Sometimes it is said that man can not be trusted with the  
23 government of himself. Can he, then, be trusted with the government of others? Or have we found angels in the forms of  
24 kings to govern him? Let history answer this question.

25 Let us, then, with courage and confidence pursue our own Federal and Republican principles, our attachment to union and  
26 representative government. Kindly separated by nature and a wide ocean from the exterminating havoc of one quarter of the  
27 globe; too high-minded to endure the degradations of the others; possessing a chosen country, with room enough for our  
28 descendants to the thousandth and thousandth generation; entertaining a due sense of our equal right to the use of our own  
29 faculties, to the acquisitions of our own industry, to honor and confidence from our fellow-citizens, resulting not from birth,  
30 but from our actions and their sense of them; **enlightened by a benign religion, professed, indeed, and practiced in various**  
31 **forms, yet all of them inculcating honesty, truth, temperance, gratitude, and the love of man; acknowledging and**  
32 **adoring an overruling Providence,** which by all its dispensations proves that it delights in the happiness of man here and  
33 his greater happiness hereafter—with all these blessings, what more is necessary to make us a happy and a prosperous people?  
34 Still one thing more, fellow-citizens—a wise and frugal Government, which shall restrain men from injuring one another,  
35 shall leave them otherwise free to regulate their own pursuits of industry and improvement, and shall not take from the mouth  
36 of labor the bread it has earned. This is the sum of good government, and this is necessary to close the circle of our felicities.

37 About to enter, fellow-citizens, on the exercise of duties which comprehend everything dear and valuable to you, it is proper  
38 you should understand what I deem the essential principles of our Government, and consequently those which ought to shape  
39 its Administration. I will compress them within the narrowest compass they will bear, stating the general principle, but not  
40 all its limitations. Equal and exact justice to all men, of whatever state or persuasion, religious or political; **peace, commerce,**  
41 **and honest friendship with all nations, entangling alliances with none; the support of the State governments in all their**  
42 **rights, as the most competent administrations for our domestic concerns and the surest bulwarks against**  
43 **antirepublican tendencies;** the preservation of the General Government in its whole constitutional vigor, as the sheet anchor  
44 of our peace at home and safety abroad; a jealous care of the right of election by the people—a mild and safe corrective of  
45 abuses which are lopped by the sword of revolution where peaceable remedies are unprovided; absolute acquiescence in the  
46 decisions of the majority, the vital principle of republics, from which is no appeal but to force, the vital principle and  
47 immediate parent of despotism; a well-disciplined militia, our best reliance in peace and for the first moments of war till  
48 regulars may relieve them; the supremacy of the civil over the military authority; economy in the public expense, that labor  
49 may be lightly burthened; the honest payment of our debts and sacred preservation of the public faith; encouragement of  
50 agriculture, and of commerce as its handmaid; the diffusion of information and arraignment of all abuses at the bar of the  
51 public reason; freedom of religion; freedom of the press, and freedom of person under the protection of the habeas corpus,  
52 and trial by juries impartially selected. These principles form the bright constellation which has gone before us and guided  
53 our steps through an age of revolution and reformation. The wisdom of our sages and blood of our heroes have been devoted  
54 to their attainment. **They should be the creed of our political faith,** the text of civic instruction, the touchstone by which to

1 try the services of those we trust; and should we wander from them in moments of error or of alarm, let us hasten to retrace  
2 our steps and to regain the road which alone leads to peace, liberty, and safety.

3 I repair, then, fellow-citizens, to the post you have assigned me. With experience enough in subordinate offices to have seen  
4 the difficulties of this the greatest of all, I have learnt to expect that it will rarely fall to the lot of imperfect man to retire from  
5 this station with the reputation and the favor which bring him into it. Without pretensions to that high confidence you reposed  
6 in our first and greatest revolutionary character, whose preeminent services had entitled him to the first place in his country  
7 's love and destined for him the fairest page in the volume of faithful history, I ask so much confidence only as may give  
8 firmness and effect to the legal administration of your affairs. I shall often go wrong through defect of judgment. When right,  
9 I shall often be thought wrong by those whose positions will not command a view of the whole ground. I ask your indulgence  
10 for my own errors, which will never be intentional, and your support against the errors of others, who may condemn what  
11 they would not if seen in all its parts. The approbation implied by your suffrage is a great consolation to me for the past, and  
12 my future solicitude will be to retain the good opinion of those who have bestowed it in advance, to conciliate that of others  
13 by doing them all the good in my power, and to be instrumental to the happiness and freedom of all.

14 Relying, then, on the patronage of your good will, I advance with obedience to the work, ready to retire from it whenever you  
15 become sensible how much better choice it is in your power to make. And may that Infinite Power which rules the destinies  
16 of the universe lead our councils to what is best, and give them a favorable issue for your peace and prosperity.

## 17 26.6 Thomas Jefferson's Second Inaugural Address

### 18 Washington D.C.—Monday, March 4, 1805

19 Proceeding, fellow-citizens, to that qualification which the Constitution requires before my entrance on the charge again  
20 conferred on me, it is my duty to express the deep sense I entertain of this new proof of confidence from my fellow-citizens  
21 at large, and the zeal with which it inspires me so to conduct myself as may best satisfy their just expectations.

22 On taking this station on a former occasion I declared the principles on which I believed it my duty to administer the affairs  
23 of our Commonwealth. My conscience tells me I have on every occasion acted up to that declaration according to its obvious  
24 import and to the understanding of every candid mind.

25 In the transaction of your foreign affairs we have endeavored to cultivate the friendship of all nations, and especially of those  
26 with which we have the most important relations. We have done them justice on all occasions, favored where favor was  
27 lawful, and cherished mutual interests and intercourse on fair and equal terms. We are firmly convinced, and we act on that  
28 conviction, that with nations as with individuals our interests soundly calculated will ever be found inseparable from our  
29 moral duties, and history bears witness to the fact that a just nation is trusted on its word when recourse is had to armaments  
30 and wars to bridle others.

31 At home, fellow-citizens, you best know whether we have done well or ill. **The suppression of unnecessary offices, of  
32 useless establishments and expenses, enabled us to discontinue our internal taxes.** These, covering our land with officers  
33 and opening our doors to their intrusions, had already begun that process of domiciliary vexation which once entered is  
34 scarcely to be restrained from reaching successively every article of property and produce. If among these taxes some minor  
35 ones fell which had not been inconvenient, it was because their amount would not have paid the officers who collected them,  
36 and because, if they had any merit, the State authorities might adopt them instead of others less approved.

37 The remaining revenue on the consumption of foreign articles is paid chiefly by those who can afford to add foreign luxuries  
38 to domestic comforts, being collected on our seaboard and frontiers only, and incorporated with the transactions of our  
39 mercantile citizens, **it may be the pleasure and the pride of an American to ask, What farmer, what mechanic, what  
40 laborer ever sees a taxgatherer of the United States?** These contributions enable us to support the current expenses of the  
41 Government, to fulfill contracts with foreign nations, to extinguish the native right of soil within our limits, to extend those  
42 limits, and to apply such a surplus to our public debts as places at a short day their final redemption, and that redemption once  
43 effected the revenue thereby liberated may, by a just repartition of it among the States and a corresponding amendment of the  
44 Constitution, be applied 'in time of peace' to rivers, canals, roads, arts, manufactures, education, and other great objects  
45 within each State. 'In time of war', if injustice by ourselves or others must sometimes produce war, increased as the same  
46 revenue will be by increased population and consumption, and aided by other resources reserved for that crisis, **it may meet  
47 within the year all the expenses of the year without encroaching on the rights of future generations by burthening**

1 **them with the debts of the past.** War will then be but a suspension of useful works, and a return to a state of peace, a return  
2 to the progress of improvement.

3 I have said, fellow-citizens, that the income reserved had enabled us to extend our limits, but that extension may possibly pay  
4 for itself before we are called on, and in the meantime may keep down the accruing interest; in all events, it will replace the  
5 advances we shall have made. I know that the acquisition of Louisiana had been disapproved by some from a candid  
6 apprehension that the enlargement of our territory would endanger its union. But who can limit the extent to which the  
7 federative principle may operate effectively? The larger our association the less will it be shaken by local passions; and in  
8 any view is it not better that the opposite bank of the Mississippi should be settled by our own brethren and children than by  
9 strangers of another family? With which should we be most likely to live in harmony and friendly intercourse?

10 In matters of religion I have considered that its free exercise is placed by the Constitution independent of the powers of the  
11 General Government. I have therefore undertaken on no occasion to prescribe the religious exercises suited to it, but have  
12 left them, as the Constitution found them, under the direction and discipline of the church or state authorities acknowledged  
13 by the several religious societies.

14 The aboriginal inhabitants of these countries I have regarded with the commiseration their history inspires. Endowed with  
15 the faculties and the rights of men, breathing an ardent love of liberty and independence, and occupying a country which left  
16 them no desire but to be undisturbed, the stream of overflowing population from other regions directed itself on these shores;  
17 without power to divert or habits to contend against it, they have been overwhelmed by the current or driven before it; now  
18 reduced within limits too narrow for the hunter's state, humanity enjoins us to teach them agriculture and the domestic arts;  
19 to encourage them to that industry which alone can enable them to maintain their place in existence and to prepare them in  
20 time for that state of society which to bodily comforts adds the improvement of the mind and morals. We have therefore  
21 liberally furnished them with the implements of husbandry and household use; we have placed among them instructors in the  
22 arts of first necessity, and they are covered with the aegis of the law against aggressors from among ourselves.

23 But the endeavors to enlighten them on the fate which awaits their present course of life, to induce them to exercise their  
24 reason, follow its dictates, and change their pursuits with the change of circumstances have powerful obstacles to encounter;  
25 they are combated by the habits of their bodies, prejudices of their minds, ignorance, pride, and the influence of interested  
26 and crafty individuals among them who feel themselves something in the present order of things and fear to become nothing  
27 in any other. These persons inculcate a sanctimonious reverence for the customs of their ancestors; that whatsoever they did  
28 must be done through all time; that reason is a false guide, and to advance under its counsel in their physical, moral, or  
29 political condition is perilous innovation; that their duty is to remain as their Creator made them, ignorance being safety and  
30 knowledge full of danger; in short, my friends, among them also is seen the action and counteraction of good sense and of  
31 bigotry; they too have their antiphilosophists who find an interest in keeping things in their present state, who dread  
32 reformation, and exert all their faculties to maintain the ascendancy of habit over the duty of improving our reason and  
33 obeying its mandates.

34 In giving these outlines I do not mean, fellow-citizens, to arrogate to myself the merit of the measures. That is due, in the first  
35 place, to the reflecting character of our citizens at large, who, by the weight of public opinion, influence and strengthen the  
36 public measures. It is due to the sound discretion with which they select from among themselves those to whom they confide  
37 the legislative duties. It is due to the zeal and wisdom of the characters thus selected, who lay the foundations of public  
38 happiness in wholesome laws, the execution of which alone remains for others, and it is due to the able and faithful auxiliaries,  
39 whose patriotism has associated them with me in the executive functions.

40 During this course of administration, and in order to disturb it, the artillery of the press has been leveled against us, charged  
41 with whatsoever its licentiousness could devise or dare. These abuses of an institution so important to freedom and science  
42 are deeply to be regretted, inasmuch as they tend to lessen its usefulness and to sap its safety. They might, indeed, have been  
43 corrected by the wholesome punishments reserved to and provided by the laws of the several States against falsehood and  
44 defamation, but public duties more urgent press on the time of public servants, and the offenders have therefore been left to  
45 find their punishment in the public indignation.

46 Nor was it uninteresting to the world that an experiment should be fairly and fully made, whether freedom of discussion,  
47 unaided by power, is not sufficient for the propagation and protection of truth—whether a government conducting itself in  
48 the true spirit of its constitution, with zeal and purity, and doing no act which it would be unwilling the whole world should  
49 witness, can be written down by falsehood and defamation. The experiment has been tried; you have witnessed the scene;

1 our fellow-citizens looked on, cool and collected; they saw the latent source from which these outrages proceeded; they  
2 gathered around their public functionaries, and when the Constitution called them to the decision by suffrage, they pronounced  
3 their verdict, honorable to those who had served them and consolatory to the friend of man who believes that he may be  
4 trusted with the control of his own affairs.

5 No inference is here intended that the laws provided by the States against false and defamatory publications should not be  
6 enforced; he who has time renders a service to public morals and public tranquillity in reforming these abuses by the salutary  
7 coercions of the law; but the experiment is noted to prove that, since truth and reason have maintained their ground against  
8 false opinions in league with false facts, the press, confined to truth, needs no other legal restraint; the public judgment will  
9 correct false reasoning and opinions on a full hearing of all parties; and no other definite line can be drawn between the  
10 inestimable liberty of the press and its demoralizing licentiousness. If there be still improprieties which this rule would not  
11 restrain, its supplement must be sought in the censorship of public opinion.

12 Contemplating the union of sentiment now manifested so generally as auguring harmony and happiness to our future course,  
13 I offer to our country sincere congratulations. With those, too, not yet rallied to the same point the disposition to do so is  
14 gaining strength; facts are piercing through the veil drawn over them, and our doubting brethren will at length see that the  
15 mass of their fellow-citizens with whom they can not yet resolve to act as to principles and measures, think as they think and  
16 desire what they desire; that our wish as well as theirs is that the public efforts may be directed honestly to the public good,  
17 that peace be cultivated, civil and religious liberty unassailed, law and order preserved, equality of rights maintained, and that  
18 state of property, equal or unequal, which results to every man from his own industry or that of his father's. When satisfied  
19 of these views it is not in human nature that they should not approve and support them. In the meantime let us cherish them  
20 with patient affection, let us do them justice, and more than justice, in all competitions of interest; and we need not doubt that  
21 truth, reason, and their own interests will at length prevail, will gather them into the fold of their country, and will complete  
22 that entire union of opinion which gives to a nation the blessing of harmony and the benefit of all its strength.

23 I shall now enter on the duties to which my fellow-citizens have again called me, and shall proceed in the spirit of those  
24 principles which they have approved. I fear not that any motives of interest may lead me astray; I am sensible of no passion  
25 which could seduce me knowingly from the path of justice, but the weaknesses of human nature and the limits of my own  
26 understanding will produce errors of judgment sometimes injurious to your interests. **I shall need, therefore, all the  
27 indulgence which I have heretofore experienced from my constituents; the want of it will certainly not lessen with  
28 increasing years. I shall need, too, the favor of that Being in whose hands we are, who led our fathers, as Israel of old,  
29 from their native land and planted them in a country flowing with all the necessaries and comforts of life; who has  
30 covered our infancy with His providence and our riper years with His wisdom and power, and to whose goodness I  
31 ask you to join in supplications with me that He will so enlighten the minds of your servants, guide their councils, and  
32 prosper their measures that whatsoever they do shall result in your good, and shall secure to you the peace, friendship,  
33 and approbation of all nations.**

## 34 **26.7 James Madison's First Inaugural Address**

### 35 **Saturday, March 4, 1809**

36 Unwilling to depart from examples of the most revered authority, I avail myself of the occasion now presented to express the  
37 profound impression made on me by the call of my country to the station to the duties of which I am about to pledge myself  
38 by the most solemn of sanctions. So distinguished a mark of confidence, proceeding from the deliberate and tranquil suffrage  
39 of a free and virtuous nation, would under any circumstances have commanded my gratitude and devotion, as well as filled  
40 me with an awful sense of the trust to be assumed. Under the various circumstances which give peculiar solemnity to the  
41 existing period, I feel that both the honor and the responsibility allotted to me are inexpressibly enhanced.

42 The present situation of the world is indeed without a parallel, and that of our own country full of difficulties. The pressure  
43 of these, too, is the more severely felt because they have fallen upon us at a moment when the national prosperity being at a  
44 height not before attained, the contrast resulting from the change has been rendered the more striking. Under the benign  
45 influence of our republican institutions, and the maintenance of peace with all nations whilst so many of them were engaged  
46 in bloody and wasteful wars, the fruits of a just policy were enjoyed in an unrivaled growth of our faculties and resources.  
47 Proofs of this were seen in the improvements of agriculture, in the successful enterprises of commerce, in the progress of  
48 manufacturers and useful arts, in the increase of the public revenue and the use made of it in reducing the public debt, and in  
49 the valuable works and establishments everywhere multiplying over the face of our land.

1 It is a precious reflection that the transition from this prosperous condition of our country to the scene which has for some  
2 time been distressing us is not chargeable on any unwarrantable views, nor, as I trust, on any involuntary errors in the public  
3 councils. Indulging no passions which trespass on the rights or the repose of other nations, **it has been the true glory of the**  
4 **United States to cultivate peace by observing justice, and to entitle themselves to the respect of the nations at war by**  
5 **fulfilling their neutral obligations with the most scrupulous impartiality.** If there be candor in the world, the truth of these  
6 assertions will not be questioned; posterity at least will do justice to them.

7 This unexceptionable course could not avail against the injustice and violence of the belligerent powers. In their rage against  
8 each other, or impelled by more direct motives, principles of retaliation have been introduced equally contrary to universal  
9 reason and acknowledged law. How long their arbitrary edicts will be continued in spite of the demonstrations that not even  
10 a pretext for them has been given by the United States, and of the fair and liberal attempt to induce a revocation of them, can  
11 not be anticipated. Assuring myself that under every vicissitude the determined spirit and united councils of the nation will  
12 be safeguards to its honor and its essential interests, I repair to the post assigned me with no other discouragement than what  
13 springs from my own inadequacy to its high duties. If I do not sink under the weight of this deep conviction it is because I  
14 find some support in a consciousness of the purposes and a confidence in the principles which I bring with me into this  
15 arduous service.

16 **To cherish peace and friendly intercourse with all nations having correspondent dispositions; to maintain sincere**  
17 **neutrality toward belligerent nations; to prefer in all cases amicable discussion and reasonable accommodation of**  
18 **differences to a decision of them by an appeal to arms; to exclude foreign intrigues and foreign partialities, so**  
19 **degrading to all countries and so baneful to free ones;** to foster a spirit of independence too just to invade the rights of  
20 others, too proud to surrender our own, too liberal to indulge unworthy prejudices ourselves and too elevated not to look  
21 down upon them in others; to hold the union of the States as the basis of their peace and happiness; to support the Constitution,  
22 which is the cement of the Union, as well in its limitations as in its authorities; to respect the rights and authorities reserved  
23 to the States and to the people as equally incorporated with and essential to the success of the general system; to avoid the  
24 slightest interference with the right of conscience or the functions of religion, so wisely exempted from civil jurisdiction; to  
25 preserve in their full energy the other salutary provisions in behalf of private and personal rights, and of the freedom of the  
26 press; to observe economy in public expenditures; to liberate the public resources by an honorable discharge of the public  
27 debts; **to keep within the requisite limits a standing military force, always remembering that an armed and trained**  
28 **militia is the firmest bulwark of republics—that without standing armies their liberty can never be in danger, nor**  
29 **with large ones safe;** to promote by authorized means improvements friendly to agriculture, to manufactures, and to external  
30 as well as internal commerce; to favor in like manner the advancement of science and the diffusion of information as the best  
31 aliment to true liberty; **to carry on the benevolent plans which have been so meritoriously applied to the conversion of**  
32 **our aboriginal neighbors from the degradation and wretchedness of savage life to a participation of the improvements**  
33 **of which the human mind and manners are susceptible in a civilized state**—as far as sentiments and intentions such as  
34 these can aid the fulfillment of my duty, they will be a resource which can not fail me.

35 It is my good fortune, moreover, to have the path in which I am to tread lighted by examples of illustrious services successfully  
36 rendered in the most trying difficulties by those who have marched before me. Of those of my immediate predecessor it might  
37 least become me here to speak. I may, however, be pardoned for not suppressing the sympathy with which my heart is full in  
38 the rich reward he enjoys in the benedictions of a beloved country, gratefully bestowed or exalted talents zealously devoted  
39 through a long career to the advancement of its highest interest and happiness.

40 **But the source to which I look or the aids which alone can supply my deficiencies is in the well-tryed intelligence and**  
41 **virtue of my fellow-citizens, and in the counsels of those representing them in the other departments associated in the**  
42 **care of the national interests. In these my confidence will under every difficulty be best placed, next to that which we**  
43 **have all been encouraged to feel in the guardianship and guidance of that Almighty Being whose power regulates the**  
44 **destiny of nations, whose blessings have been so conspicuously dispensed to this rising Republic, and to whom we are**  
45 **bound to address our devout gratitude for the past, as well as our fervent supplications and best hopes for the future.**

## 27 Chapter 27: Noah Webster

### 27.1 America's Forgotten Founding Father

#### Noah Webster

##### America's forgotten Founding Father

St. John testifies, "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." It is truly possible that we grossly underestimate and barely comprehend the nature and power of language. "Language," wrote Noah Webster, "as well as the faculty of speech was the immediate gift of God."

Observes historian Harlow Giles Unger, "Noah Webster was one of the towering intellects of his generation. Long before he even thought about writing a dictionary, Webster had assumed a place among the nation's Founding Fathers as the father of cultural independence, whose words reached American minds in every home and classroom and transformed the nation from a Babel of conflicting tongues—English, Dutch, French, German, and innumerable others—into the first nation on earth where generations of diverse people would speak and think in one language as a people.

"Until Webster, no great nation on earth could boast of the linguistic unity that Webster created in the United States. More than a lexicographer, Webster was a teacher, philosopher, author, essayist, orator, political leader, public official, and crusading editor. Webster's life thrust him into every major event of the early history of our nation, from the Revolutionary War to the War of 1812. He touched the lives of the most renowned Americans—and the most obscure. He earned the love and friendship of many, the hatred of some, but the respect of all. Noah Webster helped create far more than an American dictionary; he helped create an American nation."

Noah Webster declared, "In my view, the Christian religion is the **most important and one of the first things** in which **all** children, under a free government, ought to be instructed... No truth is more evident to my mind than that the Christian religion must be the basis of any government intended to secure the rights and privileges of a free people..."

Writes historian Rosalie J. Slater:

*The publication of Noah Webster's "Speller" in 1783 was followed with a "Grammar" in 1784, and a "Reader" in 1785. These were Parts I, II, and III of A Grammatical Institute of the English Language, whose title was suggested by President Ezra Stiles of Yale College. These volumes republished again and again became the basis of an American system of education and their influence grew with the history of the young republic. Indeed, Noah Webster's The American Spelling book, the famous "blue-backed speller," set a publishing record unlikely to be equaled by any school text in America. Over a period of one hundred years more than **one hundred million** copies were worn out by Americans as they learned their letters, their morality and their patriotism, from north to south, from east to west. Noah Webster's "Speller" was compatible with the hearthside of a log cabin in the wilderness, it travelled on the flatboats of the Ohio, churned down the Mississippi and creaked across the prairies of the far west as pioneer mothers taught their children from covered wagons. Wherever an individual wished to challenge his own ignorance or quench his thirst for knowledge, there, along with the Holy Bible and Shakespeare, were Noah Webster's slim and inexpensive Spellers, Grammars, Readers, and his Elements of Useful Knowledge containing the history and geography of the United States.*

*Noah Webster, who once stated that his political philosophy had been learned "in the school of Washington and of the great and worthy men who assisted in obtaining Independence, and in the formation and organization of the government," was eminently qualified to teach the principles of the American Constitution. It was he who had first publicly promoted the idea of a constitutional convention as he travelled from New Hampshire to North Carolina during the years 1785-1787. His 48-page pamphlet entitled Sketches of American Policy, was carried to Mount Vernon in 1785 for George Washington's perusal. During the Constitutional Convention in Philadelphia the 29-year old school master was visited by many of the most outstanding delegates. Webster's Diary records visits with*

1 *George Washington, Benjamin Franklin, James Madison, Rufus King, Abraham Baldwin, Edmund*  
2 *Randolph, William Samuel Johnson, Oliver Ellsworth, Roger Sherman, William Livingston and John*  
3 *Marshall. Two days before the Convention adjourned Thomas Fitzsimmons, a delegate from*  
4 *Pennsylvania, wrote Noah Webster requesting him to prepare an essay in support of the now completed*  
5 *document. The request came on September 1st, it was written on October 9th and published October*  
6 *17th. Containing 55 pages it was dedicated to Benjamin Franklin. Dr. David Ramsay wrote from*  
7 *Charlestown: "I have read it with pleasure, and it is now in brisk circulation among my friends. I have*  
8 *heard every person who has read it express his high approbation of its contents. It will doubtless be of*  
9 *singular service in recommending the adoption of the new Constitution."*

10 It is with reverence that The First Christian Fellowship of Eternal Sovereignty publishes The Warning voice of Noah Webster.  
11 May God grant us grace to have ears that hear Webster's words of wisdom.

## 12 **27.2 The Anniversary of the Declaration of Independence**

13 Noah Webster, New Haven, 1802

### 14 **An Oration**

15 The history of the first English settlements in America, and of the measures which prepared the way for a revolution in the  
16 colonies, is too interesting not to be well understood by men of common curiosity and reading in this State. That history  
17 unfolds a series of great events, evidently suited to accomplish important purposes in the economy of Divine Providence...  
18 events which every American of expanded views must contemplate with admiration; and every Christian, with delight. To  
19 recapitulate even the most remarkable of those events, however amusing and instructive the recital, would require more time  
20 than the appropriate business of this anniversary would afford. The day we are assembled to commemorate, summons the  
21 attention of American citizens to the history and the real objects of the revolution; to the national rights vindicated; to the  
22 dignity of character attached to the new sovereignty; to the duties imposed on the citizens, by their new rank and station  
23 among nations; to the errors which have been committed in framing the constitutions of the States and the federal compact;  
24 and especially to the means of preserving and perpetuating the benefits of Independence.

25 In the lapse of twenty six years, since the date of our sovereignty, a large proportion of the inhabitants of the United States  
26 have been changed. Most of the civil and military characters, conspicuous in the revolution, are now in their graves; and a  
27 new generation has arisen to guide the public councils, and to guard the blessings which their fathers have purchased. The  
28 experience of the same period of time, has drawn in question some opinions respecting the superior excellence of a republican  
29 government; and clouded the brilliant prospect which animated the hopes of the revolutionary patriots. Numerous unexpected  
30 difficulties in the management of this species of government, and multifarious disappointments, under the best  
31 administrations have arisen in thick succession, to confound the wisdom, and blast the hopes, of the most discerning friends  
32 of their country. To trace the causes of these disappointments, is to prevent a repetition of them, or prepare ourselves to meet  
33 them with advantage.

34 It is worthy of observation, that nations sometimes begin their political existence, as young men begin the world, with more  
35 courage than foresight, and more enthusiasm than correct judgment. Unacquainted with the perils that await their progress,  
36 or disdain the maxims of experience, and confident of their own powers, they expect to attain to supereminent greatness  
37 and prosperity, by means which other nations have found ineffectual, and bid defiance to calamities by which others have  
38 been overwhelmed... Nations, like individuals, may be misled by an ardent enthusiasm, which allures them from the standard  
39 of practical wisdom, and commits them to the guidance of visionary projectors. By fondly cherishing the opinion that they  
40 enjoy some superior advantages of knowledge, or local situation, the rulers of a state may lose the benefit of history and  
41 observation, the surest guides in political affairs; and delude themselves with the belief, that they have wisdom to elude or  
42 power to surmount the obstacles which have baffled the exertions of their predecessors.

43 Such are the mistakes of reformers; and such have been the illusions of the enthusiastic friends of the revolution. Their  
44 imagination has been warmed with the belief, that the sequestered position of America, would exempt her citizens from the  
45 troubles which harass Europe; that a general diffusion of knowledge, and superior attainments in policy, would enable them  
46 to form constitutions of government, less defective than any which have preceded them; and that their public virtue would  
47 secure a faithful, uncorrupt, and impartial administration. Whenever a doubt has been suggested, respecting the duration of a  
48 free republic, it has been repelled by one general answer, that the system of representation, supposed to be a modern

1 improvement in free constitutions, is calculated effectually to obviate the evils which other states have experienced, from  
2 legislatures consisting of popular assemblies.

3 But does the wide ocean that rolls between the two continents, detach our citizens from a deep interest in the affairs of Europe?  
4 Will our commerce, a productive source of our wealth, permit a separation of interests? And will not our prejudices and our  
5 wants, in spite of reason and patriotism, continue, for a long period, to link us to the policy, the opinions, and the interest of  
6 European nations?

7 But if we had the power to insulate our country, our interest, and our hearts, can we assure ourselves that our citizens  
8 supereminent wisdom, to frame systems of government, which shall be proof against the insidious advances of corruption,  
9 and the bold assaults of faction? What has prevented the enlightened sages of antiquity, from viewing man in all his attitudes;  
10 and learning all the possible modes, by which the human passions operate on society and government? After the experience  
11 of four or five thousand years, and numberless forms of government, how should it happen to be reserved for the Americans  
12 to discover the great secret, which has eluded all former inquiry, of infusing into a political constitution, the quality of  
13 imperishable durability? Is not the pretension to such superior light and wisdom in our citizens, rather an evidence of pride,  
14 self-sufficiency, and want of wisdom? If Moses, with an uncommon portion of talents, seconded by divine aid, could not  
15 secure his institutions from neglect and corruption, what right have we to expect, that the labors of our lawgivers will be more  
16 successful?

17 But great expectations are formed from representation in government, which is supposed to be a modern discovery, destined  
18 to give permanency to republics. If representation were a modern invention, every good citizen would wait impatiently for  
19 the result of a fair experiment; solicitous that the inventors might not be ultimately numbered among a multitude of dreaming  
20 projectors, who commence their schemes, “acribus inittis, incurioso fine,” with ardent zeal and splendid promises, which end  
21 in nothing. But representation is not a modern discovery. It was for ages practiced, not only in France, Spain, Denmark, and  
22 Sweden, as it has been in Switzerland and Great-Britain, but in many of the small states of antiquity; not, perhaps, in the same  
23 form prescribed by our constitutions, but in a variety of modes, in which the principles of it were fully and fairly tested.

24 Representation, by enabling a state to govern, without assembling all its citizens, lessens the chance of sudden and violent  
25 convulsions; but it neither humbles pride, subdues ambition, nor controls revenge and rivalry. It still leaves a state subject to  
26 the operation of all the turbulent, restless passions of man; changing only their direction. It is a popular opinion, but probably  
27 a great mistake, that corruption in a state is introduced by men in power; whereas, in fact, it usually originates with the  
28 candidates for preferment. Men in office, if respected and rewarded, have few temptations to abuse their trust; but strong and  
29 irresistible motives for fidelity and diligence. Their subsistence and their reputation are the most ample guaranty for a faithful  
30 discharge of their duties. Men, therefore, who seek, not those who possess, the honors and emoluments of government, are  
31 the first to introduce corruption. It is extremely important that this truth should be duly weighed; for popular jealousy is  
32 usually directed exclusively against the officers of government, when in fact, it ought to be employed to guard against the  
33 arts and address of office-seekers.

34 This truth being admitted, for it is authorized by history and observation, we have a clear rule by which to estimate the hazard  
35 to which a state is exposed, by a corruption of its true principles. The passions of men being every where the same, and nearly  
36 the same proportion of men in every society, directing their views to preferment, we observe that, in all governments, the  
37 object and efforts are the same, but the direction of those efforts is varied, according to the form of government, and always  
38 applied to those who have the disposal of honors and offices. In a monarchy, office-seekers are courtiers, fawning about the  
39 ministers or heads of departments... in a pure democracy, they are orators, who mount the rostrum, and harangue the populace,  
40 flattering their pride, and inflaming their passions... in a representative republic, they are the friends of the people, who  
41 address themselves to the electors, with great pretensions to patriotism, with falsehoods, fair promises, and insidious arts. In  
42 a monarchy, the minister may be corrupted, and the nation not be materially affected. In a democratic state, the populace may  
43 be corrupted by the arts or seduced by the eloquence of a popular orator. In a single hour, an Athenian assembly might be  
44 converted from the adorers, into the persecutors of their best magistrates and ablest generals... In the morning, a Themistocles  
45 and a Phocion might be idolized by the people; and at evening, sentenced to exile, or condemned to swallow poison. But does  
46 a representative government effectually guard the magistrates from similar abuses of popular power? If the electors cannot  
47 assemble, to listen to the seductions of an artful orator, has modern invention supplied no means, by which their minds may  
48 be perverted, and their passions inflamed? What are gazettes, handbills and pamphlets, but substitutes for orators? A species  
49 of silent messengers, walking by night and by day, stealing into farm houses and taverns, whispering tales of fraud about  
50 public officers, exciting suspicion, spreading discontent, weakening confidence in government! What is the difference  
51 between the misguided zeal of an Athenian assembly, and of the citizens of America, except in the means and the time

1 employed to effect the object? The one resembles a tornado, suddenly collecting and exhausting its force in undistinguishing,  
2 but momentary ravages; the other is like the slowly gathering tempest, whose lingering approach is announced by chilling  
3 blasts, and a lowering sky.

4 Whatever may be the form of government, therefore, corruption and misrepresentation find access to those who have the  
5 disposal of offices; by various means and different channels indeed, but proceeding primarily from demagogues and office-  
6 seekers, of bold designs and profligate principles.

7 It is said, however, that we have constitutions of government, or fundamental compacts, which proscribe abuses of power,  
8 by defining the exact limits of right and duty, and controlling both rulers and people. But how long will a constitutional  
9 barrier resist the assaults of faction? From the nature of things, the words of a fundamental code must be general, to  
10 comprehend cases which cannot possibly be specified; and of course, liable to be extended, or frittered away by construction.  
11 The danger from this quarter is imminent, and hardly admitting of a remedy, when popular jealousy is excited against the  
12 constitution, and the rights or the prejudices of the people are to be favored, by enlarging or abridging its powers. When a  
13 magistrate becomes more popular than the constitution, he may “draw sin as it were with a cart-rope” in the work of extending  
14 his power over the instrument which was intended to restrain usurpation. Whatever vanity and self-confidence may suggest,  
15 in favor of the restraints of a paper compact, all history and uniform experience evince, that against men who command the  
16 current of popular confidence, the best constitution has not the strength of a cobweb. The undisguised encroachments of  
17 power give the alarm and excite resistance... but the approaches of despotism, under cover of popular favor, are insidious and  
18 often deceive the most discerning friends of a free government.

19 “Virtue,” says the learned, but visionary Montesquieu, “is the foundation of a republic.”... “Virtue will maintain a free  
20 government,” is echoed and reechoed by the political enthusiast... Where is this virtue, and what is it? Among the ancient  
21 Greeks and Romans, it was personal bravery, and enthusiastic love of military glory, and a heroic contempt of death, in the  
22 service of their country. This species of virtue, so often displayed by the citizens of ancient democracies, is not exclusively  
23 the property of republicans. It was found as vigorous and pure under the old monarchy of France, as in Athens or Sparta; and  
24 is still as energetic a principle in Denmark, Sweden, or Great-Britain. It proceeds from early habits, and a strong attachment  
25 to the place where men are born, and to the customs, manners, and government, in which they are educated. It is the growth  
26 of every soil, and the production of every age. Yet this species of virtue, never yet preserved a republic from decay.

27 If by virtue, writers mean pure morals, we shall all agree that such virtue is the true, safe, and permanent foundation of a  
28 republic; and so it is, of every other species of government. But when have pure morals adorned the character of a whole  
29 nation? A free government founded on exact and universal morality might be durable, if such morality could be enforced,  
30 and guarded from declension... but this presupposes what history and observation, do not authorize us to expect.

31 Some enthusiasts preach to us the self denial of the Spartans, their frugal meals, their rigid discipline, and contempt of riches.  
32 Others urge the example of the Chinese, who restrain commerce to preserve their manners from corruption, and their religion  
33 and government from innovation. But such examples are inapplicable; for they suppose a condition of society, which would  
34 admit of such restraints; or a rigor of despotism which no free nation would now bear. An attempt to restrain commerce, in a  
35 state where commercial habits prevail, would occasion a revolution. Even an attempt to introduce the iron money of Sparta  
36 into modern Turkey or Russia, would probably shake the throne, and convulse the empire, of the prince who should hazard  
37 the experiment.

38 If there is a possibility of founding a perfectly free government, and giving it permanent duration, it must be raised upon the  
39 pure maxims, and supported by the undecaying practice, of that religion, which breathes “peace on earth, and good will to  
40 men.” That religion is perfectly republican... it is calculated to humble the pride and allay the discontents of men... it restrains  
41 the magistrate from oppression, and the subject from revolt... it secures a perfect equality of rights, by enjoining a discharge  
42 of all social duties, and a strict subordination to law. The universal prevalence of that religion, in its true spirit, would banish  
43 tyranny from the earth. Yet this religion has been perverted, and in many countries, made the basis of a system of ecclesiastical  
44 domination, which has enslaved the minds of men, as political power had before enslaved their bodies. To correct these evils,  
45 a set of fanatical reformers, called philosophers, charging that oppression to the religion itself, which sprung only from its  
46 abuses, have boldly denied the sacred origin of Christianity, and attempted to extirpate its doctrines and institutions. Strange,  
47 indeed, that the zealous advocates of a republican government, should wage an inveterate war against the only system of  
48 religious principles, compatible with rational freedom, and calculated to maintain a republican constitution! ...

1 But vain are the speculations of closet-philosophy! Baseless and fleeting are the illusions of theory! All forms of government  
2 have been tried, from the theocracy of the Israelites, to the splendid paper constitutions of the French reformers. And where  
3 are they? What have been their duration and success? Like the vast cities of antiquity, the most of them are known only in  
4 story, or their moss-grown ruins alone are left, as proofs that they once existed. Some of them, like the massy pillars of  
5 Palmyra, broken and defaced, still exhibit evidence of their ancient splendor, and appear magnificent even in ruins. Others,  
6 like the stupendous walls of Babylon, have been so totally swept away by the ravages of time, that not a stone or a moldering  
7 column remains to tell where they stood.

8 If such has been the fate of all former systems of government, must we indulge the melancholy thought, that such is to be the  
9 fate of ours? Let us examine the foundations of our systems ... to determine, if possible, whether they will sustain the  
10 magnificent edifice of freedom and happiness, which their projectors have contemplated.

11 The eminent characters who have conducted the revolutions in England and America, have laid it down as a fundamental  
12 principle in government, that by nature all men are free, independent, and equal,' and this principle, without definition or  
13 limitation, forms a main pillar of our constitutions.

14 If there were but a single man on earth, he certainly could have no masters, but the elements and the inflexible laws of nature.  
15 But political axioms, if not mere empty sounds, must have reference to a social state. How then, can men, exposed to each  
16 others power, and wanting each others aid, be free and independent? If one member of a society is free and independent, all  
17 the members must be equally so. In such a community, no restraint could exist, for this would destroy freedom and  
18 independence. But in such a state of things, the will of each individual would be his only rule of action, and his will would  
19 be supported by his strength. Force then would be the ultimate arbiter of right and wrong, and the wills of the weaker must  
20 bend to the power of the stronger. A society, therefore, existing in a state of nature, if such a state can be supposed in which  
21 there should be no law but individual wills, must necessarily be in perpetual anarchy or despotism. But no such state of society  
22 can exist. The very act of associating destroys the natural freedom and independence of each member of the society, anterior  
23 to any compact limiting their respective powers and rights; for it is a principle, resulting from the very nature of society,  
24 independent of any mutual agreement for the purpose, that one individual shall not exercise his own power to another's  
25 prejudice. Of course, by the very constitution of society, the will of each member is restrained by the laws of general utility,  
26 or common good, the details of which are to be regulated by the supreme power. Whatever may be the abstract reasoning of  
27 men on this subject, the practice has been, and by the nature of man, must continue to be, that the members of a state or body  
28 politic, hold their rights subject to the direction and control of the sovereignty of the state. It is needless to discuss questions  
29 of natural right as distinct from a social state, for all rights are social, and subordinate to the supreme will of the whole society.  
30 Nor, without such a supreme controlling power over all the members of a state, can an individual possess and enjoy liberty.

31 In the supposed state of nature, every man being free from the restraint of law, every man would be subject to the restraint of  
32 force, and of course would be a slave. Civil liberty, therefore, instead of being derived from natural freedom and  
33 independence, is the creature of society and government. Man is too feeble to protect himself, and unless he can protect  
34 himself, he is not free. But to secure protection, man must submit to the restraints of a sovereign power; subordination,  
35 therefore, is the very essence of civil liberty. Yet how often has the abstract, undefined proposition, that "all men are by nature  
36 free and independent," furnished the motive or the apology, for insurrection!

37 Equally fallacious is the doctrine of equality, of which much is said, and little understood. That one man in a state, has as  
38 good a right as another to his life, limbs, reputation and property, is a proposition that no man will dispute. Nor will it be  
39 denied that each member of a society, who has not forfeited his claims by misconduct, has an equal right to protection. But  
40 if by equality, writers understand an equal right to distinction, and influence; or if they understand an equal share of talents  
41 and bodily powers; in these senses, all men are not equal. Such an equality would be inconsistent with the whole economy of  
42 nature. In the animal and vegetable world, however strong the general resemblance in the individuals of a species, each is  
43 marked with a distinct character; and this diversity is one of the principal beauties of creation, and probably an important  
44 feature in the system. There are, and there must be, distinctions among men... they are established by nature, as well as by  
45 social relations. Age, talents, virtue, public services, the possession of office and certain natural relations, carry with them  
46 just claims to distinction, to influence and authority. Miserable, indeed, would be the condition of men, if the son could  
47 disengage himself from the authority of his father; the apprentice from the command of his master; and the citizen from the  
48 dominion of the law and the magistrate.

49 Again... It is asserted as an axiom in politics, that the sovereign power resides in the people. Unfortunately our language does  
50 not, like the Roman, distinguish the populus from the plebs; the free citizens from those who have not the privilege of suffrage.

1 But if we restrict the word people to the free citizens or electors, what act of sovereign power do they or can they exercise?  
2 They cannot assemble for debate; but sovereignty consists in the single will of a body acting together, deliberating, deciding,  
3 and capable of carrying its decrees into effect. Do the people possess this power?

4 To avoid this absurdity, some writers allege that the sovereign power is derived from the people. This proposition is more  
5 correct. The people possess the right of electing agents or substitutes to meet and constitute the supreme power... and farther  
6 than this right of electing, which is exercised by a private act of each individual, the people cannot possibly have a share in  
7 the sovereign power. This right of election is certainly a precious right, and one which, if used with discretion, is the safety  
8 and glory of a free state; but the exercise of it cannot, with propriety, be denominated, an act of sovereignty.

9 Closely connected with this axiom, are the principles recognized by some of the State Constitutions, that “the people have a  
10 right to meet together to consult upon the common good, give instructions to their representatives, and request of the  
11 legislature a redress of wrongs.” But are the rights here described compatible with each other? Are they consistent with the  
12 nature of a representative republic? The electors appoint deputies or substitutes, and by that act, delegate away their own  
13 power; how then can they meet and exercise the same power? And it is to be observed in this species of delegation, that the  
14 agent is appointed, for this very reason, that the electors in person cannot deliberate and act upon public affairs, in their  
15 several towns or districts; for if they could, no substitution would be necessary. The right in the electors to meet and deliberate  
16 on the common good, is directly incompatible with the act of delegation, which they have before exercised. And it ought not  
17 to be forgotten, that the insurgents in Massachusetts, in 1786, cited the clause in the declaration of rights, prefixed to the  
18 Constitution of that State, recognizing this right of meeting and consulting for the common good, in justification of their  
19 opposition to the law.

20 It should be remarked farther, that the same clauses in the constitutions, which authorize the people to instruct their  
21 representatives, permit them only to request of the legislature a redress of grievances. But a right to instruct, is a right to direct  
22 and control. Instruction implies superior power, whereas, request implies a want of such power, or subordination. Such are  
23 the contradictions which disfigure our constitutions!

24 In the same spirit of exalting the people over the legislature and the magistrate, it is asserted that the officers of government  
25 are the servants of the people, and accountable to them. Is not the direct tendency of such language to degrade all authority,  
26 to bring the laws and the officers of government into contempt, and to encourage discontent, faction and insurrection? Such  
27 language is not correct... the proposition is not true either in theory or fact. The legislative officers are declared, by the  
28 constitution, not to be liable to be called in question for their opinions or votes their inviolability is guaranteed in the most  
29 express manner. How then can they be accountable to the people? The two propositions are a contradiction in terms. The  
30 power of the people to omit chusing a representative at a subsequent election, is, by no means, a power to call him to account  
31 for his conduct. Nor are executive and judicial officers responsible to the people... if guilty of crimes and misdemeanors, they  
32 are answerable to the laws in courts of justice, and to no other tribunal.

33 It is not unfrequent, that the citizens of our country express their surprize at the popular tumults which have disturbed our  
34 tranquility. They are astonished that in this free country, the people should be so lost to a sense of their duty, as to resist the  
35 laws. But their surprize must cease, when, upon examination, they find that the people have a constitutional right to direct  
36 and control the legislature. The transition from the right of instruction to the right of resistance, is extremely easy; and if all  
37 officers of government are the servants of the people, how can it be expected that the masters should not, at times, take the  
38 government out of the hands of the servants.

39 Equally absurd is the doctrine that the universal enjoyment of the right of suffrage, is the best security for free elections and  
40 a pure administration. The reverse is proved by all experience, to be the fact; that a liberal extension of the right of suffrage  
41 accelerates the growth of corruption, by multiplying the number of corruptible electors, and reducing the price of venal  
42 suffrages.

43 It has also been a received maxim, that a frequent rotation of officers, is among the means of guarding a state from the  
44 malpractices of the public agents. But this principle has been extended too far, and experience has compelled some of the  
45 states to recede from it in their revised constitutions. It has been found that a short and precarious tenure of offices, is the  
46 direct means of degrading them, and making them an object of desire only to worthless and incompetent men.

47 Such are the brilliant theories which have dazzled the founders of our states! Such the illusions by which the admirers of a  
48 republican government have been fascinated and misled! But it is the fate of man to be confounded by his own wisdom, and

1 to see the elegant structures raised by his fancy, demolished by the rough hand of experiment. Nor is mortification the only  
2 evil to be expected from the fallacy of political doctrines. Errors, wrought into constitutions, have a sanction that gives them  
3 high authority, which it requires a long period of time, and perhaps the experience of several public calamities, to destroy.

4 There is another evil, connected with the very nature of elective governments, which is little suspected by the mass of people,  
5 but which of itself balances half the good that is secured by elections; this is, the dependence which the representatives feel  
6 upon their immediate constituents. This evil is augmented in proportion to the frequency of the elections and the smallness  
7 of the districts in which the candidates are chosen. The fear of losing a future election, subdues the firmness of mind which  
8 is a primary quality in a public officer... it even lays snares for his integrity. It contracts his views to the spot in which his  
9 electors reside, and often deters him from acting for the interest of the whole community... it makes him the humble instrument  
10 of party politics, and local intrigue... it converts him from the rank of a dignified legislator of a state or nation, into a servile,  
11 political pettefogger. And to complete the evil, the opinions of each representative must be made known to his constituents,  
12 by placing the yeas and nays on the journals of the house of which he is a member. With such a system of elections and  
13 legislation, the weakness of man forbids us to expect, that representatives will not often forsake the public interest, to secure  
14 a temporary popularity.

15 But the occasional sacrifices of conscience and the public good to popular fame, are not the darkest shades in the picture. The  
16 man who only flatters and cringes to gain applause, is a saint, compared with the man who tramples on law and constitution  
17 to secure the popularity his arts have obtained, and to retain the confidence of a party. There is something extremely  
18 contemptible in the factitious character of a popularity-seeker, or mere man of the people.

19 *“All tongues speak of him, and the bleared sights,  
20 Are spectacted to see him. Your prattling nurse  
21 Into a rapture lets her baby cry,  
22 While she chats him. The kitchen malkin pins  
23 Her richest lockram 'bout her reechy neck,  
24 Clambering the walls to see him; stalls, bulks, windows,  
25 Are smothered up, leads filled, and ridges horsed,  
26 With variable complexions... all agreeing,  
27 In earnestness to see him... such a pother,  
28 As if that whatsoever god, who leads him,  
29 Were slily crept into his human powers,  
30 And gave him graceful posture,”*

31 *SHAKESPEAR, CORIOLANUS.*

32 The natural consequence of too much popularity is, that it enables the possessor to violate the laws and constitution of his  
33 country, and sacrifice its interests with impunity... During the war in Europe, in the beginning of the last century, the Duke  
34 of Marlborough, by an unusual tide of victory, was borne so high in popularity, that he had influence enough to prolong that  
35 war, for the purpose of enriching himself; and a commission was actually prepared, which would have made him general for  
36 life, but it was rendered ineffectual by, a single member of the ministry, who had firmness enough to refuse his seal.

37 To be a tyrant with any tolerable degree of safety, a man must be fully possessed of the confidence of the people. Charles the  
38 first of England extended the royal prerogative to an unwarrantable length, and lost his head... but that prince could not have  
39 sent a detachment of three hundred men to drive the commons of England from their hall, and have effected his purpose. That  
40 act of despotism was reserved for the republican Cromwell, the friend of the people. James the second was an arbitrary man,  
41 a catholic, and odious to the English nation... he was, therefore, compelled to abdicate his throne. But his successor, William,  
42 a friend of the whigs, ascended the throne upon a tide of popularity; and he could deliberately sign an illegal and barbarous  
43 warrant for the murder of the whole village of Glencoe, in Scotland, and never be called in question for the murderous deed!  
44 “Oh, 'tis excellent,” says the poet,

45 *“To have a giant's strength; but it is tyrannous. To use it like a giant.”*  
46 *MEASURE FOR MEASURE.*

47 The open advocate of a strong government is subject to popular odium, his encroachments are eyed with jealousy, or resisted  
48 by force. But the hypocritical pretender to patriotism acquires, in the confidence of the people, a giant's force, and he may

1 use it like a giant. The people, like artless females, are liable to be seduced, not by the men they hate or suspect, but by those  
2 they love.

3 *“Our natures do pursue,  
4 Like rats that raven down their proper bane  
5 A thirsty evil, and when we drink, we die.”  
6 MEASURE FOR MEASURE.*

7 Nor is it among the least evils proceeding from the ambition of popular favor, that the friends of the people are willing to  
8 secure it, by relaxing the energy of the laws. They know that legal restraints are odious, and will hazard the public peace,  
9 rather than not gratify the licentious propensities of their partizans. But,

10 *“Mercy is not itself that oft looks so;  
11 Pardon is still the nurse of second woe.”  
12 “We have strict statutes and most biting laws,  
13 (The needful bits and curbs for headstrong steeds:)  
14 Which for these fourteen years we have let sleep;  
15 Even like an overgrown lion in a cave,  
16 That goes not out to prey: now, as fond fathers  
17 Having bound up the threat’ning twigs of birch,  
18 Only to stick it in their children’s sight  
19 For terror, not for use; in time the rod  
20 Becomes more mocked than feared; so our decrees,  
21 Dead to infliction, to themselves are dead;  
22 And liberty plucks justice by the nose;  
23 The baby beats the nurse, and quite athwart  
24 Goes all decorum.” ...  
25 MEASURE FOR MEASURE.*

26 But why this gloomy picture of errors committed, and evils felt or expected? Ought we to renounce our predilection for a  
27 republican government, and abandon, in despair, the experiment which our fathers have begun? By no means. Not only our  
28 duty enjoins, but necessity impels us to prosecute plans of national grandeur and happiness, which were contemplated by the  
29 revolution. To advance, indeed, requires courage and firmness; but to retreat is impossible, and would be infamy.

30 To ourselves, however, and to posterity, it will be useful to inquire, with candor and impartiality, into the causes of our  
31 disappointments. The real truth is, our revolutionary schemes were too visionary... and our hopes too sanguine. A republican  
32 government, in which the supreme power is created by choice, is unquestionably the most excellent form of government in  
33 theory; and with all its imperfections, is, in fact, the most eligible form, for nations in the early stages of society. In old,  
34 corrupt, and very populous nations, it is probable that the state of society must always prevent the mass of citizens, from  
35 acquiring that portion of property, knowledge and independence of mind, which are absolutely essential to render an elective  
36 government a public blessing. Government takes its form very much from the character of the people to be governed; and a  
37 republican or free government, necessarily springs from the state of society, manners and property in the United States. No  
38 other form is proper for the country... no other will suit the present state of society... no other can be imposed upon Our  
39 citizens. It would be as difficult to establish a monarchy in the United States, as to found a durable republic in France; and  
40 the difficulty would, in both, proceed from a common cause, the unfitness of each species of government for the people of  
41 the respective countries. The French project, of conquering all nations into liberty, or of giving them all a republican  
42 government, has had its admirers... We have seen the tragedy and its catastrophe. As well might the reformers of government  
43 attempt to fit all nations with one kind of garment compelling a Laplander to wear, in winter, the muslins of India, or the  
44 tribes that pant beneath a sultry sun on the banks of the Senegal, to wrap themselves in the furs of Siberia.

45 But although a republican government is admitted to be the best, and most congenial to our state of society, its innate  
46 perfections and unavoidable abuses, render it far less durable, than its enthusiastic admirers have supposed. This conclusion,  
47 drawn from experience, should silence the complaints of men, who look for more perfection in government than it is  
48 susceptible of receiving; it should allay the animosities and temper the discussions of our citizens;... it should produce a more  
49 indulgent spirit towards the faults of men in power and the errors of private individuals.

1 The consideration, also, that the intended effects of a free government, are mostly defeated by an abuse of its privileges,  
2 should make us more solicitous to acquire a deep and correct knowledge of its true principles, and more vigilant in guarding  
3 against the impositions of designing men... men who seek offices by fair promises, and flatter only to deceive. Most men are  
4 more willing to command than to obey... and more men are desirous to obtain public favor, than are willing to deserve it, by  
5 severe study and laborious services. One truth, also, ought to be deeply impressed on the minds of freemen, that men of real  
6 worth are always the last to seek offices for themselves... and the last to clamor against men of worth who possess them.

7 But while considerations like these should abate the expectations of the enthusiast, we should carefully avoid despondence,  
8 and faithfully exert our talents to realize the blessings of freedom, under our present of government. The real object of the  
9 revolution was, to secure to the United States, the privilege of governing themselves... not to dissolve all government and  
10 resign our country to be the sport of licentious passions and wild misrule. The real object of Independence ought not to be  
11 abandoned it must be steadily and perseveringly pursued. Weak or wicked men may occasionally rise to distinction in the  
12 public councils; but whoever may be the men in power, let the government be obeyed. As the poet enjoins:

13 *“Respect to your great place; and let the devil*  
14 *Be sometimes honored for his burning throne.”*  
15 *MEASURE FOR MEASURE.*

16 To know the real worth of men, their talents and views must be put to the test. The weak and the corrupt, exalted to high and  
17 responsible stations, are tried and exposed... and from their elevations, they fall like Lucifer, never again to rise. Nor are  
18 combinations of profligate men very formidable in society; as their influence can never be of long duration. Were the power  
19 of such combinations equal to the turpitude of the members, they would, in every age, overwhelm the earth. But it is the  
20 decree of heaven that the league of iniquity should dissolve, like a rope of sand; for the same perfidious principles which  
21 impel men to betray their country and its religion, will make them treacherous to each other.

22 While we thus attend to the objects of the revolution, with the errors and dangers to which our government is exposed, let us  
23 employ a moment in calling to mind the gloomy scenes, and vicissitudes of the war, the wants, the feebleness and the  
24 distractions of the Colonies; the distresses of the army, and the solicitude of our citizens. This solemn anniversary has  
25 demands upon the sensibilities of the heart, no less than upon the faculties of the mind; and by mingling the recollections of  
26 manly sorrow, with the joys of the day, we unite the purposes of virtue with convivial pleasure, and give dignity to the  
27 festival... Let this anniversary renew the deep, but tranquil grief of the aged sire, who bore the bleeding carcass of a brave  
28 son, from the field of victory to a grave... Let it revive the keen anguish of the mother, whose heart was wrung by the loss of  
29 a favorite son, and of the widow, bereaved of an affectionate husband... Let it soften the heart of the orphan, whose hopes of  
30 protection and support were blasted by the premature fate of a kind father! Yet while we yield, for the moment, to the  
31 sensibilities of our nature, let the proud recollection of the glory won, and the blessings acquired, in the field of battle, arrest  
32 the sympathies of the soul, and check the rising flood of sorrow, While our hearts melt with the recollection of the severe  
33 sufferings, and glorious fate, of our departed friends, let us be animated with new zeal to imitate their virtues, and with fresh  
34 desires to cherish the honor and interest of the country, which they shed their blood to defend.

35 Let the youth of our country, who were not spectators of the distresses of the war; but who have entered upon the stage of  
36 life in time to see the silver locks of the revolutionary patriots, and to witness the scars and the poverty of the war-worn  
37 soldier... let these ponder the history and listen to the tale of their fathers' sufferings, and their country's danger. Let them  
38 read the animated and energetic addresses of the first American Congress, whose firmness and eloquence would have honored  
39 a Roman Senate... Let them early imbibe the manly and dignified sentiments of that illustrious council which pointed out the  
40 road to independence... Let them catch a portion of the patriotic flame... and by learning to revere the sentiments, may they  
41 be led to follow the example, of those venerable sages... Let them review, in imagination, the heroic achievements of the  
42 American troops... Let them see, at Bunker's hill, a few hardy farmers, twice repulsing the numerous, well-marshalled  
43 columns of the foe, and holding the issue of the contest in suspense... Let them transport their imaginations to the hills of  
44 Bennington, the fields of Saratoga, the almost inaccessible cliffs of Stony Point, and the plains of Yorktown where the armies  
45 of America closed their triumphs; there let them admire the heroism of the citizen soldier, and catch the spirit of victory. Then  
46 let them cast their eyes upon a shattered army, retreating before a triumphant foe... See the magnanimous WASHINGTON,  
47 almost deserted and driven to despair, rallying a small band of half-clothed, dispirited troops, whose naked feet, lacerated  
48 with the frost bound clods, stained the road with blood, as they marched to the victories of Trenton and Princeton! Let scenes  
49 like these lead them to compassionate the distresses of a half-famished soldiery, who suffered and bled to defend the blessings  
50 which we now enjoy, and whose services are yet unrewarded. And when our youth see a needy soldier, grown old in poverty,  
51 or the widows and orphans of soldiers, doomed to want by the loss of their protectors, and the depreciation of government

1 paper, let them open the liberal hand of bounty, and by relieving their wants, still divide with them the burthens and the  
2 distresses of the revolution. Let them consider that upon them has devolved the task of defending and improving the rich  
3 inheritance, purchased by their fathers. Nor let them view this inheritance of National Freedom and Independence, as a fortune  
4 that is to be squandered away, in ease and riot, but as an estate to be preserved only by industry, toil and vigilance. Let them  
5 cast their eyes around upon the aged fathers of the land, whose declining strength calls for their support, and whose venerable  
6 years and wisdom demand their deference and respect. Let them view the fair daughters of America, whose blushing cheeks  
7 and modest deportment invite their friendship and protection; whose virtues they are to cherish and reward by their love and  
8 fidelity; and whose honor and happiness it is their duty to maintain inviolable. Let them learn to merit the esteem and  
9 affections of females of worth, whose rank in life depends much on the reputation of their husbands, and who therefore never  
10 fail to respect men of character, as much as they despise those who waste their lives in idleness, gaming and frivolous pursuits.

11 And let us pay the tribute of respect to the memory of the illustrious hero who led our armies in the field of victory, and the  
12 statesman who first presided over our national councils. Let us review the history of his life, to know his worth and learn to  
13 value his example and his services. Let us, with a solemn pleasure, visit his tomb; there to drop a tear of affection, and heave  
14 a fervent sigh, over departed greatness... There let us pluck a sprig of the willow and the laurel that shade the ashes of a  
15 WASHINGTON, and bear it on our bosoms, to remind us of his amiable virtues, his distinguished achievements, and our  
16 irreparable loss! Then let us resume our stations in life, and animated by his illustrious example, cheerfully attend to the  
17 duties assigned us, of improving the advantages, secured to us by the toils of the revolution, and the acquisition of  
18 independence.

19 FINIS.

1  
2  
3  
4  
5  
6  
7  
8  
9  
10  
11  
12  
13  
14  
15  
16  
17  
18  
19  
20  
21  
22  
23  
24  
25  
26  
27

## **28 Benediction**

Our Father which art in Heaven, hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in America as it is in Heaven. Help us Heavenly Father to return unto thee a righteous nation for we come before thee as a sinful nation, a people laden with iniquity, a seed of evildoers, children that are corrupters: We have forsaken the LORD, we have provoked the Holy One of Israel unto anger, we are gone away backward. Why will we be stricken any more? Why do we revolt more and more? The body of our beloved nation is ill. The whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint. From the sole of the foot even unto the head there is no soundness in it; but wounds, and bruises, and putrifying sores: They have not been closed, neither bound up, neither mollified with ointment. Our country is desolate, our cities corrupt: bankers and wickedness in high places devour it in our presence. It is desolate, cancerous from within, overthrown by traitors. Help us Father as a nation to accept the LORD of hosts. Wash us, make us clean; help us to put away the evil of our doings from before thine eyes; help us to cease to do evil.

Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though our sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool. If we will be willing and obedient, we shall eat the good of the land.

But if we now refuse and rebel, we shall be devoured with the sword: For the mouth of the LORD hath spoken it and they that forsake the LORD shall be consumed.

Help us Father to Honor the LORD with our substance, and with the firstfruits of all our increase. Let us not continue to rob God? For we have robbed thee. And wherein have we robbed thee? In our Firstfruits of tithes and offerings. We are cursed with a curse; for we have robbed thee, even this whole nation. Let us once again fill thy house with our Firstfruits and render unto God that which is God's that we may prove thee Oh LORD of hosts, that thou will open the windows of heaven, and pour out a blessing, that we shall not have room enough to receive it.

Bless us today with thy Spirit and give unto us the gift of thy word of wisdom and also the word of knowledge by the same Spirit that we may understand and defeat the invidious plan established by Satan, the overthrow of our Constitution, enticing and trapping the unwary and foolish into a system of Voluntary Slavery and stealing from Thee our firstfruits.

Father, leave us not in temptation, but, deliver us from evil, for Thine is the Kingdom and the Power and the Glory for ever and ever...

In the name of the God of our beloved nation, Jesus Christ, Amen.